

The Kind Death God - Chapter 01-27

Table of Contents

1. Glossary
2. Chapter 001: A Frigid Town, Part 1
3. A Frigid Town, Part 2
4. A Frigid Town, Part 3
5. A Frigid Town, Part 4
6. A Frigid Town, Part 5
7. Chapter 002: The Alchemist, Part 1
8. The Alchemist, Part 2
9. The Alchemist, Part 3
10. Chapter 003: Sorcery 101, Part 1
11. Chapter 003: Sorcery 101, Part 2
12. Chapter 003: Sorcery 101, Part 3
13. Chapter 004: Attack of the Pirates, Part 1
14. Chapter 004: Attack of the Pirates, Part 2
15. Chapter 005: The Fruit of Rebirth, Part 1
16. Chapter 005: The Fruit of Rebirth, Part 2
17. Chapter 006: Another Parting, Part 1
18. Chapter 006: Another Parting, Part 2
19. Chapter 007: Dodging Death, Part 1
20. Chapter 007: Dodging Death, Part 2
21. Chapter 008: Forced to Leave, Part 1
22. Chapter 008: Forced to Leave, Part 2

23. Chapter 009: Shitang Township, Part 1
24. Chapter 009: Shitang Township, Part 2
25. Chapter 010: Advent of the Blood Sun, Part 1
26. Chapter 010: Advent of the Blood Sun, Part 2
27. Chapter 011: The Strange Golden Fish, Part 1
28. Chapter 011: The Strange Golden Fish, Part 2
29. Chapter 012: Danger of Death, Part 1
30. Chapter 012: Danger of Death, Part 2
31. Chapter 013: Hell Sword Nine Techniques
32. Chapter 014: King of Hell's Passing
33. Chapter 015: The Magician Exam
34. Chapter 016: The Willful Girl
35. Chapter 017: By Death
36. Chapter 018: The Crimson-Robed Priest
37. Chapter 019: The Mercenary Guild
38. Chapter 020: Special Ranked Mission
39. Chapter 021: The Evil Hell's Sword
40. Chapter 022: The Puyan Warrior
41. Chapter 023: Panic within the Clan
42. Chapter 024: Calming Light
43. Chapter 025: Enmity within Puyan
44. Chapter 026: Tilu Temple
45. Chapter 027: Puyan's History

Glossary

Continents

- Heaven's Origin

Countries

- North : Heaven's Gold Empire
  - Biernuo Province
    - Ninuo City
  - Valian Province (Waliang)
- South : Prosperous Empire
- West : Sunset Empire
- East : United Regions Commonwealth
- Center: the Holy Church

Races

- Human Race
- Elven Race
- Dwarfish Race
- Winged Race
- Werebeast Race
- Dark Demon Race
- Dragon Race

Currency

- 1 diamond coin = 10 amethyst coins = 100 gold coins = 1,000 silver coins = 10,000 bronze coins

Calendar

- Holy Calendar

Holy Church

- Supreme Pontiff - 1
- Crimson-Robed Priest - 4
- Ivory-Robed Priest - 12
- High Priest
- Intermediate Priest
- Ordinary Priest
- Preparatory Priest

Mercenary Guild

- Extraordinary Mercenary
- Special Mercenary
- 1st Level Mercenary
- 2nd Level Mercenary
- 3rd Level Mercenary
- 4th Level Mercenary

Sorcerer's Institute

- Sage Sorcerer
- Principal Sorcerer

- Grand Sorcerer
- High Sorcerer
- Intermediate Sorcerer
- Junior Sorcerer

Alchemist Alliance

- Grand Alchemist
- Special Alchemist
- High Alchemist
- Intermediate Alchemist
- Junior Alchemist
- Novice

Assassins Guild

- the Annihilator
- Silent Assassin
- Dark Assassin
- Assassin

Thieves Guild

- the Acquirer
- High Thief
- Thief

Characters

- Ah Dai

- Ya Tou
- Uncle Li
- Gelisi

Pills

- Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill

Chapter 001: A Frigid Town, Part 1

This LN's chapters are abnormally long.

Will be breaking the chapters down into parts.
Chapter 01 has 11,378 Chinese characters.

There were five countries on the Heaven's Origin Continent: Heaven's Gold Empire to the North, Prosperous Empire to the South, Sunset Empire to the West, and United Regions Commonwealth to the East. Located in the middle of them all, connected to each country, is a hexagonal piece of land belonging to the most illustrious organization on the Continent - the Holy Church. The four kingdoms were peaceful neighbors, apart from the Sunset Empire and the Prosperous Empire who had bad foreign relations with each other. Every year, each country would have to hand in a certain amount of "Protection Fee" to provide for the expenses of the Church.

The people of the Heaven's Gold Empire consisted mainly of white people, they were tall, with blond hair and blue eyes. Meanwhile, the people of the the Sunset Empire and the Prosperous Empire were made up of yellow people, with dark hair and dark eyes. The racial mix of the Commonwealth was comparatively more complicated, they had white people, yellow people, and also black people with

strong bodies. Many different races lived within the Commonwealth. If we were to debate on the comprehensive strength of each country, the United Regions Commonwealth that is made up of six different communities was the most powerful, while the other three countries had comparable martial power.

On the Continent, apart from humans, there were other races that were small in number, such as the kind Elven Race, the temperamental Dwarfish Race, and the Winged Race who is gifted in song and dance. There also dwelled the Werebeasts Race who only lives in the dense forests, the most mysterious Dark Demon Race, and the legendary Dragon Race. These races are spread throughout the Continent, and for thousands of years, they have lived in peace with the humans. However, due to the difference in lifestyles, these other races usually live within the mountains and forests were there weren't many humans, and rarely interact with humans.

Although the Holy Church had the smallest ruling area in the Continent, they hold an exalted position. Apart from the few people who do not believe in God, almost everyone of the Human Race is a loyal follower of the Church. Priesthood is the most respected job, and within the Holy Church, the Supreme Pontiff holds the highest authority. Four high Crimson-Robed Priests work beneath the Supreme Pontiff to help with Church affairs, and are also called Crimson-Robed Bishops. Beneath the Crimson-Robed Priests, are twelve Ivory-Robed Priests. When more than half the Crimson and Ivory robed priests believe that the Supreme Pontiff has made a

significant mistake, they can start the process to impeach the Supreme Pontiff. However, because the promotion process of a Supreme Pontiff is extremely strict, there hasn't been a case where impeachment has occurred since the birth of the Holy Church. Below the Ivory-Robed Priest, are the High Priests, Intermediate Priests, Ordinary Priests, and Preparatory Priests. These priests are also called Clerics or Divine Priestesses. Within the church, there are no rules preventing marriage, but the chosen partner must be a loyal believer of the Church.

There is another reason the Priesthood is respected, and that is because they are all Sorcerers of Light. To be promoted to the position of an Ivory-Robed Priest, clerics must a Light Sorcerer above the level of a Principal Sorcerer, and the number of Principal Sorcerer has never been of the triple digits. The power wielded by the Crimson-Robed Priests is immeasurable, there is a legend that says the combined power of the four high Crimson-Robed Priests is equivalent to the entire martial power of any one country. Meanwhile, the Supreme Pontiff is usually elected from among Crimson-Robed Priests. The process is extremely strict, and after the selection of the successor, the predecessor will conduct an inheritance ceremony. In that ceremony, the unparalleled unique power of the Church will be passed on to the succeeding Supreme Pontiff. Yet, no one knows the true extent of the Supreme Pontiff's power. In the past thousand years, there has been no need for the Supreme Pontiffs to be embroiled in any situation.

Outside the Church, the Judiciary Division is in charge of

monitoring the priesthood. The Presiding Judge of each division has the same authority as the Crimson-Robed Priests. The subordinates of the Presiding Judge are called the Holy Church's Executioners, they are the most fanatical believers of the Heavenly God. Whenever these Executioners are dealing with members of another religion, there has always been only one word -- kill. Unlike the orthodox priesthood, members of the Judiciary Division do not have any worries as everything is under the control of the Presiding Judge, who reports directly to the Supreme Pontiff.

The Continent has a single currency system. The money used is made by the Holy Church and has its insignia carved onto it. The conversion rate used is in multiples of ten, 1 diamond coin = 10 amethyst coins = 100 gold coins = 1,000 silver coins = 10,000 bronze coins. An ordinary family's yearly income is roughly 50 gold coins, and it takes approximately 30 gold coins to maintain a family each year.

The four countries each have their own languages, while those in the larger cities and those of the aristocratic level generally converse in the Church's language. Our story starts in the North, the Northernmost part of the Heaven's Gold Empire, within the Biernuo Province, in a small town called Ninuo.

Excuse any mistakes.

Massive paragraphs = too tiring to reread.

Makes me rethink translating this story.

Might change the name as I read on, such as sunset vs dusk vs twilight, to fit the countries' traits.

White/yellow/black people : easier to translate it this way (the author did use color), as compared to making it politically correct - politically correct terms will make this story too complex and modernized.

A Frigid Town, Part 2

Translated by Star'sWish

Edited by Caz

Ninuo City, a small city located in Heaven't Gold Empire, at Biernuo Province's northernmost point, also considered the northern extreme of the Continent. The days are short, the nights long, the weather frigid all year round. Most of the residents here fish in the icy seas for a living. Throughout the year, icebergs float about in the icy seas, which produce an abundance of seal and walrus furs that are beloved by the aristocrats.

Dark clouds drifted across the sky, as if bringing another snowstorm with them. Within a dark alley in Ninuo City, a few people in worn out cotton jackets were crowded together. Among them was a middle-aged man with a scar from a knife wound on his forehead, looking angrily at a dark haired, dark eyed, 12 or 13 year old girl in very sparse clothing. The little girl was very thin, her complexion like pale yellow wax, her medium length hair like a curtain above her nose, making it difficult to see her face. She was shivering from the cold. Through the curtain of her hair, her big bright eyes watched the middle-aged man with fear.

"Pa--" The middle-aged man hit the little girl to the ground and scolded "You damned girl, you are so dumb, can't even finish such a simple task. If it wasn't for Ah Dai bringing you back, you would have gone and apologized to that Old Grandma. I must have been blind, how could I keep such useless trash. You only know how to eat, don't know how to do anything else."

Next to the middle-aged man, a boy slighter taller than the little girl rushed to help her up, carefully wiping away the trace of blood at the side of her mouth, foolishly telling the middle-aged man. "Uncle Li, forgive Ya Tou again, one more time, I... I'll go catch a few more fish and bring them back."

Uncle Li snorted, looking at the similarly dark haired dark eyed boy with a foolish face, his voice eased, "Ah Dai, every single time you always plead on her behalf, the few fish you bring back, is that enough to feed everyone? At my place, there is no one who can get something for nothing. Ya Tou, today for Ah Dai's sake, I'll let you go again, but if this happens again, humph. Let's go." At that, he brought the few other kids along and walked towards the outside, but before reaching the entrance of the alley, he turned back and said pleasantly to Ah Dai, "Don't forget what you just said, it better be a few large fish, understood?"

Ah Dai nodded stiffly and Uncle Li was satisfied enough to leave.

This group of people lived in Ninuo City as its lowest level petty thieves, they were unfit to be called real thieves or robbers as they

relied on small petty thefts to sustain their lives. The so called "catching a fish", refers to stealing things, and Uncle Li is their head. He controlled roughly ten kids, Ya Tou was the only girl, all these kids were orphans picked up from the streets. Among these kids, the boy called Ah Dai was the most capable. Initially, Uncle Li was interested in Ah Dai's nimble hands and kept him. This child has always seemed slow, sometimes he could not even speak eloquently, he didn't even know his own name. He was also slow in learning the skills to steal, his mind didn't seem too agile, so everyone called him "Ah Dai". However, although Ah Dai was slow-witted, he had a lot of determination.

After a few months of Uncle Li's teachings and his own hard work, he finally remembered the move "smoothly pass, lead away goat", and at that point it was already trained to perfection. To hone the speed of his hand movements he even practiced stabbing snow piles in the cold streets. The less the snow melted, the better his accuracy. Although this method seemed dumb, it had a very good effect and within months, it helped Ah Dai build the fundamentals to catch fish. The part that Uncle Li was excited about is that Ah Dai is too foolish, he doesn't know what is called fear and doesn't understand that "catching fish" is a bad thing to do. As long as he is given mantou to eat, he will follow orders.

Strolling on the streets, no one will pay attention to a boy with ordinary looks and honest eyes. However, all it usually takes is just one tiny mistake in movement for their purses to enter Ah Dai's hands. The first time Uncle Li saw a money purse Ah Dai brought

back, he couldn't help but gape at its fullness and bulge. Ever since then, Ah Dai became the most "doted" on kid and received at least one to two cold, hard mantous each day, causing his comrades to feel envious. Although Ah Dai is slightly slow-witted, he has great character. Oftentimes, even though he wasn't full, he would give a portion of his food to others, even if those friends of his do not appreciate his kindness and end up teasing him or snatching his food.

Ya Tou was found by Uncle Li a year ago. According to her, since she can remember, she has always lived with an old grandma. Although life was difficult they managed to fill their stomachs and keep warm. Roughly a year ago that old grandma pass away from an illness, and so Ya Tou lost her means of survival and barely lived through each day by begging. The reason Uncle Li took in Ya Tou, was because he was interested in her, or rather, he was interested in the worn down house her grandma left her. In the frigid Ninuo City, what is better than a house to keep out of the wind and snow? Ya Tou is the opposite of Ah Dai, she learns everything quickly and well. The "skills" Uncle Li taught her, she managed to learn in under a month. Yet, Ya Tou is the only one who hasn't caught any fish to date. It is not because she is lacking in skill, the main reason is because she is truly too kind.

There has been multiple occasions where she succeeded, but upon seeing the owners worrying and panicking, she couldn't stand it and ended up returning the purses. Thus, she has been subjected to numerous beatings, and each time, Ah Dai will bear the brunt of it

for her. These two kids, one smart, one foolish, naturally became good friends. They were the most eye-catching among the small group of thieves, because the were the only yellow people. Maybe because of this reason, the friendship between Ah Dai and Ya Tou deepened. Today Ya Tou was beaten by Uncle Li because once again, she returned the purse to the anxious lady.

Uncle Li's silhouette finally disappears at the end of the alley. Ya Tou immediately thew herself into Ah Dai's arms and started crying out loud. Ah Dai stared at the small figure within his arms, wiped off his runny nose, and gently patted her shoulders, "Ya Tou, don't, don't cry. It hurts doesn't it?"

After quite a while, Ya Tou's sobs lessened, she raised her head to look at the boy in front of her, with teary eyes, she said "Big Brother Ah Dai, living is really painful!"

Ah Dai clearly did not understand what the girl meant, he took out half a mantou that was as hard as a rock from his clothes and passed it to her, blankly saying, "Ya Tou, eat this, it won't hurt anymore once you are full."

Ya Tou looked at the boy in front of her, so blank and slow-witted and yet so full of sincerity. She slowed took the mantou and sobbed, "Big Brother Ah Dai, why are you so nice to me?"

Ah Dai lead Ya Tou to sit in a corner. He then took off his worn out cotton jacket, wrapped it around both their shoulders and huddled

together, naively saying, "Am I nice to you? Quickly eat the mantou, it won't be so cold after eating. I still have to go catch a few fish later." He hungrily gazed at the rock-hard frozen mantou in Ya Tou's hands.

Seeing Ah Dai's simple and honest face, Ya Tou started feeling sentimental, exerting strength with both hands, she split that half-mantou into half and gave one half to Ah Dai.

Ah Dai swallowed his saliva, "I... I'm not hungry, you should eat it."

Ya Tou stuffed the mantou into Ah Dai's hands, "I have a small appetite and don't eat a lot, let's eat together." At that, she took a bite out of her quarter-size mantou.

Ah Dai consented, ravenously finishing the quarter-size mantou. He ate too fast and ended up choking, "Ahhh... wuuu."

Ya Tou couldn't help lightly laughing at Ah Dai's red face, one hand patting his back, another hand stuffing some freshly fallen snow into his mouth.

Ah Dai strove to melt the snow into water, after half a day's worth of work, he finally managed to swallow the dry mantou that was stuck in his throat and let out a long breath. Patting his own chest, he said, "Thank you!"

Quite some time passed before Ya Tou finally finished her mantou

with much effort. Suddenly, she blurted, "Big Brother Ah Dai, wait for me to grow up and marry you, okay?"

Ah Dai took a moment to think about the meaning of the word "marry". After half a day, he stammered, "What's marry?"

Smoothly pass, lead away goat : to smoothly steal in the passing

Mantou(s) : a very tasty steamed bun

Humph : initially "heng heng", a warning sound. Like a mean "humph"

Ah Dai : his name translates to dull/foolish/slow-witted

A Frigid Town, Part 3

Translated by Star'sWish

Edited by Caz

Ya Tou sighed softly, "Marry, it means I want to be your wife and take care of you for the rest of your life! I'll take it as you promised, no regretting it, from now on, I, Ya Tou, am your, Ah Dai's, fiancée. Next time you must treat me well."

Ah Dai nodded, "Fiancée? Oh, okay, I'll give you an extra mantou every day."

Ya Tou rolled her eyes, speechless.

After a while, with the help of the cotton jacket, Ya Tou felt much warmer. She placed the cotton jacket around Ah Dai's shoulder, "Big Brother Ah Dai, quickly catch some fish, otherwise you will be scolded by Uncle Li. I... I'll go with you."

Ah Dai nodded and helped Ya Tou up, asking, "Ya Tou, why do you have better skills than me, but you return the fish every time?"

Ya Tou sighed, "Big Brother Ah Dai, don't you think that stealing is wrong?'

Ah Dai shook his head, "But... but if we don't catch fish, we'll starve!"

Ya Tou knew that she wouldn't be able to explain it to the silly and naive boy, so she might as well not talk about it. She lead Ah Dai out of the alley, both of them walking towards the most prosperous district. Only there will they find good targets. Ya Tou decided that no matter what, she will help Ah Dai catch a few fish today to repay him for his kindness.

They had barely exited the alley, when suddenly someone called out from behind them, "Young lady, stand there."

Ah Dai was alarmed and he turned around together with Ya Tou. In front of them was a very luxurious carriage and an elderly lady's face was peeking out from the small windows. Ya Tou recognized her, she was the owner of the purse she returned today.

"Young lady, is that really you?" The old lady let out a pleasantly surprised smile. The door to the carriage opened and the old lady got down with the help of her servants. She was lavishly dressed, her dress made out of materials that Ah Dai and Ya Tou wouldn't even dare to think about. She even had a mink shawl draped over her shoulders.

Ya Tou timidly asked, "What... What do you need?"

Ah Dai thought that the old lady was here to create trouble for Ya Tou and immediately blocked Ya Tou with his body, cautiously looking at the old lady in front of him.

The old lady beamed, "Children, don't be scared. Young lady, I haven't even thanked you for returning my purse to me. Such a cold day, how can you be wearing such sparse clothing!"

Ya Tou shook her head, "Don't thank me, I was the one who stole your purse."

Ah Dai was shocked, even though he might be slow, but he is very clear that if you get caught catching fish, nothing good will come out of it. He immediately placed a hand over Ya Tou's mouth, quickly saying, "Ya Tou, don't simply talk!"

The old lady did not order her servants to beat Ya Tou as Ah Dai initially imagined, she continued to smile, "Then why did you return my purse to me?"

Ya Tou pushed Ah Dai's hands away, gathered her courage, and said, "I... I saw you looking really anxious, so I returned it to you. Please don't blame him, if you want to hit someone, hit me."

The old lady lightly smiled, "En, you truly are an honest and kind child, I know that although you steal, you don't really want to do it, isn't that right? Where are your parents?"

Ya Tou's eyes reddened, "I don't have parents, I'm an orphan."

The old lady frowned and sighed, "A good child such as you should not be left here to suffer, come, come here, let granny take a look." She waved at Ya Tou.

Ah Dai was scared that Ya Tou would get into trouble and immediately said, "Don't go, Ya Tou, we should quickly run."

Ya Tou didn't listen to Ah Dai's advise, and vaguely felt that perhaps the elderly lady in front of her will change her life. She lowered her head, walked to the old lady's side, and stood there slightly shaking.

The old lady lifted Ya Tou's dirty little face and tucked her messy hair back. She then took out a clean white handkerchief to wipe Ya Tou's face, and nodded, "En, child, you must have suffered quite a lot. Are you willing to follow granny? Granny is able to provide you with a good life, and give you a normal education."

Ya Tou's eyes widened, she turned her head to look at Ah Dai, he was clearly slightly anxious, standing there rigidly with a blank face.

"What's wrong? Child, you aren't willing to leave with me? My husband is the Viceroy of Yunmu Province, it borders the Empire and the Holy Church and there it is spring year round. Here, it is really too cold."

Ya Tou turned around to look the the old lady's beautifully luxurious

and neat attire, and tried asking, "Granny, could you please bring my brother along?"

The old lady looked at Ah Dai, and right at that moment, Ah Dai was using his hands to wipe off his runny nose, a silly look on his face. A look of disgust flashed across the granny's face, and she shook her head, "That's not possible, he tried to lie to me just now, he doesn't seem like an honest child. I can only bring you alone. Quickly make a decision, it is very cold here."

Ya Tou hesitated for a moment, stared at the carriage and the old lady before her eyes, took a look at the poverty-stricken Ah Dai, and resolutely said, "Okay, I'll go with you."

The old lady gave a satisfied smile, "En, that's a good child, let's go, get into the carriage. Let's first find a place to get your clothes changed, wearing so little, you'll freeze."

"Granny, wait for me for a little while." Ya Tou turned around and ran to Ah Dai, "Big Brother Ah Dai, I'm leaving now, please don't blame Ya Tou, okay? I really don't want to continue living this type of life where we lack food and clothes. Big Brother Ah Dai, remember what we said just now, wait for me to grow up, I will definitely come back to find you."

Ah Dai said, "Ya Tou, are you really leaving? If Uncle Li finds out, he will beat you."

Tears fell from the corners of Ya Tou's eyes, she sobbed, "Big Brother Ah Dai, don't worry, next time no one will have the chance to beat me again. I'm leaving now, remember what we said just now. If you get the chance, leave Uncle Li, he is not a good person. Don't continue being a thief." At that, she didn't wait for Ah Dai to ask how to get mantous if he wasn't a thief, Ya Tou already left and ran towards the old lady. The old lady entered the carriage first, then with the help of her servants, Ya Tou also got onto the beautiful, warm carriage. Before closing the curtains in the carriage, Ya Tou took a deep look at Ah Dai, as if she was trying to remember the way he looks.

The carriage sped off, leaving Ah Dai standing there alone, staring at the carriage in the distance. Deep in his heart, Ah Dai started feeling a slight sense of disappointment. To Ah Dai, in his heart, Ya Tou is the only thing that is more important than mantou.

.....

"Pa--" Uncle Li slapped away the purses in Ah Dai's hands, scolding, "You dumbass, you just watched Ya Tou leave with other people? Damn it, wasted so much of my food, she hasn't repaid me and she dared to leave, pisses me off, seriously pisses me off." Uncle Li kicked Ah Dai to the ground, and started pacing in the tiny house.

Ah Dai curled up in pain, and sobbed, "No... I didn't ask her to leave, she wanted to leave on her own."

Uncle Li was right in the middle of a fit of anger, hearing Ah Dai's words made him ever angrier, he forcefully kicked Ah Dai a few times, scolding, "She wants to leave and you let her leave! Dumb till you can die. Let you be dumb, let you be dumb." Wretched cries emitted from Ah Dai's mouth, while the other little thieves gleefully watched his misfortune by the side, no one standing up to help.

After quite a long time, Uncle Li was finally less angry, and suddenly thought, Ah Dai is still his main source of income, where is he going to find such an obedient follower if he beats him till he breaks? He angrily picked up the purses on the floor, and stated, "Next time be smarter." Then he walked out on his own, the little thieves all knew that he was going out to drink.

Ah Dai curled up in pain in a corner, he didn't understand, this had nothing to do with him, why does Uncle Li want to beat him? Ya Tou's words before she left kept resounding nonstop in his mind.

The other little thieves were having leftover soup and rice that Uncle Li brought back from some unknown restaurant, happily chatting away about today's happenings. When Ah Dai finally remembered that he hasn't had anything to eat today, not even scraps were left. He felt heavy hearted, and started missing Ya Tou more and more. Ya Tou was right, living is really very painful.

En : a sound signifying agreement. It means yes.

Yunmu : mica. Decided to stick with the pinyin name.

A Frigid Town, Part 4

Translated by Star'sWish

Edited by Caz

Early the next morning, Uncle Li had a surge of mercy, and threw a mantou at Ah Dai. After he ravenously downed the mantou, he was sent out to start another day of fish catching.

The occasional drift of snowflakes down from the heavens gave passerbys a sense of chilliness. Slowly walking along the street, Ah Dai thought, when will another granny appear to take him away! He'll be satisfied so long as he is able to eat mantous till he is full. How is Ya Tou? She left with the old lady, is it true that she has mantous to eat everyday?

While contemplating, Ah Dai suddenly saw someone in odd clothing ahead. The reason it was odd is because that tall figure was completely shrouded in a large cloak to the point where even his features were not clearly visible. Beneath the cloak, there seemed to be a bulging purse. Ah Dai decided that that man will be his first target of the day. Together with that thought, Ah Dai stealthily followed the man, took out a sharp little razor blade from his belt, and waited for the chance to strike. The reason Ah Dai often succeeded at catching fish had to do with his perseverance, once he

decides on a prey, he will follow said target closely until he succeeds.

Following him closely down the street, the man in the cloak walked into a luxurious restaurant that was dazzlingly decorated, even the roof used glazed roof tiles. Ah Dai thought in his heart, to be able to eat here, there much be quite a lot of money in his purse. At that thought, he couldn't help but secretly feel happy, if he can bring more fish back today, Uncle Li might give him enough mantous to be full. He crouched down by a corner of the restaurant's front door, patiently waiting.

"Leave, leave, leave, where did a little beggar come from, move to the side, " the restaurant's doorman kicked Ah Dai, looking at him with revulsion.

Ah Dai had already gotten used to these egotistical doormen, he quickly nodded, bowed, and ran a little further way, finding a dim corner capable of sheltering him from the wind and snow before crouching down again.

Playing with the sharp little razor blade in his hands, Ah Dai patiently waited, not in the least bit anxious, it's just eating, he must come out eventually.

A full hour passed, finally, the cloaked man walked out. Ah Dai was excited because he was walking towards him.

Facing him directly was the best position to strike. He hurriedly stood up, calmed his state of mind, and walked towards that man. The man was very tall, Ah Dai only reached his stomach region. The distance in between them unceasingly shortened, Ah Dai scratched his head of hair with the hand that was holding the blade, right when they were roughly a meter apart, Ah Dai stumbled and bumped into the man.

Ah Dai instantly felt like he had bumped into a metal plate, his whole body in pain. He inadvertently looked up and saw that man's face. He had an old appearance, with uncountable fine wrinkles, he looked around 70 or 80 years old.

"Sorry, sorry, I didn't mean it," Ah Dai immediately apologized.

The old man humphed, didn't say anything, and continued walking ahead, seemingly unaware that a slit had been sliced open in his cloak, the purse at his waist now missing.

Seeing that the other party would not bother him, Ah Dai happily ran ahead, in a moment of carelessness, he slipped in a snow pile, and fell down sprawling. The areas viciously hit by Uncle Li yesterday were hurt again, causing him to spasm nonstop. Even then, it was hard to overshadow Ah Dai's excitement in his heart, the moment he got the purse, he discovered that the weight was abnormally heavy, even if it were only filled with bronze coins, it would still be enough to meet today's required quota.

Shakily standing up, he quickly ran to an alley, after turning around to make sure that no one was chasing after him, his sighed and patted himself on the chest, sitting down. However, what Ah Dai doesn't know is that his target held one of the Continent's special professions -- an Alchemist.

The most exalted profession is that of the priesthood, however, apart from the priesthood, each country had a few professions that were placed above typical workers, and these professions formed their own associations to become special existences that wielded their own power.

The Mercenary Guild, had the largest number of members. Being a mercenary was a special vocation where they took on certain easy or difficult missions on behalf of their clients. They are rewarded based on the difficulty of the missions, and the Mercenary Guild branches spread across the land were the best places for them to receive missions. Of course, the Mercenary Guild does not provide its services for free, they collect a set fee based on the difficulty of the mission. A group of mercenaries is called a Mercenary Unit. For extremely difficult missions, employers prefer mercenary units with formidable strength and would not hesitate to pay a high price for them.

Mercenaries and Mercenary Units are both divided into six ranks, the lowest rank is the 4th Level mercenaries and mercenary units, from there in ascending order, is the 3rd Level Mercenary, 2nd Level Mercenary, 1st Level Mercenary, Special Mercenary, and the highest

ranking Extraordinary Mercenary. Due to the fact that there is a large number of mercenaries and mercenary units, it is extremely difficult to move up a rank. Different ranking mercenaries will be provided with different badges by the Mercenary Guild. In a mercenary group, those of higher ranks are very well respected by their colleagues from the lower ranks.

The Sorcerer's Institute, sorcerers are professions second only to the priesthood. Since the cultivation of magic has very high requirements as to a person's inner qualities, sorcerers are scarce. The sorcerers that cultivate Light Magic have almost all been incorporated into the Holy Church, which further showcases the preciousness of a sorcerer. They are usually lavishly paid to join armies, almost all sorcerers of the intermediate rank and above will have an aristocratic titled bestowed upon them by their respective countries. Thus, the vocation of a sorcerer is one that commoners yearn for the most as it is associated with name and power.

Sorcerers are divided into Junior Sorcerers, Intermediate Sorcerers, High Sorcerers, Grand Sorcerers, Principal Sorcerers, and Sage Sorcerers. As a sorcerer's main source of income is an allowance from the country, they will usually visit the Sorcerer's Institute to obtain a badge that is equivalent to their rankings in order to get the corresponding allowance. Of course, they have to go through assessments set by the Sorcerer's Institute. The Sorcerer's Institute is the only association that doesn't require work to be done on its behalf before paying its members.

The Alchemist Alliance, although they do not have many members, they are very well respected in every country. The Alliance branches in each country are generally given incentive money, because weapons refined by alchemists are much better than those created by blacksmiths, and thus are the best to equip a high-ranking army with. The reason Heaven's Gold Empire is renowned is because they have the largest Alchemist Alliance among the four countries.

Alchemists are actually considered a ancillary branch of sorcerers who mainly specialize in Fire Magic. What they are stronger at compared to sorcerers is their knowledge in the various minerals and medicines. Powerful alchemists are able to forge high-level divine weapons, the prices of these divine weapons are unable to be estimated, they are beloved by every country's imperial families, and even more so by the Holy Church. Alchemists are a group whose vocation is secondary in wealth only to the assassins. Alchemists are divided into Novice, Junior Alchemist, Intermediate Alchemist, High Alchemist, Special Alchemist, and Grand Alchemist. Although alchemists have their own set of badges, the higher level alchemists generally don't bother trying to obtain them.

Too much information. Will introduce
the Assassins Guild and the Thieves Guild
in the next chapter.

Name and power : name stands for both reputation and fame.

Principal Sorcerer : direct translation - Sorcerer Instructor ; in Fairy Tail : Slayer

Sage Sorcerer : direct translation - Sorcerer Professor

A Frigid Town, Part 5

Translated by Star'sWish

To Be Edited by Caz

The Assassins Guild, with the least members, they are also the most secretive association on the Continent, also called the Assassins Band. Although they don't have many members, all of them are extremely skilled. Through underground networks, they accept assassination jobs and collect very high commissions. Information on the organizational structure of the guild is very strictly guarded, there are only two way to join the guild: One, is to pass an exceedingly difficult test. Two, is to complete the challenge set by the guild yearly, as long as they can complete the mission, the guild will accept them. Of course, the mission is much harder than the test, and it might even endanger your life. Because humans scheme and fight for power, this guild that people generally would pale at the mention of, thrives on the Continent.

There is a very clear ranking system for the assassins, in ascending order, Assassins, Dark Assassin, Silent Assassin, and the Annihilator. These assassins are centrally managed by the Assassins Guild, their identities are kept secret, and cannot be known by outsiders. They are not part of any country, nor do they have more than 100 members, however, they are a considerably formidable

power. There are scarcely any sorcerers within the guild.

Thieves Guild, plainly speaking, they are a group of high class thieves. To get what they want, some aristocrats will hire the guild's thieves to steal for them. Not just any thief can join the guild, although the requirements are not as strict as the Assassins Guild, but they must also pass a series of stringent tests, and they only accept thieves with inner qualities and skills that are exceptional.

In ascending order, the rankings are, Thief, High Thief, and the Acquirer. Generally, those who hold the esteemed titled of the Acquirer often steal treasures that are worth cities, they are also most feared by the aristocrats. The strictest law in the Thieves Guild, is that they aren't allowed to murder. It is also because of this rule that they aren't being eliminated by the armies of each country. In order to complete their client's request, the Thieves Guild has the fastest and most effective information network. Similar to the Assassins Guild, the Thieves Guild is considered a dark power on the Continent.

.....

Taking out the heavy purse, Ah Dai was filled with happiness. The purse was intricately made of leather, and there was a six-point star sewn onto it in gold thread. Ah Dai had never seen such a beautiful purse before, he hurriedly opened the drawstring, and put his hand in. He was imagining, what if there was an amethyst coin inside, how

amazing would it be! He has been working for a year, but to date he has only stolen one amethyst coin, but reminiscing that time, Uncle Li was so happy he gave him a large drumstick, he was the envy of the group. Never again has he eaten such something so tasty. That one time, he shared the thigh with Ya Tou, they even ate the bones. That tastiness, he never gets tired of reminiscing that taste.

As he took out the coins in the purse, he was shocked into stillness. The purse didn't only contain his long-time dream of "drumsticks", it also had more than 10 gold coins , and even a few coins that were brightly sparking, he had never seen those blueish coins before. Looking at the small sparkling pile, it's more than 10 "drumsticks"! "It's enough to feel full, I can finally eat till I am full." Ah Dai ecstatically shouted .

Just as he was overjoyed, the six-point star suddenly glowed, soon after, a raspy old voice sounded in his ears, "You have never been full before?"

Ah Dai jolted, the coins in his hands scattering all over the floor, a voice, where did the voice come from? He looked around him, but there weren't anyone around, "God bless, god bless," Ah Dai placed his palms together and repeated nonstop.

"Did you think that God will protect a thief?' the old voice sounded again. This time Ah Dai clearly heard it, the voice seemed to be coming from that intricate purse.

"Ah---" Ah Dai cried out in alarm, throwing the purse away, his whole body involuntarily shaking. It was his first time encountering such a strange situation, after all he was still a child, the fear clearing showing in his eyes. The snowflakes continued falling, the sky still dim, at that moment, it seemed as though the cotton jacket could no longer provide any warmth, a cold stream rose from the bottom of his heart.

Not too far away, the purse was glowing, that beautiful six-point star giving off a dreamy golden light. Under Ah Dai's terrified gaze, the golden light condense, a blurry figure appearing above the purse. The image slowly got clearer, it was that of the cloaked old man.

A deep strange sound was emitting from underneath the cloak, if Uncle Li was here, he would have noticed that the old man was chanting an incantation. Finally, the figure solidified into a real body, and slowly descended to the ground.

The old man stood by the purse, slowly bent down to pick it up, and sighed, "It has been a long time since I have used this incantation, it has become quite unfamiliar!"

Looking at his fishing target appearing in such a strange situation, even if Ah Dai were sillier, he would still know that something very bad was about to befall him. He never imagined, that he who had yet to fail in four months, under circumstances where he succeeded in catching a large fish, would actually get caught by the owner himself. He curled up into himself, shaking, in his mind, the great

catastrophe about to befall him, must be a cruel "beating", this is not the first time this has happened. The last time he was caught, the big man almost broke his hand, if Uncle Li didn't appear in time to scare away the man, he would have lots the ability to fish, and be unable to eat the mantous he so loved.

The old man threw the purse at Ah Dai, lightly saying, "Pick them up and put them in."

"Yes, yes." Ah Dai carefully took the purse, and closely looked at the six-point star on the purse. He couldn't understand how a man could appear from from within the purse? Shakily, he carefully place each coin into the purse, this process went on for a while. The odd thing was, the old man did not hurry him, beneath the cloak, a pair of bright eyes were incessantly measuring Ah Dai.

"Done, done, here, for you." Ah Dai tried his bad to appear lowly, holding the purse up with both hands. Perhaps if he appeared weaker, when he gets beaten later, the other man might use less strength. Ah Dai never thought of fighting back, based on his "weather-beaten" body that has experienced the hardships of life, how could he fight back? Even if the opponent was an old man.

The old man received the purse, he didn't beat him, but he also had no intention of letting Ah Dai go. He stood in from of Ah Dai, looking at the small skinny figure of the child before him.

Ah Dai lowered his head and crouched down, his frozen red hands

protecting his head, trying his best to curl up, waiting for the arrival of the storm.

"En, very good hands, long slender fingers, wide palms, no wonder even I didn't notice my things being stolen. You haven't answered my last question, have you?"

End of Chapter 001

Assassin: stabber/assassin

Dark Assassin: dark/hidden type assassin

Silent Assassin: tolerance/patience, ninja type assassin

Annihilator: wipe-out/exterminate type assassin

Assassin Group vs Assassin Band?

Chapter 002: The Alchemist, Part 1

Translated by Star'sWish

To Be Edited by Caz

Ah Dai was brought up short by the question and unconsciously looked up to see the old man's face that was full of fine wrinkles. The old man's face was expressionless, staring at him. "Wha... What question?"

The old man frowned slightly, thinking, turns out to be a silly child, slightly silly is also good, isn't it just right. "I asked you just now, you have never been full?"

Ah Dai nodded, feeling that this old man didn't seem to have any intention of beating him, with that his became more courageous, "Yes, it's true, I know you must be very angry, if you aren't going to beat me, could you please let me go..." Although he failed at catching the fish this time, but the day was still long, Ah Dai felt that he still had a chance at completing the task. He has never been discouraged by a failure, for his beloved mantou, he must continue to work hard and do his part.

This produced a slight change in the old man, "Did I say I wouldn't

beat you? You stole my purse, beating you seems like a normal thing to do."

Ah Dai's recently relaxed expression immediately took on a crestfallen look, returning to the position with his hands protecting his head, "Then... then can you please don't hit my hands."

The old man was slightly suprised, "Why?"

Ah Dai quietly said, "Because, because I still need to go catch fishes, if my hands are spoilt, I wouldn't be able to to do so, if I can't do so, I won't have mantous to eat, and I'll even get beaten by Uncle Li."

"Catch fishes? Uncle Li?" The old man was slightly stunned, and immediately understood the meaning behind catching fishes, and that Uncle Li was the one behind this silly little thief. He was amused, a thief being caught and asking that his hands not be beaten, the little silly boy must be quite silly indeed!

"Beating you is light punishment, based on my position, even if I killed you, no one will trouble me, do you believe me?"

Ah Dai stiffened, "Kill me? Kill me, wouldn't I be dead? How does it feel like, can you please tell me first? Is being killed painful, there are no mantous to be had after death are there?"

The old man felt that speaking with this silly boy seemed to make

him more cheerful. However, he couldn't never have imagined that this little boy in front of him who is now asking how it would feel like to die, 10 years later, would become the an entity that will shake the foundations of the world -- "Death God", a person who brings deaths upon others.

"Do you want to eat till you are full?" The old man decided not to dawdle and immediately got to the main point.

At the mention of eating, Ah Dai immediately perked up, the mantou he ate in the morning has been digested by the frigid weather, his stomach growled. He raised is head and looked with hope at the old man, "Yes! The thing I wish for the most is to be full. Why don't... why don't you give me one of those purple colored coins, just one would be enough." The though of a chicken drumstick caused Ah Dai to salivate.

"I won't give you the money, however, if you want to be full, then leave with me, I'll let you eat till you are full, additionally, I won't beat you."

Ah Dai lit up immediately, this morning he was dreaming of being taken away like Ya Tou, and his dream is coming true, he carefully asked, "Really, I can really eat till I am full?

The old man nodded, "If you have any other requests you can also tell me, I will try my best to fulfill them. However, you won't be coming back for a very long time, you must think clearly." He didn't

want to bring a kid back that would cry everyday, when that time comes, he would kill him and find another kid.

Ah Dai shook his head, "I am willing to leave with you, as long as I can be full, I don't have any other requests."

The old man nodded his head in satisfaction, "You will have to work if you leave with me, are you afraid of hard work?"

"Work? What work?" Ah Dai mumbled.

"As long as it's better than you being a thief, at the very least I won't beat you, no? If you don't understand, I can teach you."

Ah Dai lowered his head, "But... but, I'm really slow, they all say that I am dumb, would I be able to learn?"

The old man impatiently replied, "If I say you can learn, you can learn. Come with me." He turned around and walked towards the exit of the alley.

Ah Dai made a sound of agreement and quickly followed the old man out. A few steps later, the old man suddenly stopped. Ah Dai wasn't paying attention and bumped into his back, "Ouch!" Ah Dai cried out in pain, holding his nose, looking at the old man with incomprehension.

The old man turned his head to ask, "What is your name?"

"I'm called Ah Dai."

The old man teased, "Ah Dai? Your name suits you! Remember, I am Gelisi, an alchemist. From now on, you are my apprentice."

Ah Dai nodded, afraid that he would forget, he chanted, "Die in song, die in song, ..."
TLN: Die in song -- is pronounced Ge Li Si too.

The old man raised his voice, "I am called Gelisi, not die in song, remember it well. Call me Teacher next time."

"Ok, ok, I understand, tea..teacher. But, what is the meaning of teacher?"

Gelisi felt that he has been defeated by this little boy, helplessly explaining, "Teacher, is the person who teaches you things." At that, he turned around and walked out of the alley. Gelisi, this is a name that even the head of the Alchemist Alliance respected, after all, even though he was temperamental, he is still one of the rare Grand Alchemists.

Ah Dai suddenly remembered Uncle Li's reaction after Ya Tou left, he hurriedly caught up with Gelisi, "Teacher, can you please go with me to tell Uncle Li. He has given me mantous all this time, I am leaving, I should say goodbye, otherwise, he will get mad."

Gelisi though about it an nodded, "Sure, lead the way." He initially

didn't have to go with Ah Dai, but for his plans, he must make it so that Ah Dai unwaveringly follows him, that was the only reason he agreed to the silly boy's plans.

Ah Dai lead the way ahead, after seven or eight turns, they arrived at the northern part of the city, that worn down house that he has been staying in for more than a year. At this time, most of the kids have been sent out to work by Uncle Li, it wasn't noisy. Gelisi frowned, "This is the place?"

Ah Dai nodded, carefully opening the flimsy door and walking in first.

Uncle Li was drinking from a wine pot in the room, since Ah Dai's skills have improved drastically, his income also increased, he no longer needed to go out to work, and he was just thinking, in a few year, after collecting more money, he will be able to live a comfortable life, maybe bring a woman back to marry, live a good life like a master, don't need to go to that lowly brothel for release. Just as he was drunkenly daydreaming, the door opened, and Ah Dai's skinny figure appeared.

"En? How are you back so quickly, how many fishes did you catch?"

Ah Dai was slightly scared, "Uncle Li, I.. I didn't catch any fishes."

Hearing that Ah Dai didn't accomplish anything, Uncle Li's voice became sharp, his eyes bulging, "No fish? Why are you back if you

haven't caught anything? Is your skin tight again?"

Ah Dai shivered, slowly saying, "I... I came back to say goodbye."

Uncle Li was shocked, and jumped down from the bed, "You want to leave? You have eaten my dry rice for such a long time, you want to leave like this, your wings hardened? Is that it?" How could he willingly part with his money tree? He didn't care too much about Ya Tou leaving, even if she stayed, she would have been a waste of money since she can't catch fishes, even sold to the slave trader, she wouldn't have been worth much. But Ah Dai is different, currently more than half his income comes from Ah Dai, he would never let his money tree leave.

Uncle Li tried his best to lower his voice and soften his tone, "Are you hungry again, I'll give you a few mantous, then be good and go catch me some fishes, don't have wrong thoughts, otherwise, humph." He waved his fists, threateningly looking at Ah Dai.

Long periods of threats caused Ah Dai to unconsciously shrink back, getting to eat a mantou, it is also a good thing! He was just wondering what to say when Gelisi's voice rang out, "Otherwise what can you do to him?" Following the sound of footsteps, Gelisi's tall figure appeared next to Ah Dai, in front of him, Uncle Li seemed so indecent and insignificant.

"Who... who are you?" Uncle Li sharply looked at him and asked.

Gelisi lightly said, "You don't need to care who I am, Ah Dai and I are here only to say goodbye, I am taking him away, from today onwards, he is not a thief under you."

Uncle Li felt a sudden chill in his heart, this man whose face is unseen seems to exert an invisible pressure, making it difficult for him to breath. However, profit is the most important, he gathered his courage, "Not possible, you can't take him away, no wonder he wants to leave me, turns out he found a support. Damn it I am going to beat you to death" His fist flew towards Ah Dai's chest.

Ah Dai subconsciously curled up, waiting for the incoming pain, however, after half a day nothing happened. Ah Dai opened his eyes and found that Uncle Li's fists didn't fall on him, instead it was suspended in midair, caught at the wrist by thin hand. Cold sweat streamed down Ah Dai's temples.

Gelisi : actually Ge Li Si, was wondering if I should call him Chris/Griss

The Alchemist, Part 2

Translated by Star'sWish

To Be Edited by Caz

"I have said it, he is now my apprentice, you don't have the right to hit him." Gelisi smoothly threw Uncle Li to the side, he was not like the typical alchemists with weak bodies, although he doesn't know any martial arts, but people like Uncle Li didn't even exist to him.

Uncle Li held his wrist, scolding, "You... you bastard, are you trying to steal my person?

Gelisi laughed coldly, "Wastes like you should have already been punished by God, stop bothering us, or I will send you to hell." He held out his right hand, the hand that was holding Uncle Li just now, and a few strange sentences of an incantation that could not be heard clearly came from under the cloak. Black flames suddenly appeared within Gelisi's palm, emitting a devilish glow. Gelisi threw the fire, and the black flames changed into a string of fire that fell onto the only three-legged wooden table in the corner of the room. Without a sound, without signs of burning, that table vanished into thin air without even leaving a trace of ash, the air only held slightly remnants of a bad smell.

Ah Dai and Uncle Li were stunned, Ah Dai asking, "Teacher, are you doing magic tricks? How did the table disappear?"

Gelisi glanced a him, "This isn't a magic trick, it's called sorcery." If the person who witnessed the scene just now was any Intermediate Sorcerer or above, he would have been shocked to notice that the flame that Gelisi used was formed from a mixture of Dark Magic and Fire Magic.

Uncle Li's teeth were chattering, "You... you are a sorcerer. Sir Sorcerer, don't... don't kill me." He clearly knew that being a small person like himself, if the man before him wanted to kill him, it would be as easy as squishing an ant, no one would care about the life and death of a petty thief. Furthermore, apart from the Holy Church and the United Regions Commonwealth, no matter which country it is, as long as the ones killed aren't aristocrats, alchemists have a set right to be pardoned. No one is willing to offend them.

Gelisi turned and said to Ah Dai, "We have said what we need to, let's go."

Ah Dai took a look at Uncle Li, Uncle Li was extremely pale, sitting there without a sound. After all, compared to money, it seems that life is still more important.

"Uncle... Uncle Li, I'll be leaving." With that, Ah Dai quickly ran out, as he ran through the door, he could feel his body relaxing, just now when Gelisi tossed Uncle Li to the side, deep in his heart,

happiness blossomed. Between Uncle Li and mantous, mantous are more important. Gelisi also said that he wouldn't beat him. No one willingly gets beaten, it is after all difficult to tolerate a situation where one's whole body is in pain. To be with a something-chemist, is still more preferable than being with Uncle Li.

Actually, Ah Dai himself didn't notice that the main reason he chose to be with Gelisi is because of Ya Tou's advice before she left.

Gelisi wasn't walking quickly so Ah Dai easily caught up. Although the sky was filled with dark clouds as usual, but Ah Dai appeared much happier, "Teacher, where are we going?"

Gelisi stopped for a moment, "Don't ask so much, just follow me."

The cold voice surprised Ah Dai, being trained into submission over a long period of time, he didn't even think about resisting, "Oh, sorry."

Gelisi turned back and continued walking, very satisfied in his heart. Although this child is slightly slow, but he is very obedient, in a year, he can probably complete that thing, it has been his dream for many years! At that thought, Gelisi's couldn't help but let out a smile that could make people shiver without feeling cold. If Ah Dai saw that smile, it might shake his will to leave. However, he didn't see it, it was also exactly because he left Ninuo with Gelisi, that his extraordinary life could begin.

After walking for a while, Gelisi brought Ah Dai to an inn that was as grand as a palace, he held his head high as he walked in, the two doorboys on each side hurrying to open the large doors, respectfully welcoming him.

Ah Dai looked at the gold plated large doors before him, and couldn't help but gulp down his saliva, he was familiar with this place, because to catch fishes, he has crouched here a few times before. Uncle Li once told him that this was the largest inn in Ninou City, called the Grand Kailun Hotel. Teacher is staying here? He unconsciously followed him.

"Leave, leave, leave, where did this beggar come from, hurry up and scram." The tall doorboy stopped Ah Dai in his path, chasing him away as if he was a fly. Ah Dai jumped in shock, immediately acquiescing. He walked towards the side, after a few steps, he stopped, thinking, "This is not right, I followed Teacher here. Teacher went in, then I should follow him in too." He then walked back to the door, politely saying, "I followed my Teacher here, could you please let me in?"

The doorboy dusted his uniform, and looked at Ah Dai who was dirty, a strong revulsion apparent in his expression. He then disdainfully said, "Who is your Teacher, scram further way, don't dirty our floor, a stinking beggar who wants to enter our hotel, why don't you take a look at your own morals and actions."

Ah Dai started becoming anxious, although he was slightly slow, but

he knew that he can't turn back now. He definitely can't go back to Uncle Li, he can only eat his beloved mantou by following Gelisi. "Let.. let me go in please, I want to look for my Teacher." He tried asking one more time, worry filling his eyes.

The doorboy was unwilling to continue talking to the little beggar in front of him, and viciously walked towards Ah Dai, "Damn it, you don't want face when you are given face huh, let the grand me move my hands." His fist swiftly swung towards Ah Dai, he has seen many beggars, within Heaven's Gold Empire, there were many beggars like this, even if he beat a few to death, no one will trouble him.

"Slow down, he is here with me." Gelisi's voice rang out at the critical moment. Actually, when he entered the hotel just now, he knew that Ah Dai would not be let in easily. However, in order to cause Ah Dai to serve him unwaveringly, Gelisi didn't appear until now. Finally, when the doorboy decided to take action, only then did he stop it in time.

The doorboy was shocked, and immediately put down his swinging arm, confusedly asking, "Sir, he is really here with you?"

Gelisi lightly nodded, beneath his cloak, his cold eyes sparkled. The doorboy shivered, immediately saying, "Sorry sir, I was too clumsy, please." The doorboy has experience in the world and naturally knew that the alchemist before him was someone he could not offend, he quickly apologized, and politely gestured for Ah Dai to enter.

Ah Dai quickly walked forward to face Gelisi, "Sorry, Teacher, I... I..."

"Let's go." Gelisi has seen what he wanted to see in Ah Dai's eyes. He lead the way forward, and this time Ah Dai was smarter, he followed Gelisi closely. Many sharp looks were directed at Ah Dai, causing him to feel uncomfortable, he curled his body, lowered his head, quietly looking at Gelisi's feet, following him forward.

Gelisi brought Ah Dai to a large set of doors. He pushed the doors and entered. The air was heavy with steam, a sense of warmth flowed through Ah Dai, causing him to unconsciously exclaim, "So warm!" This was one of the public baths in the Grand Kailun Hotel. At this hour, no guests would be here, usually the guests would only come here to soak at night.

"Sir, how are you, is there anything I can help with?" A middle aged man walked towards them, politely speaking to Gelisi, and discretely measuring Ah Dai with his gaze.

Gelisi took out an amethyst coin from his purse and threw it towards the middle-aged man, "Bring this child to take a bath, get the bath scrubbers to clean him up, then get him a new set of clothes, everything. Keep it simple. Understood? Keep the change."

The middle-aged man was the manager of this bathroom. Although the smell emanating from Ah Dai made him nauseous, but Gelisi's actions caused him to be filled with smiles. It has to be known that

his income in a year was only five amethyst coins, and at least half will be leftover from that single amethyst coin after everything was done! "Yes, yes, Sir, please don't worry, we will guarantee your satisfaction. Number three, number four, quickly bring this young master to take a bath," he called out, and two young bath scrubbers ran out.

Ah Dai hid behind Gelisi, warily looking at the two men in front of him. Gelisi said, "Follow them for a bath, my apprentice can't be dirty all over."

Bath? Since he can remember, he has ever done such a thing, he has only seen Uncle Li bathing in the room, and helped him scrub his back, Uncle Li had a comfortable expression on, bathing can't be such a bad thing. At that thought, Ah Dai agreed and followed the two bath scrubbers to take a bath.

The middle-aged man called over another helper and instructed him to buy the clothes, then he personally steeped a pot of fragrant tea and brought a cup over to Gelisi, "Sir, please wait for a while."

Gelisi made a sound of agreement and wordlessly sat down on a large comfortably soft sofa.

Bath scrubbers : worker who massage and scrub backs etc. in the

bath

The Alchemist, Part 3

Translated by Star'sWish

To Be Edited by Caz

The middle aged man wanted to get closer to Gelisi, but seeing his demeanor that was portraying otherwise, the man gave up. He simply left the tea cup on the small table and walked back to his counter.

After a whole hour, the doors to the baths finally opened. Gelisi raised his head to take a look and even he was shocked. The dirty little beggar was gone, in its place was a very clean little boy, his mid-length hair over his shoulders. Although he was thin, his skin was very fair, he looked normal and gave out an honest feel. If it weren't for his dark hair and dark eyes, he could have easily been mistaken for a Heaven's Gold people. His gestures did not hold any traces of the commonplace people, and even his eyes did not shift like that of a thief's, however, he still looked slow. Gelisi could only recognize the apprentice he took in from his slow looks.

Ah Dai uncomfortably fidgeted with the clothes he was wearing, although the grey cloth was not very good, but it was clean and fresh, and the outer layer cotton jacket was very warm. When he looked in the mirror after his bath, even he could not recognize that the naive little boy in the mirror was himself.

"Sir, are you satisfied?" the middle aged man smiled and asked Gelisi.

Gelisi nodded, saying to Ah Dai, "Let's go."

Ah Dai nodded and quickly followed Gelisi, the both of them walking out the bathroom.

Watching them leave, one of the back scrubbers said, "Leader, it was really scary, that kid had a few pounds of mud on him, I have never felt so much satisfaction from scrubbing, each scrub scrubbed out a roll of mud, feels good, it really feels so good."

The other bath scrubber agreed, "Yeah, it really does feel good, it's too bad that the smell was lacking."

The middled aged man was not in the mood, "The both of you like scrubbing so much, go find beggars to scrub! None of them will have less mud." As he was saying that, he was playing with the amethyst coin in his hand, he was immensely happy in his heart, with the extra income today, he'll be able to have some fun tonight.

Gelisi brought Ah Dai back to his room, he was staying in a standard room that came with two beds, the reason he took Ah Dai to take a bath first was because he was afraid that he wouldn't be able to stand the smell emanating from Ah Dai. The luxurious setting in the room caused Ah Dai to just stonily stand outside the door, confusedly

asking himself, I can really go in? "Come in." Gelisi's voice answered his unasked question.

"Gululu..." The moment he stepped into the room, Ah Dai's stomach growled. Gelisi turned around to look at him, took off his cloak, and asked, "Are you hungry?"

Ah Dai finally had a clear look at Gelisi, he was the same him, very skinny, but Gelisi had a big frame, enough to support his clothes, a head of white hair, and deep wrinkles showed that he was not young, those dark blue and deep eyes cause Ah Dai to feel a little scared.

"Answer my question." Gelisi immediately said.

"Yes, I am hungry. I only ate a mantou today." Ah Dai stood next to the wall, carefully answering.

Gelisi took off his shoes and semi leaned against the bed, taking out a pill. After a slight hesitation, he threw it to Ah Dai, "Eat it."

"Ok..." Ah Dai answered, putting the pill into his mouth. He didn't understand, what could this white little ball do? The pill barely entered his mouth before the back of his head was smacked by Gelisi, he cried out in pain and spat the pill out. Ah Dai rubbed his hurting head, "Teacher, what's wrong?"

Gelisi was quickly defeated by this foolish apprentice, once again, he handed over the pill, "Peel off the wax coat before eating, you

have never had medicine?"

Ah Dai looked at the round pill, not daring to take it, "Teacher, I... I have really never eaten it before, what is a wax coat?"

Gelisi sighed, peeled off the wax coat, and took out a red pill, a fragrant smell instantly filled the room. He held Ah Dai's jaw with one hand, and with the other, he stuffed the pill into Ah Dai's mouth.

In the moment Ah Dai was stunned, the pill had already melted and slipped down his throat, wherever it touched, it brought with it a cool, refreshing feel.

"Go to the toilet, take off your pants, and squat. The door to the left of the main door is the toilet, go quickly." Gelisi was forced to explain clearly, otherwise, the silly boy in front of him might poop with his pants on, he didn't want to be troubled.

Although Ah Dai didn't know why his teacher wanted him to go squat in the toilet, he still obediently went.

In a moment, sounds like fireworks could be heard from the toilet together with Ah Dai's comfortable moans. The pill Gelisi gave Ah Dai was the Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill that he specially made. To make the pill, he spent more than 10 years collecting over a hundred precious herbs, used a special method, after nine steamings and nine dryings, finally using high heat to complete it, at that time a single crucible could only produce five pills, he ate one, and sold

another three for 1,000 diamond coins each to the imperial family, the remainder, was the one he gave to Ah Dai. The main purpose of the Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill is to remove the impurities in the body, clear the nerves, and increase one's lifespan. It is a pill every martial arts practitioner dream of.

Gelisi quietly sighed, his last Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill has been given to Ah Dai, he can't regret it anymore, Ah Dai's body will be refined by the pill, after take care of it for a while, Ah Dai will be able to reach the level of his expectations, as long as everything else is ready and complete, he will definitely be able to fulfill his dreams. From now on, this child is his treasure, no matter what he must bring him along.

After a long time, sounds finally stopped coming from the toilet, however, after half a day, Ah Dai still didn't come out. Gelisi was surprised, could it be that this child's body was too weak to withstand the effects of the medication? This is bad, if he dies, it would be a waste of the only Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill left, where is he going to find another treasure that can refine the body! At that thought, Gelisi quickly walked towards the toilet door and violently pushed it open. A strong disgusting smell hit him in the face, Gelisi immediately pinched his nose, deeply frowning.

Ah Dai was stonily squatting there, seeing his teacher suddenly storming in, he didn't know what to do.

Gelisi saw that Ah Dai was fine, and couldn't help but let out a

breath of relief, slightly angrily saying, "Are you done?"

Ah Dai nodded, "I'm done."

"Then why aren't you coming out, you want to keep staying in here?!" It has been a long time since someone could make Gelisi angry, because all those who made him angry has turned into ashes, however, he could do nothing about the child in front of him.

End of Chapter 002

Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill : Nine Transformation/Turns Change Essence/Marrow Pill

Chapter 003: Sorcery 101, Part 1

Translated by Star'sWish

To Be Edited by Caz

Ah Dai was aggrieved, "You... you didn't ask me to go out! Didn't you say that I have to listen to everything you say?"

Gelidi turned around and walked back into the room. He let out a long breath and opened the windows to let some fresh air in to lessen the stinky smell in the room. He honestly felt that he has been defeated by this foolish boy, taking another deep breath of the fresh air, he said in the direction of the toilet, "Wipe your butt and come out."

After putting his clothes back on, Ah Dai walked out of the toilet, he suddenly felt like a new person, his body felt unimaginably fresh, as if he had just gotten rid of an extremely heavy burden. His whole body felt light, even his muddy mind felt clearer, his whole body filled with energy. "Teacher, what did you let me eat just now?"

Gelisi impatiently said, "Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill."

"Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill? What is that?"

"Don't ask so much, sit down." Gelisi pointed at the bench on a side. "I would like to ask you a few questions, after that I'll take you to get some food."

At the mention of food Ah Dai was suddenly filled with excitement, he obediently sat down on the bench to wait for Gelisi's questioning.

"Ah Dai, do you have any other name? Are you of the Sunset People or the Prosperous People?"

Ah Dai shook his head, "No, I do not have any other name. What is Sunset people and Prosperous People?"

Gelisi explained, "Sunset and Prosperous are two other Empires on the Continent, looking at your dark hair and dark eyes, you are likely to be a descent of one of the two countries."

"Ok, I do not know which people I am. Sunset and Prosperous, these two empires, I think I have heard of them, but I don't have much of an impression anymore."

Gelisi once again sat down on the bed, eyeing Ah Dai whose face was now rosier, "Do you know your parents?"

Ah Dai was at a loss, "I only remember being on the streets and asking for food, keep asking for food. One day Uncle Li came and told me that he would give me food, so I followed him."

"Then how old are you?"

Ah Dai thought about it, "Twelve, oh, no, probably thirteen." He really wasn't too sure about his age, the kids Uncle Li kept that were around his height were all roughly twelve or thirteen, that's why he felt that he should be around that age.

Twelve, thirteen, yes, this is quite appropriate, Gelisi continued asking, "Do you know the year and month you were born?" At that, he regretted it, the silly boy in front of him didn't even know how old he was, how would he know his birth day and month.

However, contrary to expectations, Ah Dai smoothly replied, "The 21st day of the 3rd month, Year 977 of the Holy Calendar." After finishing, even he was shocked by his own reply.

A cold glimmer flashed in Gelisi's eyes, "Didn't you say you don't know how old you are? How could you respond?"

Ah Dai stuttered, "I... I don't know either, it's just that I suddenly thought of this date, and said it."

Gelisi frowned, silently thinking, now it's the 4th Month, Year 988 of the Holy Calendar, that means that Ah Dai should be 11 years old. However, Ah Dai's actions just now felt odd, he coldly said, "Boy, don't play with me."

Ah Dai curled in upon himself, "No... I wouldn't!"

"Come here," Gelisi waved Ah Dai over.

Ah Dai unwillingly walked to face Gelisi. Gelisi placed a hand on Ah Dai's shoulders, and quietly chanted a few words, a rush of warmth spread from Ah Dai's shoulders to fill his body. Initially, it felt quite comfortable, but after a while, the flow of heat got stronger and stronger and started to become unbearable. Ah Dai thought of struggling, but he found that he couldn't control his own body, the extremely hot flow of heat that seemed to be able to melt his insides continued to flow around in his body. Ah Dai's boned started to creak, and a sharp pain caused him to cry out.

"Ahhhhhhh.... Teacher, I can't take it anymore, spare me please, it hurts, it hurts!"

Gelisi frowned and raised a hand, a green light enfolded Ah Dai, cutting off the sounds he was making.

After a long while, after Ah Dai's body went a little limp, Gelisi finally loosened his hold and let out a long breath, saying to himself, "I didn't think that this silly boy would have such great bone foundations, suitable to be trained in both sorcery and alchemy. Not a waste of my Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill, this is even better, when that time comes..." At that, he suddenly stopped and carefully looked at Ah Dai. Shaking his head, Gelisi said, "Sadly, his head seems to have gone through some serious damage, even the effects of

the Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill don't seem to be able to clear up the dark energy that accumulated. However, it's still good that it won't affect my experiment."

The hot flow finally receded, Ah Dai felt weak and fell to the ground, he didn't know why Gelisi would treat him like this, tears involuntarily fell down his cheeks.

Gelisi hauled Ah Dai up with one hand, coldly saying, "No crying, I was trying to see if you have the capabilities to help me, do you understand? It's not beating you. Water that is gentle, gather in my hands, nourish the life before my eyes." A blue light emanated from Gelisi's hands, trickling into Ah Dai's body like a small stream. This was the most basic healing arts of the water class, Gelisi rarely used it, but in order to make sure that Ah Dai would have no dark memories, he couldn't not help him recover his strength.

Ah Dai could feel a fresh, cool sensation that felt like water flow from Gelisi's hands. Slowly, his strength started returning to him and the pain caused by the heat completely disappeared. He couldn't help but believe what Gelisi just said.

Gelisi placed Ah Dai on the bench and turned around. With his back facing Ah Dai, he said, "You must remember, only the strong can live better, the weak will only be bullied by others. Tears cannot solve problems."

Ah Dai felt as if he has heard Gelisi's words somewhere before, it

unexpectedly caused an echo of a thought in his mind. He wiped the tear streaks from his face, and timidly said, "Yes Teacher, I understand."

Gelisi nodded, "Good, then tell me, what do you like to eat most? What do you want to do most?"

Ah Dai honestly replied, "I love eating mantou the most, and... and chicken drumsticks. What I want to do most? I.... I don't know either."

Gelisi scolded in his heart, truly such a silly boy, but this is also good, it is better for his own future plans. "Okay then, from now on, you will keep following me, I guarantee that you will be able to be full everyday. If you leave on your own, remember the table that day? That will be your end."

Gelisi's threat didn't seem to work on Ah Dai, he blankly replied, "As long as you allow me to eat till I am full, why would I run away? But... but?"

"But what?" Gelisi abruptly turned around.

Ah Dai looked at Gelisi's aged appearance, and mumbled, "But... if you die, what would I eat?" He clearly remembered that Ya Tou once said that her grandma died of old age, after her grandma die, then only did Ya Tou end up asking for food in the streets.

At Ah Dai's words, Gelisi started shaking from anger, he raised his hand a few times, but ended up lowering it each time. At the thought of his grand plans, he decided, tolerate! He unhappily replied, "Don't worry, even if you die, I won't die. Let's go, I'll take you to to get some food."

"Okay! Teacher, you are really so great!"

"Humph! How can you understand my greatness?"

Two days later, after Gelisi felt that Ah Dai's body was much better, they left Ninuo City. Today's weather was abnormally sunny, seemingly indicating that Ah Dai would be entering a new phase in life.

"Teacher, can I come back again next time?" Ah Dai gazed at the town behind him, a town that he lived in for more than 10 years.

Gelise looked at Ah Dai, "Perhaps, if you have the chance next time. Why? Are you concerned about anything else?"

Ah Dai shook his head, "No, nothing." This was the first time he lied to Gelisi, actually, he was thinking in his heart, Ya Tou will come to look for him in the future. However, he didn't voice it. Although Gelisi treated him well these few days, allowing him to eat till he was full each meal, even letting him try delicious food he never had the chance to taste last time, but Ah Dai vaguely felt that compared to Uncle Li, this Teacher Gelisi seemed more dangerous.

Gelisi didn't bother too much about what Ah Dai said, leading him forward.

After walking for more than an hour, they reached the port not far from Ninuo City. Ah Dai had been there a few times, he likes the ocean, the feel of something unfolding on a grand scale. Gazing at the horizon, listening to the sound of the waves lapping on the reefs, Ah Dai couldn't help but stand still.

"Hurry up, we must catch this ship." Gelisi turned around to tell Ah Dai who was staring at the sea.

Ah Dai was stunned, "Ship? Teacher, are you saying we are taking a ship?" His voiced sounded a little excited, who know how many times have he imagined himself being a fisherfolk, sitting in a wooden boat, floating on the ocean, that feeling is one that Ah Dai looked forward to.

"Yes, we are going to Valian Province, a ship is much faster." Gelisi lightly replied.

"That's amazing, that's great, I am about to go on a ship!" Ah Dai excitedly jumped around.

Gelisi frowned, "Keep calm, if you want to go on a ship, walk faster."

The two of them quickly walked to the harbor, when Ah Dai saw the enormous passenger ship that was more than 100 meters long and 20 meters wide, his jaw dropped, dazedly saying, "This... this is the ship we will be taking? It's huge!" Those fishermen boats were nothing compared to the large white ship in front of him.

Gelisi humphed, "Is it large? I still think it's small, time to get onto the ship."

Valian Province : actual pronunciation - Waliang

| To Be Translated

Chapter 003: Sorcery 101, Part 2

Translated by: Naervan

Edited By: darklord5555

Also some minor fixes from: JerryDaBaws

For solely this chapter, this part is short, with only ~1300 chapters, but the next part which is the final part for this chapter will be longer.

Please do vote, chapters in parts possibly daily (Might end on a cliffy mind you.)

Or, a complete long chapter every few days.

Vote here!

Enjoy!

Chapter 3, Sorcery 101, part 2!

Changes from the previous translator: Gelisi > Gliss

Through the broad boarding plank, Ah Dai followed up Gliss and boarded this so called Worship God boat. Gliss rented the upper room of the ship, spacious enough for two people. Gliss felt great discomfort all over his body, he told Ah Dai that the main reason he disliked ships was mainly because he gets seasick. If he wasn't in a rush, mainly because he wanted to head back as early as possible to prepare for his plan, he would have never chosen to go by ship.

Ah Dai excitedly walked inside the ship, looking out through the glass windows from time to time. After a short while, a broad canvas sail was raised on a tall and sturdy beam. the ship started to move slowly, gradually increasing its speed. as there were glaciers in this deap sea, this Worship God travel ship started it's voyage close to the shoreline. After reaching the warmer waters, only then did the ship dare to venture in the deeper parts of the sea to reach faster speed.

"It's moving, it's moving, teacher, the ship moved!"

Gliss grabbed Ah Dai and pulled him in front of him, with a glare, he asked him: "Do you remember what i taught you yesterday?"

Ah Dai blinked his eyes and said with some shame: "Forgot it". In the past two days, Gliss has always been teaching Ah Dai to learn some alchemy related knowledge, but sadly, Ah Dai's brain processing speed was way too slow. he can't even remember the simplest alchemical terminology.

"I knew you forgot it. Nevermind, I know just by looking at you that you can't remember anything, go take a lotus pose on the bed."

Ah Dai responded with a sound, and sat down per the instructions of Gliss. Gliss stood next to him, saying with a low voice : "Alchemical terms can await until we return to my place before you can delve further into the subject. During our time on this ship, i will assist

you in feeling magic. this so called magic is in fact submerging you own consciousness within the elements and letting you soul communicate with the elements nurtured by the Heavens and the Earth, thus allowing you to use your awareness to move the elementals as you wish. I don't expect you to understand this right now, in a moment, i will thread some of my own own magic into your body, you simply need to close your eyes and feel, tell me what you felt afterwards."

Ah Dai nodded his head and closed his eyes.

Gliss said: "I require of you, at the very least, to learn the simple fireball and flames within three months, otherwise, no food for you. Okay, now gather your thoughts and use your heart to feel the energy i am transmitting to you." After speaking, he extended his right hand, and pressed on Ah Dai's shoulders, then proceeded to chant a few magical incantations/phrases.

Ah Dai felt his shoulders warming up, and thought of the pain he endured within the restaurant, his whole body shook.

"Get rid of all distracting thoughts." Gliss said with a soft voice.

The heat flowed from his shoulders into his body, but it showed no signs of worsening, only it circulated within his body. Ah Dai puts his worries away, and due to the lack of distracting thoughts within his head, he fell asleep in the comfort of the heat created by Gliss's magic.

Gliss originally thought that Ah Dai was in a deep trance feeling the magic elements around them, but half a day later, he almost never felt any movement from Ah Dai This method of passing one's own magic force to another person is very exhausting due to the fact there is no way to move the elements around them for usage, so even someone on Gliss's level felt weariness. he slowly retracted his right hand and asked: "What did you see? Ah Dai. Ah Dai… ah, you brat, you actually fell asleep, completely wasting all my hard efforts, are you trying to infuriate me to death?"

A small water ball exploded on Ah Dai's face, causing him to awaken from his sweet dreams with a small shiver, "Snow, It's snowing."

[Jerry: so cute :3]

Gliss angrily smacked Ah Dai on on his head and said: "Snowing your head, what did i just ask of you? But what did you do instead?

Ah Dai just realized where he was, and thought of what just happened. He lowered his head and muttered: "Teacher, sorry, just then… just then it was too comfortable, so i fell asleep"

Gliss barely suppressed his anger within himself, and said coldly: Tell me, what did you just see? Don't say you don't know, if you really don't know, then your dinner is gone."

Once the issue of food was mention Once the issue of food was mentioned, Ah Dai immediately became more attentive, scratched his

own head and thought : “ but I really didn’t see anything! How do I answer.” Ah Dai thought for a bit and decided to tell the wonderful dream he just had, and see if he can pass with that. After organizing his thoughts, he looked at the serious faced Gliss and said : “I… I felt just then my whole body heat up, then i became confused. afterwards, i saw a lot of small kids that came to play with me. they all had small red Mantous in their hands, trying to give it to me, I took and took, but no matter what i tried, I couldn’t accept them. I also wanted to give them something, but i didn’t have anything to give, so i could only let it be. Then you woke me up.”

Gliss was shocked by what he just heard, how could he not understand that what Ah Dai described was a dream. Although Ah Dai slept, but from his description, it actually was related to fire elements. those kids who were playing with him was all part of his dream, but those small red mantou were definitely fire elemental power! Why would the fire elements be attracted toward him? Unless he was born with a pure fire aptitude body, but he wasn’t. When he was tested before, the results were clear. Thinking back, even when Gliss himself studied fire element magic, he could only meagerly feel the presence of the fire elements around him

Ah Dai uneasily looked at Gliss, wondering whether his lie to use his dream to replace his perception will allow him to get a meal.

Gliss extended his right hand and said: “Follow my lead and chant this: Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! please bestow upon me your warm strength, become a ball, appear in my hand.” Puchi! A 10 centimeters wide fireball appeared above Gliss’s hand, causing the surrounding air to suddenly heat up.

Although Ah Dai doesn’t understand what Gliss meant, but he still remembered the part belonging to incantation, so he followed along and said: “Follow… Ah, I don’t need to repeat this part right. Fire elements Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! Please bestow upon me your warm strength, become a ball, appear in my hand.” Just as he finished saying the chant, Ah Dai suddenly felt something around him suddenly rush towards the center of his palm, Puchi! His hand flashed, and a small fireball, only one centimeter in diameter, appeared above his palm. it gave Ah Dai a small fright, he lept in fear of burning himself with the fire. As soon as he lost his concentration, the fireball instantly disappeared.

Related

Chapter 003: Sorcery 101, Part 3

Darklord5555 here, newest editor and i am currently helping out with The kind death god. The poll's results are out (http://strawpoll.me/6498444/r). it seems that from now on we will be posting complete chapters at longer intervals. Enjoy the last part of Chapter 3

Translated by: Naervan

Edited By: darklord5555

Gliss looked at Ah Dai with a stumped expression, only after quite a while did he recover from his stupor. A slight hint of murderous intent flashed within his eyes, he could have never thought that this idiotic boy in front of him had such a great natural aptitude for magic. When Gliss chanted this fireball spell for the first time, all he got as a result was some heat within the center of his palm. Even so, his master gave him a praise of the highest evaluation, but this average looking brat with below average intelligence actually succeeded in making a fireball, this is too unbelievable.

Ah Dai still didn't understand why would a fireball appear above his own hand, so he looked at his own palm with a dumb expression.The two just stared spacing off in the room like that.

Quite some time later, Gliss snuffed out the fireball on his own hand

and said: “Okay, let’s stop here for today, i need to rest for a bit, you go and memorize that spell. Your own fireball will float atop your hand so it won’t harm you, when you have time, just sit on the bed and think about those small red balls, understand?”

Ah Dai nodded his head, and tried his best to remember the spell chant he had just heard. With less interest to look at the sea for now, because to him, a barely 11 year old child, the interest of a fireball brings way exceeds that of the ocean.

Gliss stopped noticing Ah Dai and lay on his own bed meditating. Good thing that the weather was good for the day, the winds were nice and calm on the sea, the boat didn’t shake too much, so it lessened his seasickness symptoms. He thought that if another magician saw Ah Dai’s performance just then, they would definitely take Ah Dai as their disciple right away. Ah Dai’s aptitude is really too good, and he is getting older too, isn’t it time to consider letting Ah Dai study and inherit his own legacy. Gliss shook his head vigorously, no, how can he break his own plan just because of a brat with better than average talents? He only need to undergo the final experiment, and this child will die, no matter how much the child learns, what use is there?

Ah Dai sat on the bed sheets with his eyes closed, playing with those small red mantous with joy, Gliss suddenly woke him up.

“Master.”

“En, repeat the chant i taught you yesterday.”

“Okay, Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! please bestow, please bestow. ouch.” Ah Dai could only recall the first sentence.

Gliss took back his hand that just hit Ah Dai, this idiot’s memorization skills is really the worst, “I’ll tell you again for the last time, if you still cannot remember, then don’t even think about eating again before getting off this ship. Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! please bestow upon me your warm strength, become a ball, appear in my hand.”

Eating to Ah Dai is the best thing for threats, he tried his hardest to memorize each word, “ Warm strength….. Become a ball,….. Appear in my hand.” he worked extra hard efforts to memorize the part that he wasn’t familiar with, sitting on his bed, repeating to himself non-stop, again and again. This simple chant, a normal person only needs a small amount of time before remembering it completely, but Ah Dai used an entire half a day before he can barely promise that he won’t forget.

“Master, Teacher, I, I remembered it.” Ah Dai woke up Gliss by shaking him, giving no regards to the time.

Today’s waves were larger than the ones from yesterday, Gliss originally wanted to sleep a bit more to lessen the effects of his seasickness, and after finally falling asleep, he was woken up. He angrily said : “WHAT?”

Ah Dai was scared into taking a step backwards, stammered : “I, I memorized that spell chant.”

Gliss grunted once and said: “You’re one of the dumbest person i’ve met, actually using half a day to memorize a simple spell chant, what

is there to brag about, let's hear it."

(Naervan: Ah Dai's hard gathered confidence received a killing blow from Gliss, Ah Dai's confidence fainted, choose a new pokemon…)

The confidence that Ah Dai gathered with great difficulty suddenly received a heavy blow from Gliss and shattered into a billion pieces, he lowered his head and extended his right hand and chanted in a small voice: "Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! please bestow upon me your warm strength, become a ball, appear in my hand." Just as he finished the chant, he felt that unknown force gather again, also, compared to last time it was much stronger. Puchi, a diameter of at least 3 cm fireball appeared above his palm. Having experience from last time, Ah Dai kept calm this time and examined that red ball of flame carefully, the feeling was warm atop his hand, not blazing hot. Ah Dai brought the fireball in front of him and looked carefully, a slight lack of concentration on his part, the hair on his forehead caught on fire, "AH!" in his cry of alarm, Ah Dai's concentration broke completely, and the fireball on his hand disappeared, a smelly wave of burnt hair filled the cabin. Ah Dai beat his own hair for his life before finally smothering the fire out, his tragic half short black hair now missed yet another piece/section.

looking at Ah Dai's haggard appearance, Gliss couldn't help but let out a slight smile, "Water and fire are emotionless, if it's on your hand it's fine, but it doesn't mean that it is also harmless to other things. That was a real fireball, what you just did right now is called lighting yourself on fire. Next time be a little more careful. Open the door and let some fresh air in."

Ah Dai continuously panted, although the previous incident just then made him battered and exhausted, but the fireball's appearance gave his child's heart a great happiness. The first time that he truly felt respect towards Gliss, "Teach.., Teacher, sorry, i am too stupid. I can't even cast such a small magic perfectly."

Gliss inwardly cursed, then aren't i even more dumb. he have never seen anyone who can practice for just two days and cast a fireball that size. "Okay, no need to keep dawdling on this, just be more careful later on, and don't forget the spell chant."

Ah Dai nodded his head and said with determination: "I… I will definitely not forget, teach." The fireball was Ah Dai's first magic, and he already loved that little red fireball in the depth of his heart. he sat to the side and continued to repeat the already familiar spell chant to himself.

After two more days, the journey entered its last leg, Gliss did not take one step out of the room, fearing that the sight of the endless sea will make him vomit. All the food and drink was brought into the room by Ah Dai, every meal almost always have 90 percent of its content entering Ah Dai's stomach. Ah Dai was a very good and obedient kid, these past three days, other than determinedly practicing and memorizing the fireball spell, he would meditate on the bed. The so called hard work to replace talent, just in three days time, he already can control fireball to an astonishing degree, the fireball that appears has already reached a diameter of 5 centimeters. gliss would occasionally give him a few pointers on how to use the fireball, such as how to raise the ball's temperature, how to make the

fireball's size increase, how to control the fireball's flight in the air…etc. unexpectedly, the always dimwitted Ah Dai, learned these methods fairly quickly and was fluent in their use very quickly.

Ah Dai controlled the fireball to circle around his body, he thought to himself that even if teacher dies later, he won't have to fear the cold anymore, The warmth provided by the fireball felt really great. Good thing Gliss doesn't know mindreading magic in his repertoire, or else he would definitely be so angry that blood would come out of all 7 orifices on his face.

"Teacher, I want to go outside to take a breather." after a few days' worth of interacting with each others, Ah Dai is no longer that afraid of Gliss, after all, Gliss have yet to hit him, and he always let him eat until he was full during every meal.

Gliss glared at him and said : "Put up your fireball, just stay around the entrance, don't go too far."

Ah Dai excitedly replied : "Yes teacher."afterwards, he waved his hand to snuff out the fireball in the air, before excitedly opening the door to head outside. Standing on the outer walkway of the boat, Ah Dai held onto the rails and let the warm sunlight massage his skin, he deeply inhaled a breath of the moist sea air, and looked towards the horizon where the sea and the sky meets, sinking into revelment.

"Huh? what is that? " Just as the Ah Dai was sinking in to revelment, he discovered that there was a black dot approaching them at a fast pace, the black dot grew gradually bigger.

After a while, the black dot's silhouette can be seen, that was also a ship, the ship's body was black colored, the size on par with the boat they were on, there was only one layer of deck. the huge black flag had a huge white skull on it, underneath the white skull was two white cross bones. Ah Dai thought, why is that boat's color so different from their own?

He watched as the black ship approached theirs.

Related

Chapter 004: Attack of the Pirates, Part 1

Hi, the poll results were:
Post complete chapters instead of separating them into parts.
So, here you go!

P.S: Super tired, will edit and release another chapter of ILK TODAY if enough people mention a potato in their comment. heheheh.
Edit: Heheheh no one is noticing this part, good for me I can rest…

Translator: Naervon
Editor: JerryDaBaws

whew… this took a long time to translate and edit… enjoy! ~Jerry
==========

Chapter 4 (up)
Attack of the Pirates

Ah Dai scratched his head. This word, pirate, did not have any significant meaning to him, and when he encountered this unknown word, he decided to return to the room to ask Gliss. To him, this world has so many new and exciting things, so no matter what he met, he will always want to understand it first, even if he could not remember it later on.

“Teacher, Teacher, there is a huge ship outside, many people are yelling pirate! Pirate! What is a pirate?”
Ah Dai said excitedly while running into the room.
When Gliss heard this, he was shocked. He sat up from the bed and

said, “What are you saying? Pirates have come?”
Ah Dai nodded: “It’s a big black ship, their sale having a huge skull on it. All the people on our boat is yelling pirate, I don’t know if that’s a good or bad thing…

Gliss furrowed his brows, although he wasn’t afraid of pirates, he still does not wish to face them with his body being like this. He can only hope that the crewmen aboard the boat can deal with them.
[Jerry: I think he’s seasick. :p]

Ah dai continued asking his questions : “Teacher, what does pirate mean?”

Gliss answered without thinking: “Pirates are just people who rob other people’s things, they will sometimes kill people too.”

Hearing Gliss’ explanation, Ah Dai let out a breath of air, and said while smiling: “Then there is nothing to be afraid of, I don’t have anything for them to rob, but oh teacher, you must be careful, you have lots of amethyst and gold coins on you, they will probably rob those, you should hide them. Ahh where to hide them?” While saying this, Ah Dai started to look for hiding places around the room.

Hearing Ah Dai’s silly words, Gliss felt a rush on warmness in his chest, “Is he worrying about me?” Gliss thought to himself. How long has it been since someone has cared about him? Gliss shook his head in annoyance and grabbed Ah Dai, throwing him onto the bed in one swift motion, “Be quiet for me.”

Ah Dai did not understand why teacher would be so angry, so he sat there on the bed, not daring to make a sound.

“Ding Ding” sounds came non-stop, causing the big ship to tremor, and the standing Gliss had to hurriedly grab ahold of the wall next to him to be able to stand still, he also knows, this was probably the pirates coming to plunder the ship, because the sound just the was the sound of grappling hooks landing on the ship’s body. The noises outside caused Gliss to be even more annoyed, first was the movement of the ship, which caused his nausea to go up a level, and then his stomach acid started to make it’s way up to his throat. The feeling of being seasick, truly unbearable.

“All the people aboard the ship, hear up, we are pirates, so hurry up and take out all your valuables, otherwise don’t blame our weapons for needing blood!” A rough voice shouted from the outside.
Obviously, the pirates had began their plundering. Gliss knows, the pirates aren’t trustworthy people at all, even if you hand over the goods, the pirates still will not let anyone live. After all, what pirate wants to be hunted down by the navy. The best way to keep a secret is to kill all the witnesses. Sinking the ship is their usual style of doing things, not only does doing that save time, it also saves effort.
Gliss thought to himself: “Looks like, I must personally take care of this, because I don’t want to swim, that is impossible to even consider.”

Pushing open the door, Gliss walked outside, the sunlight reflecting off the surface of the ocean instantly caused him some dizzyness.
Gliss grabbed the rails of the ship and started dry vomiting.
A pair of small hands appeared behind Gliss’ back, softly patting his back, making him feel a lot better. After finishing the last mouthful of vomit, he turned around and saw Ah Dai standing there, worriedly

looking at him.

“Go back to the room, hurry!” Gliss shouted with some strictness.

Ah Dai hesitated, because even though Gliss’ tone was rough, there contained no coldness in his voice, but instead it sounded like he was caring for Ah Dai instead. Ah Dai didn’t move and just stared at gliss. One old, one young, keeping that staring contest going for some time. After the time it took for an incense stick to burn, Gliss finally snapped out of his trance. Gliss grabbed Ah Dai and shoved him back into the room, “You’re not allowed to come out of here.” After warning Ah Dai, he walked towards the noisy area.

This group of pirates were obviously outlaws, every single one of them possessing good fighting skills, they already finished grouping up all the passengers to the side of the ship. The passenger ship’s captain and the crewmen gathered in front of the main cabin, with over 20 deckhands having a scared silly expression from losing their heads to fear.

A pirate with an eyepatch and ten other pirates were in the middle of discussing something with the ship’s captain, Gliss used a wind attribute magic to eavesdrops their conversation.

“This elder brother, please, I am willing to give all the profits gained from this trip to you, just spare our ship please. I promise not to report this incident, so please?” The ship’s captain obviously knew how pirates usually took care of things, so he tried to tempt them.

The one eyed pirate laughed uproariously, “Profit? How much profit can you really earn, don’t try and play this trick on me, stay there and be honest, don’t interfere. If I, your grandfather, is in a good

mood, you all might live. But, if you want to play some tricks, then don't blame me for being merciless."

While saying that, he suddenly slashed the scimitar in his hand towards the side of the ship. There was a flash of light and a "boom" sound could be heard. The side of the ship suddenly had a gaping hole. Gliss' heart thumped, this pirate's skills aren't bad at all! Just from that last attack alone, he could tell that the pirate had DouQi, which only experts possessed. The edge of the blade didn't touch the ship, but still caused that degree of damage from the Qi projection alone.

The ship's captain and the crewmembers were frightened silly by the demonstration, and had no words to say.

The one eyed pirate shouted to his underlings: "Little ones, hurry it up! After we finish this plundering, we can go back to eat and drink to our heart's content!" All the pirates started cheering following that shout. The first layer of the ship's hold had already been opened, and all the passengers were held hostage on the deck, where they were being searched and plundered by the pirates. If any of the passengers resisted, they would instantly be beaten up by several pirates. Eventually, all the passengers succumed to fears, some even took the initiative to offer up their valuables for the sake of their own well-being.

Gliss knowns that now would be the time to make his move, this group of pirates are basically nobodies in his eyes, the only thing he feared was that they would sink the ship. Using wind type magic once more to spread his voice, "All of you, stop." A dark voice slammed into the ears of the pirates and passengers alike.

The pirate leader's expression turned cold, and looked in the direction of the voice, only seeing Gliss walking slowly down the stairs. He thought to himself, "I can't be this unfortunate right, did I really run into a magician?" He shouted: "Everyone stop!" The pirates, seeing their leader hesitate, stopped what they were doing and gathered by their leader, and all at once, several hundred eyes fell onto Gliss' body.

Gliss coughed twice, barely suppressing the feeling of dizziness, and said to the pirate leader: "Immediately leave this ship."

The pirates looked at each other, then turned to their leader for his decision. The one eyed pirate looked Gliss up and down, trying to decide in his heart. They have not had any decent raids lately, but after finally finding a fat piece of meat like this ship, how can he easily give it up? But, if the person standing there was really a magician, and by the looks of it, a high ranked magician to boot. He knows fully well how scary magicians are.

"Sir, are you a magician?" He cautiously asked.

Gliss didn't respond to his question, but instead replied coldly: "I will repeat once more, immediately leave this ship."

Without waiting for the one eyed pirate to respond, a pirate with a sturdy build couldn't hold back anymore and attacked Gliss with the club in his hand.

"You old thing, I think you've lived long enough!" he said while both hands holding on to the 50 pound heavy club, swinging it towards Gliss' head.

A moment later, Gliss had already casted wind type magic on himself, his body slightly moved, appearing one meter behind where he was, not afraid of that pirate's attack at all. With a huge boom, the pirate's club slammed into the ship's deck, causing the club to be stuck in the deck.

Gliss extended his right hand, flicking all five finger at the club, a wave of light green powder floated out and accurately falling onto the club.

"Pu Pu" noises sounded and the big pirate jumped from shock, because the club in his hand started to grow hot, he immediately released the club. To his surprise, he found that the steel made club was melting in front of his eyes, becoming a puddle of black colored iron water with a disgusting smell emanating from it. The guy backed up a few steps, pointed at Gliss and shouted: "Who are you!?"

The green powder that Gliss had just used was something he made, called gold melting dust, with the ability to melt almost any type of metal.

The pirate leader walked up a few steps, and threw the big pirate behind him, politely saying to Gliss: "Sir, you must be an alchemist, this one gives his courtesies."

Gliss extended his right hand and chanted some magic phrases, and the flames that had burned the table to ashes before Uncle Li appeared again in his palms, the black flames looked extremely strange under sunlight, giving that pirate leader a huge scare. The pirate leader looked at Gliss with a stupefied expression.

Gliss said in a cold tone: “Could it be you want me to repeat myself for the third time?”

Just as the pirate leader was at his wit’s end, a very thick and deep voice sounded, “And here I thought who was it blocking my path to fortune, so it was the famous Demonic Flame Gliss!”

Gliss’ heart thumped, this voice seemed to have came from every direction, making it impossible to distinguish where the voice came from. This was the fear of almost all magicians, who are most likely bad at close quarter combat. What surprised him even more was that the other person knew who he was. He rushed to chant more magic, and a shroud of black mist came out of his body, locking everything within a meter of him.

“Don’t be so tense, I wouldn’t dare to think of harming Master Gliss.” A black shadow from the pirate ship landed in front of Gliss.

Gliss saw that this person was wearing a similar attire as himself through the shroud of black mist, the other person also used a huge hooded cape that covered his entire body, but because the other person’s height was too tall, his sturdy body could be seen. But, Gliss also felt that there was no trace of magic elements in this person’s body, so the other shouldn’t be a magician, and the cape should only be an object used to hide his identity.

“Boss.” all the pirates greeted this person with respect.

The black cloaked person raided his hand and all the pirates quietened down, he looked at Gliss and said: “Master Gliss, you and I can both mind our own business, so why bother interfering with each others? How about this, wait until we finish our business here,

sink this ship, then you can board our ship. No matter where you want to go, we can help you get there safely. How about it?”
Gliss thought to himself, “You think I’m an idiot? If I board your ship then won’t I become trapped on your ship with my life in your hands? I’m not that stupid. “No need for the trouble, but still the same thing, get off this ship immediately.”

The black cloaked person took a step forward and said: “Since master is so stubborn, then you must give us brothers an explanation.” as he said this, his body flashed towards Gliss, the cloak fluttered in the air and several beams of black light shot towards Gliss. The speed was so fast that the people watching had their mouths gaped open in amazement. The shroud of black mist around Gliss didn’t seem to be able to slow the black light at all, and the light beams flashed towards his body.

Gliss’ magic might be strong, but he was only an alchemist. He never would’ve thought that the other person still dared to attack him even after he used the dark flames. In a very dangerous situation, he dare not hold back, rapidly taking out an object and flicking it out.

The dark beams hit Gliss’ body, but the black cloaked person was still shocked because he could feel that he didn’t hit anything solid. He said with surprise: “Illusion magic huh.”

==========

Evil cliffhanger laugh

Related

Chapter 004: Attack of the Pirates, Part 2

Here is chapter 4 of TKDG… I am not really talkative…

Translator: Naervon and a tiny bit from JerryDaBaws

Editor: Darklord5555

==========

Chapter 4: Pirate invasion!

Gliss typically doesn't use the Shadow Mirror Technique, but because of the black cloaked person was moving too fast, he didn't have any time to recite a magic incantation. The thing that he earlier threw out was something that he made by himself, the Shadow Mirror Scroll! Scrolls can, in a short time, release all the power stored within them. This Shadow Mirror Scroll is one of Gliss's life saving methods. Gliss's real body had earlier floated about 10 meters away.

The earlier circumstances caused Gliss to produce a cold sweat, if he had moved any slower, right now he fears that he would have already had a hollow space through his stomach. The opponent's attack also ignited his inner heart's fury. A slice through the air, Gliss made a

crack in the air in front of him, and a foot long black cane drifted out of it, the handle was neither metal nor wood, there was no way to tell what material it was made from, the tip of the cane had a one centimeter thick red jewel. Gliss held the cane in his hand and chanted a spell.

The black clothed man was very clear that if he allowed Gliss to finish his chant, then he won't be a match for gliss. So the moment that he saw Giss hold on to the cane, he started his second attack. Countless rays of black light flashed out of the cloak, becoming a huge energy net that hurtled towards Gliss.

Gliss didn't stop chanting his spell but grabbed something from the crack in space. Countless illusions of gliss appeared in the air, and the attack of the black clothed man lost it's target, causing most of the illusionary copies to be hit but none of the attacks hit the actual body.

"Go, Black flames soul purgatory." A disk of pitch black flame shot out towards the pirate crowd from the cane in Gliss's hand.

The black clothed man became alarmed instantly, he never would have thought that Gliss would be this difficult to deal with, the flames of darkness and flames mixed together can be created in such a huge amount. Although he isn't afraid of it himself, but his underlings would die from just touching that flame. Considering this, he couldn't hold back his true strength anymore, he shouted "Light of Hell." even more black light shot out, heading straight for

Gliss's attack, containing traces of evilness.

Gliss's black flames and the black clothed man's black light struck together, after sputting awhile, the deck underneath the attacks had a huge hole in it.

Gliss's body shook slightly, because from the last attack, he became sure of the other's identity, and at the same time, he understood why his black mist guard was useless against the other, and also why the other's Dou Qi attack can meet his black flames head on. But, he did not say it out loud, because he knew clearly that the black clothed man's identity was the biggest taboo, and as soon as he said it, the other side would definitely not let anyone on this ship leave alive. If he was under the best condition, Gliss would definitely not fear that man, but because he was sea sick this entire trip, his body's conditions were not good, and if he really fought with his life on the line, even though he had a bigger chance of winning, he would still walk away with heavy injuries.

Just as Gliss was hesitating on whether or not to continue the fight, a small fire ball came out of nowhere and flew towards the black cloaked man in a beautiful arc. The black clothed man was surprised, he had no time to recover from that last attack, so he could only use a ray of black light to defend against that fire ball.

Puchi, the fire ball broke apart, but a few sparks still landed on the black cloak, burning a few holes in it, and under the shining sun, traces of green can be seen under the cloak.

The black clothed man shivered inside, because although the power

of the fire ball wasn't big, but the fire element contained within was very balanced, that feeling was as serene as a spell cast by a monk, he does not want to go against someone from the church, furthermore, just Gliss alone was more than he can handle, if there was a monk aboard this ship also……., escaping should be the priority, he shouted "Let's go." and was the first to escape back onto the pirate ship. but how would he know that this balanced and serene magic was not something that only monks can cast, but there was another type of person, and that's someone who just learned magic.

Gliss did not pay attention to the panicking and escaping pirate, his sight was looking towards the third floor of the ship, because that location was exactly where his room was, and that precisely controlled fire ball….

"thank you, thank you for saving all the people aboard the ship." the ship captain ran in front of Gliss and thanked him from the bottom of his heart.

Gliss gave him a look and told him to make sure no one comes to bother him. After taking care of the captain, he headed for his room without turning his head. that 5 centimeter wide fireball was way too familiar to him.

The pirates who came in a impressive manner escaped with their tail between their legs, and after the sea returned to calm, the ship also returned to calm.

Gliss quickly returned to the third floor, and as he had expected, Ah Dai's thin body was curled on the floor. He pulled up Ah Dai's body and used magic to check the condition of the boy. he knew without even having to check that Ah Dai was suffering the effects of magic reversal. That black clothed man's Dou qi was very high, how can someone who only learned magic for three days like ahdai can go against that. Although the fireball can be casted, but it must be controlled by Ah Dai's mental force, so when the fireball was broken, his mental force also received a shake, and because Ah Dai doesn't know how to protect himself from magic reversal, he was knocked out by it. good thing that the black clothed man wasn't at his best either, or else Ah Dai might have become insane.

Gliss put Ah Dai's body back on the bed, because the thing that Ah Dai needed the most at the moment was rest. He looked at this silly face in front of him and suddenly had a slight trace of emotion running through his heart.

That night, after experiencing pirates, the ship finally reached its destination————Hill province harbor city Fes, Gliss lived on the borders between Hill province and Wa Liang province, and the distance from Fes to the border needed a three days journey.

When they left the ship, the ship's captain personally escorted them off the ship, and refunded the trip's cost to Gliss, who didn't bother arguing and just accepted. He brought Ah Dai into Fes city. This was very far from the extreme north area, and although it was night, it was still much warmer than Ni Nuo city.

Ahdai stretched lazily, still not recovered from the mental trauma earlier that day, and he still felt very tired. No matter how hard he tried to cast fireball, it wouldn't appear. "Teacher, where are we going now?"

Gliss answered without thinking too much: "We are finding a place to rest for the night, and tomorrow, we will take a horse carriage to where I told you before so don't ask too much."

Ah Dai stared blankly and after muttering for a while, he went back to sleep. After he woke up, he felt that his head was much clearer than before, and he can clearly remembered what had happened before, Gliss was guarding next to him, and after seeing him wake up, Gliss's furrowed brows smoothed out, he found out that this teacher of his seemed much more human than before, and seemed much friendlier than before, so he was not longer that afraid of him.

That night was very beautiful, the moonlight shone over everything, walking on the road, he didn't feel it was very dark, Gliss suddenly asked: " Ah Dai, during the day, why did you suddenly attack the black clothed person with a fireball?"

Ah Dai answered honestly : " I felt that he was a bad person, bad person was fighting was teacher, so of course i will help teacher. Didn't you say before that fireball has a certain level of attacking power?"

Gliss said coldly: "You overestimate your own ability, do you think that your tiny little fireball could help me? If that black clothed person was at his best, your mental force would have been

completely shattered by him, and you would have become a insane person. You Idiot, next time you attack, make sure to see the situation clearly first, the other person's power was clearly several times higher than you, so you using magic is next to dying faster."

Ah Dai nodded his head stupidly : "So magic also has a limit!"

Remembering the black clothed person during the day, Gliss couldn't help it and said: "That guy today was a dark demon, and he was a dark demon expert, they are born with natural resistance to the darkness element, so even my dark flames will be resisted by them to a certain degree, causing it not to show its true power, these dark demons are savage by nature, if his identity wasn't a taboo, i would have killed him much earlier. Remember, if you meet and green skinned people with spikes on their hands, run as far as you can, why am i saying these things to you?" Gliss felt that his head hurts, after staying together with this little idiot a few days, he felt that he has changed a big himself.

Ah Dai said happily: "Thank you teacher, i know now, if i meet green skinned people with spikes growing out of their hands run as far as i can."

Gliss made a noncommittal noise and pointed at a small hotel in front : "Lets stay there."

Just as the two walked into the hotel, Ah Dai made a Yi sound and said " Teacher look, that person is very strange! Why is he wearing that kind of clothes."

Gliss looked towards the direction that Ah Dai was pointing and saw a big man also walking towards the hotel, the big man was wearing a white robe with a golden hexagram on his chest, with long golden drapes hanging from his shoulders, and saintly airs around his entire person. Gliss's heart shivered, because this man was a monk from the holy church, and monks are his nemesis. Gliss's magic belonged to the darkness element, with darkness as his main and fire as support, and monks use light element magic with holy elements contained within, so they are the people that Gliss didn't want to see the most.

That monk at this moment had already walked in front of them, he lowered his head and looked at Ah Dai for a moment, then looked at gliss, smiled kindly and nodded his head slightly before entering the hotel.

Ah dai asked: "Teacher, he was smiling at us, his smile was warm. Why would he smile?"

Although he was just passing by, but the holy aura coming from the monk made Gliss feel very uncomfortable, so he humphed : "That guy is a monk from the holy church, should be a lower level or middle level person who offer sacrifices to god, let's go already, didn't you say you were hungry?"

"I am hungry! Teacher, what are we eating today?"

"What are we eating? let me think ……" After several days on the ship, Gliss couldn't eat or sleep normally, and really needed to replenish his body, but he did not notice that Ah Dai seemed to have lowered his caution towards him by a lot, and he also didn't care.

After eating, Gliss and Ah Dai returned to the room for a nice sleep.

The morning of the second day, Gliss felt that his body has recovered quite a bit, and Ah Dai's mental state was also much better, looks like the injury he received was completely healed. The child's recovery rate was really something!

Gliss opened the door and called a waiter, threw a silver coin and told him to go get a horse carriage.

"Teacher, are we really going to sit in a horse carriage?"

Gliss furrowed his brows and said: " Since when did you have so many questions, be quiet and go memorize your chants."

Ah Dai agreed and sat to the side, practicing the flames magic that gliss had just taught him, flames and fireballs were not the same, a fireball's attacking power might be stronger, but the area of attack was fairly small. Flames magic might have a longer incantation time and a slightly weaker attacking power, but the area of attack is much greater.

"[Fire element that fill the heaven and earth! Please grant me your burning power, With my name, Lend thy strength, appear, scorching flames." As he finished his chant, a small flame appeared above his hands, the flame wavered, and caused the temperature of the surrounding air to go up quite a bit.

"Teacher, teacher, i succeeded." Ahdai called out with excitement.

Gliss said with a bad temper : “What’s there to be excited about, it’s just the lowest level fire magic. Don’t forget the incantation. Go practice it a few more times, and don’t say the last word out loud when you are practicing, this type of low level magic, as long as you don’t complete the chant, you can stop at any moment. Even with your meager amount of magic force, after using it a few times, you won’t pass out.”

“Understand” Ahdai continued his repetitive task of memorization, after a while, the waiter came back and told them that the carriage was prepared.

Until he actually sat on the carriage, Ah Dai couldn’t believe that he would enjoy the feeling of riding on a horse carriage, the soft seat made him comfortable all over. He gazed around excitedly. Sitting on the horse carriage, he couldn’t help but think of yato, not knowing how yato was doing now. That old woman should be good to her right.

After three days of trip by carriage, Gliss and Ah Dai finally entered the border area of WaLiang province, on the road, Ah Dai saw many things that he had never seen before, although Gliss was impatient with the many questions, he still answered them all

Related

Chapter 005: The Fruit of Rebirth, Part 1

Translator: Naervon

Editor: JerryDaBaws

Sorry for whoever got an email notification/ update that this chapter was released, it was meant to be, but I realised the previous chapter was already called chapter 5? Chaos ensued and we finally figured out that the previous editor dun goofed and called the previous chap chapter 5, woops. (Not his fault, I was confused too.)

So, apparently chapters are now separated into (up) and (down) … The previous chapter was meant to be 4 (down), woops.

Bad news and good news…

Bad news: Releases are really slow atm.

Good news: College break is next week, and that means a few daily chapters! ~~Yeah! Unfortunately I won't be here to bug Naervon to translate…~~

Enjoy! ~Jerry

==========

Chapter 5 (up) The Fruit of Rebirth

Gliss instructed the coachman to stop in the middle of a forest just

northwest of Wa Liang province and paid the fee for the trip.

From looking at the lush forest around him, Gliss' mood became much lighter than before.

It is only when he turns here that he can feel that sense of satisfaction.

30 years ago, he came to this forest, lured by the many rare medicinal materials and minerals in this illusionary forest, but after living here for a long time, he became attached to it. These past thirty years, other than occasionally going out to buy some living supplies and some special items, he rarely left this place.

After thirty years of experience, he finally had the assurance to complete the dream from many years ago, the key to realizing it was this idiotic Ah Dai!

"Let's go, we have to walk the rest of the way." Gliss indifferently said.

Ah Dai had never seen such a boundless forest in his life, he said with excitement: "Teacher, so you live here? The air here is so fresh!"

Gliss ignored Ah Dai and walked by himself towards the forest, leaving Ah Dai hurrying to catch up.

This forest was called the illusionary forest mainly because it was impossible to tell directions once one was in the forest, and adding to the high terrain that the forest is on, the mist that shrouds the forest gives off a sense of mysteriousness.

Even the people who live close by will not venture far into the forest, fearing that there is no way to come back out again. Gliss, after coming here, placed many magic traps, and one of his most proud trap was the one that attracted mist.

After walking for half a day, Ah Dai was already hungry and tired, he clenched his teeth, but followed closely behind gliss, the surrounding white mist caused him to unable to see beyond three meters in any direction, so if he slightly falls behind, he will no longer be able to see Gliss' figure, the fear of that stimulated the potential deep inside his body, causing him to not fall behind regardless of what happened..

After entering the forest, Gliss did not speak a single word, and the surrounding dense fog gave him a very pleasant feeling, because the people who studied dark magics did not like the sunlight, and Gliss was no exception. Based on the traps that he had placed, he had no

need to go and tell the direction.

Ah Dai closely followed behind gliss, but suddenly, he was tripped by something under him, and face-planted into the ground. Gliss seemed to not notice and walked on forward just like before.

So Painful! Ah Dai forced his body to a sitting position, the fast paced walking all morning made him almost unable to keep conscious, waves of blackness assaulted his eyes, the feeling of dizziness circled his brain, he wanted to call out to Gliss, but no matter what he did, he couldn't make a sound, the white mist around him seemed to start swirling, and Ah Dai could no longer hold on, he fell back down and passed out.

The view in front of him gradually lightened up, all the objects cleared up, and a few small huts appeared in Gliss' vision.

"I've finally returned." Gliss looked at the huts in front of him, who would have thought, that this was the demon flame user gliss' research lab.

He bent his head and looked at Ah Dai under his armpit, and excitement rose once again in his body. Finally! He can start preparing for the final stages of his experiment. After many years of hard work, only needing one more year, he will see his dream to fruition.

After entering the forest, gliss ignored Ah Dai on purpose to see if Ah Dai would beg himself for help, but Ah Dai's determination shocked him, because Ah Dai actually managed to persist through most of the way before passing out, and with his young age, even if he had already ate the nine turn marrow washing pellet, to be able to reach this level is not easy. Gliss carried Ah Dai and walked into the southernmost hut, the hut was very empty, other than a single wooden bed and few chairs there was nothing else. Putting Ah Dai on the bed, Gliss himself sat in a chair. He reached out with one hand and drew a six cornered star in the air. Rays of red lighted up. He silently felt the magical element's movements.

After a long while, Gliss opened his eyes and smiled. Through the magic he just cast, he checked all the magic traps that he placed around this area. He felt that from the time that he has left, there was no one else who entered this area.

Gliss chanted an incantation and drew a line in the air, causing a crack to appear. A bamboo basket drifted out of this crack. This was something he had bought in the ninuo city. When he left to find a suitable target, because of the lack of destination, he kept walking north, and unwittingly reached ninuo city. He selected Ah Dai was because he felt that this was a kid who he could control. If the one who he picked does not cooperate wholeheartedly with his experiment, even the best inner quality would not suffice, but Ah Dai was very dim-witted and looked easy to fool, so he picked him.

Gliss carried the bamboo basket and walked to a patch of fruit forest not far from the hut, the fruits in that patch of forest was very varied, and it took gliss a very long time to figure out which was called what and which was safe to eat when he first arrived back then. He picked a few fruits that were very good at easing hunger and returned to the hut, eating a few himself in the process before sitting down and entering meditation.

When Ah Dai woke up at around evening, he felt that his entire body was sore, and the surroundings were very unfamiliar, giving him a sense of fear. He sat up immediately but gave a sigh of relieve when he saw the mediating gliss at the end of the bed. He did not bother Gliss but looked around instead. The surrounding was very sparse and he could see that there wasn't anything special, his sight was very quickly attracted by an empty chair next to gliss, or more specifically the fruit filled bamboo basket on the chair.

He touched the ground with his right foot, the heart piercing pain almost made Ah Dai cry out, but the attraction of the fruits were too big to resist, he strongly resisted the pain and limped over to the basket of fruit, looked at the evenly breathing gliss, then quietly raised the basket before walking back to the bed. He carefully counted the number of fruits, there were a total of 17 left, all with different colors, and very few similar-looking ones. The hunger in his stomach made Ah Dai throw caution to the wind and pick up a fruit before biting into it with vigor. The sweet fruit juice travelling down his throat, giving Ah Dai's entire body an undescribable sensation of coolness, even his feet did not feel that painful

anymore.

Ah Dai ate 8 fruits non-stop, and although he still wasn't full, he still kept most of the fruits untouched before carefully returning the basket to the original place. He opened the door carefully and walked out side, what entered Ah Dai's eyes was a huge swath of white fog, including the wooden hut he was in, there was a total of 3 huts there, the hut at the north was the biggest, looking to be at least 50-60 square meters. The area 30 meters around the structure was void of all plants and mist, but outside of that 30 meters, everything was covered by a dense fog, causing even the sunlight to be blocked, and since it was already evening, the sky had already darkened, the creepy surroundings was really teacher's home?

When Ah Dai walked out of the hug, Gliss opened his eyes. He had already stopped meditating the moment Ah Dai had gotten off the bed, he was clear on everything that Ah Dai had did, and looking at the 9 fruits left in front of him,Gliss' emotions heavily fluctuated in his heart.

He stood up, gave a gentle sigh and walked outside the hut and saw Ah Dai standing there staring off into space.

"Ah Dai."

"Teacher, you woke up. I ate a few of your fruits." Ah Dai lowered his head.

Gliss said with a warm tone: "That was prepared just for you. This is

teacher’s home and is also your home from now on.”

Ah Dai felt the warmth that gliss suddenly emanated and was scared witless, in his impression, he had never seen Gliss give such an expression. That hood that he had always wore was taken off at this moment, and that face full of wrinkles had a slight smile. “Teacher, what should i help you with?”

Gliss breathed deeply and said ”There isn’t anything for you to do today, but from tomorrow onwards, you can become my helper. Teacher needs to conduct some experiments.”

“Yes.”

The morning of the second day, before the skye had even lightened up, Ah Dai was woken up by Gliss. He got up and got dressed, Gliss took him to walk and reached the patch of forest where the fruits grew, and said “These fruits will be our food from now on, you must remember, when you are picking fruits, do not go far, or else you won’t be able to tell the direction. Do you understand?”

Ah Dai nodded his head, when he looked at that huge patch of fruits in front of him, he couldn’t be helped by recall that wonderful tasty and subconsciously, he started drooling.

Gliss casually plucked a few red fruit and gave it to Ah Dai, they were mize fruit, and after eating them, his body will be replenished with much needed nutrients. “These are also our main food source, you must remember their appearance clearly. This patch of forest

might have lots of fruits, but not all of them are safe to eat, and some contain dangerous poisons, so I will tell you slowly later. Your job today is to remember these fruits, do you understand?"

Ah Dai looked at the gourd shaped red fruit in his hand, and carefully memorized its specialties.

"Eat it, this will be your breakfast. We still have a lot of things to do."

After eating breakfast, Gliss took Ah Dai to the biggest hut in the north, and upon entering the hut, Ah Dai froze, this hut was very different from the hut he was in yesterday. There were all sorts of weird items in the room. The thing that made him feel the most baffled was the huge cabinets surrounding all the walls, with many drawers making up each cabinet. Each of the draws had a label on them, but to Ah Dai, these labels only contained unrecognizable symbols.

Gliss looked at these familiar experimenting equipment, and sighed :"From now on, you must remember all the names of the items here. I will test you the second day, if you don't remember, then you don't get a meal. Today, you must remember all the labels on the cabinets." Saying that, Gliss walked to the left of a cabinet and pointed on one of the top draws: "These two words are called salt-peter, and this is one of the ingredients we, as alchemists need the most. All these drawers here all store different types of objects."

"Saltpeter? Saltpeter… saltpeter…" Ah Dai repeated the name non-stop.

Gliss named all the labels from top to bottom and Ah Dai repeated after him, Gliss left him there and started to prepare for his own work.

Ah Dai's memory was really too terrible, after an entire day and asking gliss repeatedly for more than 30 times, he could barely memorize these label's names. From that day forth, Ah Dai started his memorization process. At the start, the things he remembered the day before he would forget on the second day. Although gliss said to starve him for a meal, but on the next meal, he would give him extra fruits. Ah Dai felt the care that Gliss was giving and put extra effort into memorizing these label's names. And gliss would always be busy with the experimenting equipment all day on the side, using magic here and there trying to combine stuff. At night, gliss did not let Ah Dai sleep but rather told him to meditate. At the start, Ah Dai was not very comfortable with it, and would often sleep when he was trying to memorize the label names, but after a while, Ah Dai's concentration became better and better, and meditation became his best sleep, one night's meditation would give him 100% better concentration the next day. Ah Dai's only regret was that since they had arrived here, Gliss had never even mentioned any magic incantations. When he was bored, he could only play around with a small fireball or flame magic to disperse the boredom, from time to time, when Gliss was happy, he would teach him a few simple letters.

==========

Related

Chapter 005: The Fruit of Rebirth, Part 2

So a heartwarming welcome to the newest addition to our team KuroNeko (FINALLY A NEW TRANSLATOR)
*Clap**Clap**Clap* times infinity

*edit: Hi all xD KuroNeko here >w< it's my first time translating so please bear with me (other translators & editors included :b) if there's anything that sounds weird/wrong/mistakes, just mention it in the comments ^^ hope all of you enjoy! *

And now another chapter of TKDG

Translated by KuroNeko and Naevron

Edited by darklord5555

Chapter 5 (down) The fruit of rebirth

Three months later, after Ah Dai's incessant efforts, he finally managed to memorise all of the labels, as well as all of the fruit names within the fruit forest. Although he was slow in memorising, but when he completely memorised an item, he would not forget it again. No matter what label name Gliss mentioned, he could always find the corresponding cabinet immediately.

"Okay, from today onwards, you have officially become my apprentice and you will help me with my experiments." Gliss lightly said.

“Yes teacher.” The past three months, Gliss had treated Ah Dai with an indifferent attitude, all of the housework was done by Ah Dai. Apart from meditating at night, Gliss spent all of his time in his research lab.

Gliss stared at the small cauldron in front of him and muttered, “One small piece of saltpeter, 37.8 grams of Yin Ding, 3.75 grams of skywind flower. Hurry up.”

“Yes teacher.” Ah Dai quickly passed Gliss all the items that he required. Gliss placed them into the small cauldron and continued speaking, “37.8 grams of red cotton, a bowl of clear water, faster.”

After receiving the items from Ah Dai, he placed them all into the cauldron. Gliss glanced at Ah Dai and instructed, “Use your flame spell under the cauldron to increase temperature. Don’t stop until I instruct you to.”

“Yes teacher. Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! Please bestow upon me your blazing strength, in my name, by thy power, searing flame appear.” With a pop sound, a streak of red flame tinged with green appeared above Ah Dai’s hand, he carefully extended his hand underneath the cauldron with concentration, carefully controlling the size of the flames.

Seeing that faintly green flames, Gliss couldn’t help but stare blankly. Ah Dai’s flames had already reach the levels of a junior sorcerer, and it’s only been 3 months! He never thought that a

completely idiotic brat would advance this quickly in magic!

But what shocked Gliss even more was what followed. He had originally thought that Ah dai could keep the flames going for 10 mins at the most. But only after 20 minutes have passed by and the cauldron nearly drying, did Ah Dai's forehead become drenched in sweat. The fact that he could endure for so long was not something that Gliss had expected, and a killing intent flashed in Gliss's eyes once more. He thought inside, if he taught this brat properly, this brat might even surpass himself in less than 10 years.

"Okay, that's enough, you can extinguish the flames now and go fetch some clean water, also, bring a 37.8 g of crystal powder."

"Yes, teacher." Ah Dai let out the breath he had been holding. The lengthy session of keeping the flames going gave him a set of nausea, and naturally, he did not understand that this was the cause of magic exhaustion. Keeping a flame going for around 20 minutes was his limit at the moment. Ah Dai wiped the sweat off of his forehead quickly before going to fetch the stuff that Gliss wanted.

Gliss had already replaced Ah Dai's job of heating the cauldron with his own black flames, and the few materials inside the cauldron had melted into a faintly green paste. Gliss grabbed a handful of crystal powder from the container in Ah Dai's hands and scattered it evenly across the mixture inside the small cauldron. With a small "Puchi", a gout of green flame roared up towards the sky from inside the cauldron. Once the flames died down, a waft of fragrant odor floated out and filled the room.

After staying with Gliss for about 3 months, Ah Dai had gotten used to this type of phenomenon a long time ago and was no longer shocked by them, so he stood at the side and observed everything with a well-behaved expression. The matter inside the cauldron had already congealed into a mass of green. Gliss wrinkled his forehead and sighed: “This won’t do. Looks like this can’t be complete without the fragrant grass.”

Ah Dai knew what fragrant grass was, and there was a drawer full of it in one of the cabinets, but the grass inside was already used up. Gliss covered up the little cauldron before turning and saying to Ah Dai: “Ah Dai, I need to leave for a while to go and gather some more fragrant grass, which is exclusively found in Hua Sheng Empire, what a pain. During the time that I am gone, you need to stay here and guard everything, understand?”

Hearing that Gliss needed to go, Ah Dai suddenly felt a onset of emptiness inside, he asked: “Teacher, how long will you be gone?”

Gliss said: “Fast, around a month, and slow will be around 2 months. If you get hungry, just eat the fruits inside the forest, and if you get thirsty, there is a spring behind the rooms. Remember, never go too deep inside the forest of illusion, or else you will starve to death if you get lost, understand?”

Ah Dai nodded his head and said: “Teacher, please return quickly.”

Gliss felt a rush of warmth inside, the past three month, no matter how he treated Ah Dai, the kid would accept every order gladly, like immediately going on errands and fetching things. Towards the end, sometimes Gliss only needed to extend his hand and Ah Dai would know what he wanted. Where could one find such an obedient disciple! But, for the sake of his final experiment, he could not help but…….. Gliss shook his head with some effort and ditched his kind thoughts, saying in a cold voice: "Okay, that's enough. Go and meditate, I will leave tomorrow morning."

"Yes, teacher." Ah Dai was tired after keeping the flames going for a long time, and he returned by himself to his room to begin meditation.

The morning of the second day, Gliss packed the bare necessities before getting ready to leave.

"Ah Dai, don't forget the words i said yesterday. Oh yes, here take this." Gliss took out a book and handed it over to Ah Dai.

Ah Dai stared blankly at it for a second before responding: "Teacher, what is this?"

Gliss looked at him with a complicated eye, :" This is my experiment journal, there are three sections in it. It has methods on making medicine, differentiating different poisons and how to refine weapons. When you get bored, you can read this. Most of the words in it are the names of the labels you memorized, so you shouldn't have too much difficulty in understanding it. But, you must remember, reading only means reading, you must never go alone and experiment in the lab, understand? How much you can understand

all depends on you."

Ah Dai held the leather bound journal, his eyes started to become slightly red. He had never thought that there will be one day that he could read and understand a book, he said earnestly: "Thank you, Teacher, you must return quickly, because Ah Dai will miss you."

Gliss stared blankly for a second before turning his head and replying coldly: " What idiotic thoughts, I don't need your feelings, go study the book carefully because I will test you when i get back, understand?" After saying that, Gliss left without looking back.

Ah Dai held the journal tightly in his arms, tears streaming down his cheeks. In his heart, there is now another person who was more important than steamed buns.

After Gliss left, apart from meditating and eating, Ah Dai spent every single day memorising the contents of the journal, in order not to disappoint his teacher. The language that Gliss used in the journal was easy to understand and coupled with the fact that they had lived together for so long, Ah Dai was able to grasp most of the content in the journal.The more he read, the more attracted he was to the mysteries within. However, he was a very obedient child, no matter how curious he was, he would never enter the research room and try experiments himself.

This day, he woke up early and started reading the journal. It was more than a month since Gliss left, Ah Dai's constant efforts during this time had finally paid off. He had actually managed to memorise all of the content of the journal. As he was reading to the end of the

journal, he realised that the last page of the journal seemed to have be torn out. He did not think too much into it, and thought that Gliss may have feared that he was unable to understand the profound content of it, thus tearing it out.

Memorising the content of the journal once more, Ah Dai walked into the fruit forest, ready to pick his three meals of the day. Just as he stepped into the fruit forest, he suddenly caught a whiff of a strong, rich fragrance. He discerned the direction where the fragrance came from and involuntarily, started walking towards it. This fruit forest cannot be any more familiar to Ah Dai, even if he closed his eyes, he could still find his way within.

The fragrance originated from the depths of the forest, that aroma constantly stimulated Ah Dai's sense of smell. How fragrant! He wondered what object it was.

Eventually, after continuously searching, Ah Dai finally found the origin of the fragrance. It was a small fire-red tree. This tree was not here last time, and it seemed that it had grown out of nowhere within a night. The small tree was bare of leaves, and its fire-red trunk was crystal clear like jewels. At its very top, there was milky white fruit that glistened as though there were countless lights shining at it. As waves of aroma floated out from the fruit, Ah Dai crouched down, peering intensely at the fruit, trying to recall the plants mentioned in the journal. However, even after he had recalled everything within the journal, he still could not find the right answer.

What exactly is this fruit? It smells so fragrant! Ah Dai carefully used his finger to gently touch the fruit. At his touch, the milky white fruit suddenly dropped down from the small tree, giving Ah Dai a fright. Subconsciously, he caught the fruit within his hand and a warm feeling came out from the fruit, the fresh scent had also become stronger. After the fruit had dropped, the little red tree had unexpectedly started to wither. In just a few seconds, the little red tree had already shriveled beneath the ground.

Although Ah Dai did not know what the fruit was, the hunger had caused him to bring the fruit to his face. Looking closely at it, Ah Dai thought, 'Such a fragrant fruit couldn't possibly be poisonous, right?' He could no longer control the hunger pangs in his stomach, and hungrily took a bite out of the fruit. A refreshing gush of juice flowed into his mouth, the juice did not have any flavor and Ah Dai uncontrollably swallowed it. The refreshing sensation penetrated his heart, it felt so comfortable! In just a few bites, the milky white fruit had already been finished off by him.

Just as Ah Dai was about to get up and return, his lower abdomen suddenly felt a chill. The cold spread quickly throughout his body and instantly seeped into his meridians. He could not stop shivering, and the cold circulating his body prevented him from even being able to stand. Collapsing onto the ground, Ah Dai's nerves were constantly pierced by the freezing cold that seemed as though it has already penetrated the bone marrow. 'It's all over, all over, just because of a moment of hunger, it seems that I'm going to be frozen to death,' Ah Dai thought.

A layer of frost slowly appeared over Ah Dai's skin, and everything in front of his eyes started to become fuzzy. Suddenly, amidst the blur, he realised that there was a red colored radiance that was constantly glowing at the spot where the little red tree had withered. As his body shivered, he unintentionally grabbed out and a soft red colored fruit was caught in his hands. The steaming heat from the fruit was transferred to Ah Dai's palm, and his frozen hand instantly became much more nimble. Filled with delight, he could no longer be bothered whether this fruit was poisonous and stuffed the entire red fruit into his mouth while he could still move.

Scalding heat flowed down his throat, and the instant it entered his lower abdomen, the previous freezing sensation had abated.

Just as Ah Dai let go of the breath he was holding, an intense pain came from his abdomen. One cold and one hot, the two streams of energy had suddenly decided to separate into two factions, incessantly attacking each other inside Ah Dai's internal organs, seemingly wanting to tear everything into shreds.

"AH—" Ah Dai, groaning with constant pain, started rolling around on the floor. However, within this boundless illusionary forest, there was no one to save him. As cold sweat dripped endlessly, Ah Dai's face turned one moment red, and the other moment white. Under the ferocity of the two streams of hot and cold energy, his body spasmed unceasingly. Actually, what Ah Dai did not know was that, if Gliss had not given him the Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill initially, with his original bruised body, he would have already died when the powerful energy burst into his meridians.

Even if Gliss was there personally, he still would not have been able to identify the two fruits that Ah Dai had eaten. Of course, with Gliss' cautiousness, he would also not have allowed Ah Dai to eat any unknown fruits. The two fruits were formed after absorbing the essence of heaven and earth, and would only mature after thousands of years. Its name is the Fruit of Rebirth. In order to achieve the greatest effect, the red and the white fruit must be confused together, however its medicinal strength is very overbearing. Once all the medicinal effect contained within has been absorbed, the person who consumed them will feel that his vitality continue to expand and his life will seem to be endless. Thus, this is a priceless treasure to the priests of the Holy Church. The greatest benefit of the Fruit of Rebirth is that it can enable the body to produce vital energy that weakens any damage caused by dark energy.

Under a prolonged period of pestering by the two energies, beads of blood had started to seep through Ah Dai's skin. The long duration spent enduring the severe pain caused Ah Dai to helplessly spit out a mouthful of blood. When the blood landed on the plants nearby, one side of the plant would immediately wither, while the other side would start to freeze.

When night has fallen, Ah Dai finally managed to combine the two energies within his body, forming a warm energy that was constantly in motion.

Ah Dai let out a deep sigh, his clothes had long been soaked thoroughly, and the improved feeling left his body weak. He was surprised to discover that his skin was actually dimly radiating white colored light. A warm gust of air that passed by gave him a

comfortable feeling. As he laid on the ground gazing at the sky, he was unusually sober and the things he memorised from the journal flashed through his mind. Deep within, Ah Dai thought to himself, “It’s finally over, I haven’t died yet, right? In the future, I must not eat unknown food so casually.”

Related

Chapter 006: Another Parting, Part 1

Second TKDG chapter for today

Translated by KuroNeko

Edited by darklord5555

Chapter 6: Another Parting (1)

After a long while, he steadied himself up. The glow on his body has already faded and the warm air that scattered through his meridians cannot be felt anymore. Other than the stickiness on his body that left him uncomfortable, everything else seemed completely normal. He dragged his exhausted body back to the wooden hut, used some spring water to soak his dirty clothes, then rinsed himself and went to sleep.

The next day morning, Ah Dai crawled out of bed, feeling that his vitality has already recovered to its best state. Last night, ever since Gliss left, was the only night when he did not meditate. He had already memorized all of the notes, and decided to meditate to pass time. Ah Dai has become very interested in meditation these days. He was already able to release a green flame, and the fireball was also around ten centimeters large. What he did not know was that with his current magic force, he had already met the standards of a

junior sorcerer.

Gliss, after leaving for two months, finally returned to the illusionary forest. The travel did not go very smoothly, and he had to spend a lot of time before he could find enough fragrant grass. As he saw the wooden hut, everything around was silent, and nothing has changed.

“Ah Dai, Ah Dai—“ Gliss called out. Not knowing why himself, but through his trip, he would often think of this clumsy little fool.

“Ah! Teacher, you finally returned.” Ah Dai quickly ran out the room before violently throwing himself into Gliss’ arms, his joy could not be expressed. Gliss look at Ah Dai thoroughly, after two months, Ah Dai’s body seemed to become much stronger, with a rosy skin, even though he still behaved in a silly manner, but he was much more pleasing to the eye. Gliss tried his best to control his overwhelming emotions and instructed Ah Dai, “I am tired, go pick some fruits for me to eat. I want to rest awhile first.”

“Sure.” Ah Dai happily replied, then ran back to the hut to grab a basket before running to the fruit trees.

When he came back to the hut, he found that there was a sack on the chair, Gliss was resting beside it. “Teacher, here are the fruits. Is that the fragrant grass you have collected? Let me put them into the drawer.” Gliss opened his eyes and looked at Ah Dai, a bit amazed. “this kid… when did you become smarter? This is not fragrant grass,

but it is meant for you."

Ah Dai hesitated, pointing to his nose and asked, "For me?"

Gliss nodded, "Open it and see."

"Thank you teacher," Ah Dai excitedly hugged the heavy parcels in his arms. This was his first time receiving gifts, the excitement in his heart caused him to tremble uncontrollably. Slowly opening the parcel, the sight presented in front of his eyes left him stunned. The parcel may not have contained precious items, or any unique objects, but to Ah Dai, there was nothing else that made him any happier. Because, within the parcel, was actually a pile of white steamed buns. Although the buns had gotten cold, but they were not hard. Ah Dai smelled the fragrance of the buns, while two lines of tears flowed down his cheeks. Looking at Gliss, he said, "Teacher, thank you, thank you so much."

Gliss, acting as though nothing happened, continued to eat his fruit and replied, "What's there to thank, it's just some inexpensive buns. At first I wanted to bring you some chicken drumsticks, but those spoil easily, so I didn't bring them. Ah Dai, how is the journal that I gave you?"

Ah Dai retrieved the well-kept journal from his chest and passed them to Gliss, "Teacher, I have memorized all of them."

Gliss was shocked. "All memorized? If you are lying, don't blame me for punishing you."

Ah Dai insisted, "Teacher, I didn't lie, I really memorized all of it.

You can just check."

"Okay then, let me ask you, what kind of metal can refine the best weapon?"

Ah Dai replied without hesitation, "In order to refine the best weapon, there are three conditions. Firstly, the materials used must be of good quality. The six attributes of materials are light, darkness, water, fire, earth and wind. Materials without attributes are low quality, while those that contain light and darkness attributes are the hardest to find, thus the weapons refined from them will be the most powerful. Materials with light attribute are Can Jin, Ming Yin_1, et cetera; materials with darkness attributes are Wu Gang Gang Mu_2… Secondly, to refine the best weapons, the temperature must be stable, the higher the temperature, the fewer the impurities within the weapon. The black flames you use are of the highest temperature, but unfortunately since it is a magic flame, it is unable to last for long periods of time, and therefore you can only refine smaller weapons. Lastly, in order to refine spirit weapons, the time and location are of importance. The same materials flame, under conditions, will refine weapons with differing qualities. For example, under the sun on a high terrain…"

Gliss was dumbfounded as he listened to Ah Dai listing out the conditions of refining weapons, without missing a word, from his journal. The astonishment in his heart simply cannot be expressed. With Ah Dai's memory, he needed to spend a long time before he

could memorize the journal with such accuracy!

"Okay, you can stop now, I believe that you have truly memorised it all. From tomorrow onwards, like before, you can continue to help me with my experiments. I need to rest now."

"Yes teacher." Ah Dai happily answered. Carrying the pile of steamed buns to his bed, he grabbed one and took a bite. He had not eaten his favourite buns in five months…

Early next day, Gliss continuously used his small cauldron and started refining. As Ah Dai has already memorized Gliss' journal, according to the materials Gliss used, he was able to predict the outcome, thus Gliss' refining process had also became an experimental process for Ah Dai. What confused Ah Dai was, Gliss had refined a bunch of mixed metals. The metals had different attributes, but were all precious. Ah Dai recalled from the notes, that no matter which metal it was, they could all make high quality weapons. As Gliss carefully stored the metal that he just refined, Ah Dai wondered what that metal would be used for.

After Ah Dai helped Gliss to refine the metal, Gliss went to his room to meditate, while Ah Dai stood at the door, practicing his fireball and flame skills.

"Huh? Where did this kid come from?" A joking voice sounded.

Ah Dai was shocked to discover that a strange person dressed in red had walked out of the mist. That person had an appearance very similar to Gliss, a big red cloak enveloped his body, hiding his facial

features. Holding a long staff, that person seemed to be inspecting him.

Ah Dai stepped back in fright, and questioned, “Who, who are you?”

The red cloaked person proudly declared, “Me? I am a great sorcerer.” As he was speaking, he extended out his skinny right hand, similar to Gliss’, muttered a few incantations and a huge purple fireball of around half a meter appeared in his hand. The blazing flame caused Ah Dai who was over ten meters away to still feel the searing heat. Looking at the tiny fireball in his own hand in comparison to the huge purple fireball of the red cloaked person, Ah Dai shamefully withdrew his own magic.

“Haha, how’s that, now you know what a great sorcerer is like? Hahahaha”

“Pfft, showing off in front of a little kid.” A black fireball of half a meter in size flew out from the hut, charging straight at the red cloaked person. The red cloaked person was shocked and took a step back shouting, the purple fireball in his hands flew to meet the black fireball. The fireball of the red cloaked person is of pure fire attribute magic, while the fireball flying out from the hut was Gliss’ darkness attribute combined with fire attribute magic. Based on attributes, the red cloaked person was at a disadvantage, but based on pure energy, his fireball was stronger.

Ah Dai felt his body becoming lighter and a breeze sent him ten meters away. Amidst the loud explosion, countless sparks covered the sky and the red cloaked person involuntarily took a step back.

He shouted, “Whoa, big brother, your younger brother came all the way to visit you, and this is how you treat me!”

Gliss walked out from the hut, and retorted,” You came to visit me? I think you came with bad intentions. Seeing your arrogant manner just makes me disgusted. Glee Song, if you have some business, say it now, I have nothing here to welcome you.”

Red cloaked Glee Song smiled bitterly, “Big brother, no matter what, I am still your actual brother, how can you treat me like this? Oh right, who is he?” He pointed to Ah Dai with his staff as he spoke.

Gliss snapped back, “He is my student. Why?”

Glee Song let out a smile. “I can’t believe that you will also accept students, this doesn’t seem like your style. The fireball that this kid just made seems to have reached the junior sorcerer standard already. Big bro, where did you get such a good successor, just give him to me. I still have no students! ”

Gliss coldly replied, “Don’t even think about it, this kid is really important to me. Apart from being my student, he has another important use.”

“Ah! Big bro, you, you can’t be…”

Gliss hmpf-ed, and said,“Let’s come in and talk. Ah Dai, you stand guard outside, don’t come in without my instructions.”

Ah Dai nodded, staring at Gliss and Glee Song entering the hut, wondering why he could not understand many of words that they

spoke. Is that red cloaked stranger really teacher's brother?

Inside the room.

"Big brother, could that kid be the one you were looking for to complete that last experiment?"

"Mind your words, okay?"

Glee Song sighed, "Big brother, you are so ruthless! No wonder you're worthy of being called a warlock. That kid's silly manner is actually quite lovable. Why do you have to…"

Gliss suddenly became irritated. "Stop nosing around in my business, if you have something to say, then quickly say it. If you're here just to spout nonsense, then get out!"

Glee Song did not seem to be angry with Gliss' words, and instead smiled. "Forget it, I couldn't be bothered with your business, it's just such a waste of talent! This time I came, is mainly on behalf of my lord to seek your help with something, I hope you can agree." As he spoke, he waved his staff, opening a spatial crack. He muttered some incantations and a sack flew out, landing on the floor. "This is the deposit my lord has given, he wants your experimental results." The sack opened, and inside, is actually full of diamond coins, amounting up to thousands.

Gliss, as though he did not see the sack, merely replied, "He wants my experimental results? Stop dreaming, I won't give it to anyone."

Glee Song sighed, "Big brother, what use do you have in keeping

those treasures? Especially your last experimental results, didn't you want to create it just to become famous? Then why keep it to yourself| In my opinion, you might as well be the same as me, and be…"

Interrupting Glee Song's words, Gliss angrily barked, "Stop giving me all this nonsense and take all of this useless stuff back. I meant it when I said I'm not selling."

Glee Song thought for a while before saying," Never mind then, since you are unwilling, there is no point in pleading. I will handle matters with my lord. However, that kid seems to be very talented in magic, you better consider it carefully. Sacrificing a life for an object, is it really worth it?"

Without hesitation, Gliss replied. "Yes. For this object, even sacrificing a thousand lives is still worth it."

"Since you said so, then I shan't persuade you further. Okay brother, take care of yourself, I'll be going. If you decide to change your mind, just use the old method to contact me." As he spoke finish, Glee Song walked towards the door.

"Wait." Gliss sat there, calling out to Glee Song, "My experiment may not be successful, if it succeeds, I will inform you. Take care of yourself too."

Glee Song stared deeply at Gliss, and walked out of the hut. Gliss sat there, without sending him off.

Glee Song walked out and looked at Ah Dai, sighing, "Little kid,

you best fend for yourself.” Chanting some incantations, the surrounding air became restless, and sent Ge Li Song flying into the mist.

Ah Dai stared blankly at Glee Song’s disappearing shadow, remaining silent.

Related

Chapter 006: Another Parting, Part 2

Translator: KuroNeko

Proofreader: Naervon

Editor: JerryDaBaws

Enjoy, another one coming shortly along with an ILK and DTW chapter (and a status update…) ~Jerry

Edit: Renaming and some fixing by darklord5555

Chapter 6: Another Parting (2)

“Ah Dai, faster, practice your flame skill, why are you foolishly standing there?”

“Okay. Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! Please bestow upon me your warm strength, become a ball…”

Another three months have passed, although Gliss did not teach,Ah Dai still managed to learn much alchemical knowledge from him. The Ah Dai now, unlike before, was not clueless about everything. In Gliss’ eyes, he has already become a qualified apprentice. It is precisely due to Ah Dai’s help, that all of Gliss’ preparations have gone on exceedingly smoothly, to the extent that it was faster than expected.

Due to the immense pain from eating the fruit of rebirth, Ah Dai did

not tell Gliss. He was afraid that Gliss would get angry after knowing. In Ah Dai's eyes, Gliss was definitely his most important person; it was Gliss who led him out of the dark Ninuo City, provided him food and clothes, and allowed him to learn all the new skills. Gliss, to Ah Dai, was like a benevolent guardian, and Ah Dai had nothing but respect and admiration for him. Deep within his heart, he had long treated Gliss as he were his own father.

As time passed, the struggle in Gliss' heart also became stronger. He understood that, in order to fulfill his aspiration, Ah Dai was the most crucial part, however, if the experiment succeeded, Ah Dai will inevitably lose his life. After such a long period of time together, Gliss had unknowingly begun to like this little foolish kid, thus causing him, a usually ruthless person, to hesitate.

However, the temptation of the experiment had finally made Gliss discard all other concerns; this aspiration to him was too important. It could be said, that his entire life of research would only be fulfilled through his, quite possibly the last, refinement. That was a phenomenon that only occurred once in a millennium! Even other master alchemists would not have this such an opportunity in their lifetimes. His desire won over his emotions, and Gliss decided that everything will proceed as usual. When that day arrived, he would start his last refinement.

This day, Gliss got Ah Dai close to him, remarking, "Ah Dai, you should have been here for around eight months?"

Ah Dai counted using his fingers, nodded and said, "Yeah teacher,

I've been here for eight months already."

"Tomorrow I have to leave, to find an extremely important material; you shall take care of this place as usual."

Ah Dai hesitated, crying out, "What? Teacher, you're leaving again!"

Gliss solemnly said, "I have to find this material, it concerns a very important experiment of mine. You need to look after this place, I estimate I'll be gone for around three months."

Ah Dai's heart was filled with unwillingness, "Teacher, teacher can't you bring me along?"

Gliss looked at Ah Dai's eyes which were full of hope, sighed in his heart, 'How could I bring you along? The reason why I'm leaving is to get away from you, in order to harden my heart and use you for the experiment.' Thinking about this, Gliss gnashed his teeth and said, "Okay, stop being such a child; it's not as if I won't be coming back."

Ah Dai choked out, "Teacher, teacher, you must faster come back! Ah Dai will miss you."

Gliss silently nodded, "Before I go, I will teach you how to use flame magic, you must practice it well. These eight months, your magic force has improved quite fast, and is enough to use this magic."

Usually when Gliss would teach him magic, Ah Dai will surely jump in excitement. However, today was different; his unwillingness to

see Gliss leave long surpassed his desire to learn magic.

Seeing that Ah Dai's eyes did not contain any sign of glee, Gliss was shocked. In this period of time, Ah Dai had once begged him many times to learn other types of magic, but he had never agreed. But now when he took the initiative to offer, why did Ah Dai not seem excited at all? Uncontrollably, he asked, "Why? Don't you want to learn?"

Ah Dai shook his head, and replied "No, I want to learn, but, I'd much rather you stay. Ah Dai wants to be with teacher."

Gliss felt warmth in his heart, his throat seemed blocked, and almost blurted out his agreement. For a long while, the pair of young and old silently faced each other.

"Ah Dai, teacher promises you, after I'm back, I won't leave again. Is it okay?" Gliss gently consoled. He was well aware, that if he stayed here any longer, he would not be able to harden his heart and use Ah Dai for his experiment. Therefore, he could only lie.

Ah Dai's big eyes instantly brightened, containing a glint which was not there in the past. "Really? Teacher. Then, then I'll wait for you to come back."

Gliss nodded, "Okay then, now I'll teach you a fire meteor spell. The basis for this magic is the fireball spell and the flame spell. You have to pay attention, anything that you don't understand, you must ask me today, okay?"

Nodding his head, Ah Dai concentrated on Gliss' explanation.

Fire meteor is actually a junior fire magic spell that consists of many fireballs striking enemies over a large area. The speciality of this magic is that it will accompany the magic user's magic force strength and release varying power. If Gliss were to use it, he could release a fire meteor containing his dark flames, which were very powerful, almost at the standard of a high sorcerer.

"Before using this fire meteor spell, you need to be able to combine the flame spell and fireball spell. You see, the flame spell you are using now can already release green flames tinged with blue. However, the fireball that you released is still red in color. This is not acceptable, therefore you need to…" After explaining for the whole early afternoon, Ah Dai finally managed to `remember most of the theory and instruction of the fire meteor spell. Scared that Ah Dai would forget, Gliss even wrote down the instruction of the fire meteor spell, such that Ah Dai was better able to practice it. Late afternoon, Ah Dai began to practice. Any questions that he had, he would go and consult Gliss. Gliss was unexpectedly gentle, patiently explaining to Ah Dai. At last, in the evening, Ah Dai was able to release the fire meteor magic, or more accurately, he was able to release countless sparks, their power barely able to burn through leaves. Gliss had told him that when he returned, he hoped to be able to see Ah Dai release green fire meteors that are at least one centimetre large.

The next day morning, before Ah Dai woke up, Gliss packed a few items and quietly left with mixed feelings. He needed to find a place to harden and calm his heart, in preparation for the final experiment.

After Gliss had left, Ah Dai felt extremely lonely. In comparison to the first time, he missed Gliss much more earnestly and he would often sit alone in front of the hut, staring blankly in the direction where Gliss had gone. The fire meteor spell was still very complicated to Ah Dai, and no matter how hard he practiced, the results were still minimal with barely any trace of power.

Two months passed by in a flash. This day, Ah Dai picked some fruits from the forest, ate his breakfast and continued practising his magic lifelessly. Sitting by the hut, he slowly and carefully took out the metallic bun, praying fervently that Gliss will come back sooner. Initially, Ah Dai could not bear to eat all of the steamed buns that Gliss brought back. Therefore, he took the chance when Gliss was showering and sneaked into the research room to cover one steamed bun in a layer of silver-tin. This silver-tin refined by Gliss had a special feature to preserve food, and that was also the first experiment that Ah Dai had completed by himself. Of course, Gliss had known what Ah Dai did, but he chose to ignore it and did not expose Ah Dai.That incident left a deep mark in Gliss' heart.

Stroking the metal casing of the bun, Ah Dai became sentimental once more and ranted, "Teacher, it has already been two months, you should be coming home soon. Please come back soon! Ah Dai misses you so much."

"Ring, ring, ring. Ring, ring, ring." The bell hanging along the eaves of the roof suddenly started chiming. Ah Dai got a shock and stood up immediately. This bell was designed by Gliss, and it was a special magic device. As long as someone entered the three mile radius from

the hut, the bell would start to ring. The most ingenious part of this device was that it could differentiate between humans and beasts; if a beast had stepped into the boundary instead, the bell would not ring. Within a one mile radius of the hut, Gliss had set up another device that prevents beasts from entering. This is why there were no beast attacks in this area.

Ah Dai knew that the unknown person was Gliss, as Gliss would always follow a fixed path to return, and would not trigger the alarm. 'Could it be that some stranger had come? But who would come here?' Ah Dai thought nervously, despite being in the protection of Gliss' devices. He followed Gliss' instructions and used the bell sound to determine the direction of the intruder. The intruder had come from the North, and coincidentally, that was also the direction where Gliss would return from.

The more you care for someone, the more you will worry over them. Ah Dai thought, 'Maybe, maybe Teacher has returned but he accidentally triggered the alarm? Could it be? Is it him?' Any further from the three mile radius was already outside of the dense mist range, although there would still be some wisps of mist. Having been there for ten months, Ah Dai was already familiar with the surrounding. Even though he could not walk out of the illusory forest, but he would not get lost anywhere within ten miles from the hut.

'No, what if Teacher had gotten injured? It must be Teacher, I need to go fetch him.' The strong emotions surging through Ah Dai compelled him to run into the mist, towards that direction.

Ah Dai desperately ran, having long forgotten Gliss' instructions to not go out too far. On the way, he discerned his bearings and continuously advanced. To the fit and healthy Ah Dai, three miles was a piece of cake and soon, he had already run out of the dense mist.

"Cling, cling, AH!" The sound of weapons clashing and screams were heard. Ah Dai was anxious, and ran towards the direction of the sound. In the far distance, he could see numerous silhouettes dashing around, grappling with one another. There was even a body lying on the ground. He carefully hid behind a large tree, trying to figure out if Gliss was amidst the numerous silhouettes.

After a while, Ah Dai still did not find any trace of Gliss and could not help but feel disappointed. Closely observing, the group of twelve people were split into two factions; the eleven black robed men were on one side cornering the tall, muscular man wielding a broadsword. Due to the lengthy distance part, Ah Dai could not make out their appearance. He was only able to judge from the clothes, that man who was being cornered was wearing white. Various colors flashed across the group of men. The surrounding trees were all blown apart from the violent battle. Even though he was a hundred meters away, Ah Dai could sense that the group of people were dangerous. The dense aura that filled the air was full of killing intent. In his eyes, any one of the people here was much more threatening than the pirates he met on the boat, or even the Dark Demon people that Gliss had mentioned. Especially the white robed man who was of such a huge stature, almost 1.9m tall, with broad shoulders and a wide back. He swung the heavy broadsword in his

hand and made it seem so effortless.

** [editor: will get clarification on this] (darklord5555: done)

Despite being overwhelmed in terms of number, the white-robed man who was surrounded did not seem to be at a disadvantage. His broadsword flashed with a bright white light as he defended against all of the eleven men's attacks; his sword technique was precise yet bold, filled with an unstoppable aura. Apart from him, the others were all using narrow swords, their swords were all black, just like the color of their clothes. If it were night time, it would be difficult to spot the non-reflective black swords. The eleven narrow swords were like poisonous snakes, constantly seeking the weak points of the white robed man.

Suddenly, the white robed man stumbled, and a poisonous snake took the opportunity to stab at his shoulder. The white-robed man instantaneously emitted an intense white light, using both hands to wield the broadsword and violently slashed three times. Although the poisonous snake did not actually bite his shoulder, but the sharp sword aura still gashed his clothes.

The eleven black robed men appeared to be helpless against the sudden burst of might and simultaneously retreated ten metres. Pointing their narrow swords at the ground, they focused all of their attention on the white-robed man in front of them.

A black robed man started speaking, his hoarse deep voice resounded, " 'King of Hell', forget it, stop struggling. If you were in your best condition, we would definitely not have come here looking

for death. But now you have already been poisoned by the Matchless Holy Water. For you to be able to survive so long is already a blessing. Follow us to report back, with your position in the organisation, as long as you earnestly apologize to Master, he would definitely forgive you."

Related

Chapter 007: Dodging Death, Part 1

Translator: KuroNeko

Proofreader: Naervon

Editor: JerryDaBaws

Enjoy! Err that DTW and ILK Chappie might come tomorrow as it's midnight now zz ~Jerry

Edit darklord5555: Ming Wang= King of Hell

Ming Wang sword = hell's sword

Chapter 7: Dodging Death (1)

The white-robed man coldly hmpf-ed, and spoke with a similar deep hoarse voice, "Do you think I'm a three year old kid? So what if I go back with you. Do you think that inhuman bastard will have the antidote to the Matchless Holy Water? Don't forget, the Matchless Holy Water is the world's rarest poison, it has no antidote. Even if that guy does have the antidote, I would also never go back and submit to him. I can't wait to dine on his blood and feast on his flesh! I really regret being so foolish and not seeing his true colors earlier… All of you can go, seeing that y'all have followed me for so long, I'll let y'all live this time. M11 is already dead, do the rest of you really want to follow in his footsteps too?"

As the men had all stopped moving. Ah Dai was barely able to make out that they were all wearing veils to cover their faces. When Ah

Dai heard the Matchless Holy Water being mentioned, he was shocked. That was the only poison written in Gliss' journal that had no antidote. In addition, Gliss had once said that he had spent a lot of time researching the Matchless Holy Water. It was extremely precious and only the Imperial palace of the Heaven's Gold Empire had a little amount of it, being used only when loyal ministers were granted death by the emperor. In the journal, Gliss had deep praise for the Matchless Holy Water. Its name already implied that it was one of a kind, especially since its production formula had become lost, the remaining Matchless Holy Water in the world was extremely rare — one drop could cost up to a thousand diamond coins in the black market. Even after diluting one drop of it in water, it toxicity could still kill more than half of the citizens in a city. People poisoned by the Matchless Holy Water can only rely on their strength to suppress the poison, but are unable to completely remove it. Once all their energy has been used up, they will succumb to the poison, and even their whole bodies will melt into a puddle of blue poison water.

The black-robed man replied, "Sir, to be honest, we admire you greatly. Although we have never seen each others' faces when we were together, but we could never compare to your Hell's sword. I, M1 dare say, in this whole world, there are just a few people who could oppose you. However, now that you are spending most of your energy to suppress the poison, you surely can't hold on for very long. As long as you can't use your Hell's sword, how can you kill us all? You are right, the Matchless Holy Water has no antidote, but with your power, as long as we provide you support, suppressing it for a few years should be no problem. Why do you have to seek

death? We do not know what happened between you and Master, and do not wish to know, but our mission is to bring you back. Sir, I'm sure you know Master's temper. If we are to go back empty handed, I'm afraid we will also suffer a punishment worse than death."

'King of Hell' suddenly sighed, "Since you guys are still unrepentant , then don't blame me for being merciless." As he spoke, he readily slammed his five feet long broadsword into the ground, half of the sword silently sank into the soil. His right hand at his chest, he motionlessly looked at the eleven black robed men in front of him.

Although it was merely a simple gesture, but it made the eleven men rather wary, and they instantly stepped backwards, raising the narrow swords in their hands. Their eyes held a trace of terror, as though they had seen some frightening monster.

The white robed man continued speaking, "Do you really think that, after being poisoned by the Matchless Holy Water, I can't use the Hell's sword anymore? Since you have pushed me this far, don't blame me for not holding back."

"Wait a minute. Sir 'King of Hell', can you really still use the might of the Hell's sword?"

The white-robed man coldly ignored him, and a burst of indescribably cold and evil energy started spreading out from him, covering everywhere within a hundred meters. The trees of the illusory forest started swaying and the rustling leaves sounded as though they were moaning.

Different colored “Dou Qi” lights started clustering on the narrow swords of the eleven black robed men. It seemed as though they were waiting for something.

Ah Dai felt a sudden chill in his body, the cold and evil energy unceasingly permeated his body. Uncontrollably, he started shivering. He thought, ‘What a terrifying man!’ The harrowing evil energy filled the Heavens and earth, and Ah Dai endlessly shivered. Just as he could no longer resist from shouting out, a sudden warmth filled his body, expelling all the evil energy within him. The warm feeling made Ah Dai feel very comfortable.

The eleven black-robed men made their move, their narrow swords exploded out with powerful light, piercing towards the white robed man’s chest. “Hell’s sword Heaven Splitting —— Earth —— Crasher.”*** The white robed man’s body suddenly seemed illusory. That seemingly real, seemingly imaginary silhouette flashed past. The evil energy continued emanating from his body and a faint blue light radiated alongside his shadow. Evil energy instantly burst out, enveloping all of the attacks from the black-robed men.

[t/l used the manga’s translation Q_Q]

The evil energy converged and the black-robed men returned to their original positions; the white robed man was still standing by the broadsword, it almost seemed as though none of them have moved.

“Thump, thump.” Without any prediction, the two black-robed men on the rightmost side suddenly collapsed. Their bodies appeared to have been sucked dry, becoming dry corpses. (like mummies).

M1 continued speaking in his low voice, although now it contained an extra tremor. “You, you… Hell’s sword… Is that Hell’s Flash?” He had already lost his resolution from the destructive power of the attack just now. The cold evil energy constantly assaulted his meridians and he no longer had confidence to deal with the man in front of him. He was not afraid of death, but he did not wish to die unnecessarily.

The white robed man’s right hand was still at his chest. Indifferently, he said, “The first, this is the first time that someone has seen me using Hell’s sword and lived. On account of the long time we spent together, the rest of you can go. I assume you can handle the matter yourselves when you return. I don’t wish to kill anymore today.”

M1 looked at the corpses of M6 and M10, gnashed his teeth and retorted, “Bring along their corpses, let’s go.” Tapping lightly on the ground, he flew towards the corpse of M11 that was lying under the broadsword of the white-robed man, and carried the body with him. The rest of the black-robed men did not speak a word; two of the men carried the corpses of M6 and M10 under their arms. The surviving nine people maintained an orderly formation, and slowly backed away, disappearing into the mist.

“I never thought, that a day would come where the ‘King of Hell’ had to rely on trickery to survive,” the white robed man muttered, a self-deprecating smile on his lips. His body swayed and he had to grab on to his broadsword to steady himself. “Such a powerful poison… Am I going to die here?” His body weakened, and he collapsed onto the ground.

Initially, the white robed man was able to forcefully suppress the poison with his vital pure Qi However, in order to chase away the group of black robed men, he had no choice but to use his vital Qi and execute his ultimate skill. As a result, he could no longer suppress the poison and he could not endure it anymore.

Ah Dai blankly stared at the sight before him and rubbed his eyes. The events that happened just now seemed so unreal. The domineering pressure from the evil energy had left a deep scar in his heart. He could have never thought that there would be someone who was able to display such a powerful attack. Even the evil energy released from Gliss' dark flames was simply incomparable to the power of the white-robed man. If not for the fact that the white robed man had fainted right in front of his eyes, Ah Dai would have thought that he was just dreaming. What Ah Dai did not know was that, he was fortunate to still be alive. With his weak constitution, facing the evil energy released by the white-robed man that was strong enough to kill even experts, it would have meant a certain death. If not for the Fruit of Rebirth continuously providing vitality to dispel the evil energy, he would have died a long time ago.

Although it was merely a hundred metres, it took Ah Dai around five minutes to cover the distance. He could clearly hear the sound of his heart pounding. Afterall, to a barely twelve-year old child like him, the scene that happened earlier was simply terrifying. Three human lives had just been lost just like that.

Finally, Ah Dai reached the white-robed man's side. He crouched down and closely observed the man. The man's whole face was covered with a white veil, except for his eyes. His body was still

twitching.

“Not dead.” Ah Dai fell to the ground in fright. The man was not dead yet?

The white-robed man did not make any movements, but his body continued to tremble lightly. Ah Dai suddenly recalled what Gliss had once said. His power must be profound to be able to suppress the poison for so long. Although Gliss did not find any antidote for the Matchless Holy Water, but he did think of a method to momentarily restrain the poison from breaking out. However, since he did not manage to obtain the actual Matchless Holy Water, he could not test out his theory. Also, Gliss once remarked that dying due to Matchless Holy Water would be considered a good fortune and he expressed regret for not being able to experiment with it.

‘Should I save him?’ thought the kind-hearted Ah Dai. He carefully removed the veil from the white robed man. A clean-shaven and handsome middle-aged face appeared before his eyes. The man had fair skin, his slim eyebrows extended all the way to his temples and his nose was straight and proud. His face was covered by a faint layer of blue Qi and the blue Qi seemed to be steadily increasing. The white-robed man clenched his teeth, seeming to be under immense pain.

[Editor: something like this without the beard…]

Ah Dai looked closely, but he just could not imagine that the middle-aged man in front of him would be a bad person. He naively thought that the bad guys were definitely the black-robed men, and

that the white-robed man had killed only for self-preservation. ‘I’ll save him then. At the same time I can help Teacher test whether his theory of restraining the poison is effective.’ However, Ah Dai failed to consider the possibility that the white robed man would cause harm to him if he woke up.

As he thought, Ah Dai stopped hesitating. He knew for a fact that if he were to delay any longer, there would be no more hope for the man. Lifting up the man’s arm with great effort, Ah Dai placed the man’s arm across his shoulders.

So heavy! Ah Dai used all his effort to try pulling, but only succeeded in getting the white-robed man to move slightly. Even after trying several times, the man did not seem to have moved much. What to do now? Ah Dai crouched next to the man and wiped his sweat, at a loss of what to do.

‘Ah! Since I can’t drag him back, then I’ll just save him here. I’m so stupid,’ Ah Dai finally thought of a solution. Knocking his head he immediately dashed towards the wooden hut.

Returning to the hut, Ah Dai ran straight for Gliss’ research room. Having memorised everything in the journal, he was able to recall the exact materials needed to restrain the Matchless Holy Water.

“Mm, mica three parts, crystal powder one part, heartbreak grass half parts… Eh? But teacher said the heartbreak grass was extremely poisonous, why use so much of it? Forget it, there’s no time. Since the instructions said so, then it should be correct. Clear frost one fourth parts, fragrant grass one third parts, … …” Ah Dai carefully

found all of the materials required and placed them into the small cauldron, then he added some clear water and roughly mixed all the ingredients together. He inspected the cauldron and nodded his head in satisfaction.

“Teacher, please don’t blame Ah Dai after you return! In order to save someone I had no choice but to use your items.” The simple and honest Ah Dai did not forget any of Gliss’ instructions.

Rubbing his hand together, Ah Dai excitedly mumbled to himself, “Okay, let’s begin. Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! Please bestow upon me your blazing strength, in my name, by thy power, searing flame appear.” With a pop sound, a wisp of green-blue flame appeared in Ah Dai’s palm. He carefully brought his hand under the cauldron, letting the flame constantly heat the small cauldron.

Due to his constant practice, Ah Dai had already become proficient in using the flame spell. Especially after meditating for over ten months, he was able to effortlessly control the temperature of the flame. In just a short while, the water had started to boil. Ah Dai knew that within the materials, only the mica was hard to melt. Thus, he sprinkled some powder that Gliss had specially made, allowing him to speed up the process of melting the mica. Even so, it still took Ah Dai a full hour before he finally managed to completely combine all of the materials.

Hello cliffy we meet again

Related

Chapter 007: Dodging Death, Part 2

Translator: KuroNeko

Editor: JerryDaBaws

Chapter 7: Dodging Death (2)

Ah Dai wiped away the sweat on his forehead, panting. After sustaining his flame spell for almost an hour, he had reached his limits. Finally, most of the water had evaporated and Ah Dai looked pleased with the silver colored paste in front of him. He took a metal mold from the cabinet, and carefully poured the silver paste into the mold.

The mold was boiling hot as Ah Dai carefully placed it into the water. Pssss—, gusts of steam were emitted when the mold came into contact with the water. Ah Dai sighed in relief, knowing that his job was done.

A short while later, the mold had cooled down and Ah Dai slowly took it out of the water. Placing it on the table, he opened the mold and ten small silver beads rolled out. The beads gave off a faint scent. Ah! That's great, it was a success. Grabbing one of the beads, Ah Dai immediately rushed off. One hour had passed, and he was uncertain of the man's condition.

When Ah Dai reached the place where the white-robed man had fainted, he was surprised that there was no trace of the man. Even the man's broadsword that was sticking into the ground has disappeared. Ah Dai stood there, at a loss of what to do.

Suddenly, he felt a chill on his neck, a huge blade appeared at his neck, weighing heavily down his shoulder, preventing him from struggling.

“Who are you?” A deep hoarse voice sounded out. It was the white-robed man.

Ah Dai tried desperately to turn around, but the force on sword instantly increased, causing him to fall to the ground.

Pointing his sword at Ah Dai’s chest, the white-robed man repeated, “Who are you?” Actually, before Ah Dai left, the white-robed man had already awoken. However he had to spend all of his energy in suppressing the poison, so he had no strength left to resist. He only knew that there was another person beside him, and the person seemed to have no intention of harming him. After Ah Dai left, he finally managed to suppress the poison, but he knew that his current strength was still not enough, thus he hid by the side. When Ah Dai returned, he only saw a skinny kid whose face was filled with excitement. In addition, Ah Dai did not appear to have any martial arts, thus his wariness decreased.

“I, I am Ah Dai…” Ah Dai timidly replied.

“Ah Dai? Is there actually such a name?” The white-robed man was stunned, “Why are you here, and where did you go just now?”

“I, I live nearby! I went to make medicine* for you. You have been poisoned by the Matchless Holy Water, you need to be treated immediately.”

**[t/l: I used medicine instead of antidote, since it doesn’t exactly

cure the poison…?]

Hearing Ah Dai's words, the white-robed man got a big shock, and cried out, "What? You can remove the Matchless Holy Water's poison?"

Ah Dai shook his head, and truthfully said, "I can't remove the poison, but my teacher has a method to temporarily restrain the poison to prevent it from acting up."

The man's eyes flashed with delight and he coldly said, "Then I guess, you have heard the conversation between the black men and I? Why do you want to save me?" Strong killing intent emanated from his body. Despite being poisoned, he could still easily kill the puny boy in a blink of the eye.

Ah Dai scratched his head, although the killing intent made him uncomfortable, but he could sense that the person did not really have malicious intentions. "Does saving people need a reason?"

The white-robed man was stunned by Ah Dai's question, mutely saying, "You, you really want to help me suppress the Matchless Holy Water's poison?" He at present was already at death's door ,all of his energy was spent to suppress the poison; the broadsword was extremely heavy and his arms were already shaking.

Ah Dai nodded and replied, "Yes!"

"Then, are you confident?"

Shaking his head, Ah Dai said, "No…I've watched teacher refine

other medicine before, but this is my first time refining medicine. However, I have followed teacher's instructions and formula exactly to refine this. You should know, my teacher is a great alchemist!"

The white-robed man was shocked, 'An alchemist? Seems like this kid is really not sent by master.' He loosened his grip and flung his broadsword to one corner. Staring coldly at Ah Dai, he warned, "I will believe you for now. Where's the medicine? Bring it to me." He thought, 'I can't endure for much longer, why not give this a try. Who knows, it might just be successful. At most, I'll just die."

"Mm." Ah Dai passed him the silver bead.

The white-robed man received the silver bead, and was astonished. Could such a heavy thing be eaten? He asked, "This… is the medicine?"

Ah Dai nodded and said, "Yeah, this is the medicine. According to teacher's journal, only people with profound strength can consume it. After swallowing, the silver bead will attract the poison of the Matchless Holy Water to it, preventing the poison from spreading. However, as the bead contains Mica, it will put pressure on your internal organs, and you need to use your qi to support it. Unfortunately, this bead is unable to completely absorb all of the poison, and the poison will slowly seep into your body. Therefore, this method can only help restrain the toxicity of the poison."

Hearing Ah Dai's explanation, the white-robed man had more faith. Gritting his teeth, he swallowed the silver bead in one gulp.

“Oh yeah, after you swallow it, you need to use your qi to gather the poison so that the silver bead can restrain the poison within a small area,” Ah Dai reminded.

The white-robed man sat on the floor, hesitantly following Ah Dai’s instruction and started circulating his Qi. Just as what Ah Dai had said, once the poison had come into contact with the silver bead, it was sucked in and completely restrained within a small area. He did not have to desperately suppress the poison with his Qi anymore. Using his Qi to create a barrier above the poison shroud, he could also prevent the poison from seeping out in the future. In sum, the poison of the Matchless Holy Water was no longer a threat to him. The only drawback was that he had to use 50% of his energy to control the silver bead and the protective barrier, thus he would not be able to use his full strength anymore.

Sighing in relief, the white-robed man opened his eyes. Ah Dai hurriedly asked, “How is it? How is it? Is my teacher’s method effective?”

The man relaxed, nodding slightly and replied, “Yes, it’s much better now. Thank you, little kid.”

Ah Dai bashfully smiled, “No need, no need, as long as it works. But you have to continuously control the silver bead from now on. If the poison disperses again, the outcome will be worse than before. I’ll be leaving now, goodbye!” Contently, Ah Dai stood up and stretched his sore shoulders, walking towards the mist.

“Wait,” the white-robed man called out. “You’re called Ah Dai

right? Since you have saved me, do you have any requests?" As the haughty "King of Hell", he did not want to owe anyone favors. At the same time, he also wanted to test whether the silly looking kid had other motives.

Ah Dai stopped in his tracks, shaking his head, "I have no requests, but can you don't kill so many people next time? Although they are bad people, but if you kill them, they won't be able to eat steamed buns anymore…"

A smile appeared on the white-robed man's face and he said, "Then how do you know if they are the bad guys, and how do you know if I'm the good guy?"

Ah Dai scratched his head, replying, "I don't know how to say it, but I guess you don't look like a bad person, and those black-robed men didn't seem like good people too… But when you kill people, it's so scary! Everywhere becomes cold."

Shock flashed across the man's eyes, "Then, when we were fighting just now, you were already nearby? Is your body feeling unwell?"

Ah Dai shook his head, "Everything feels alright! Okay, I need to go, I caused a mess in teacher's research room and I need to hurry back and clean it. If not, when he returns in a few days, I'll get scolded for sure." As he spoke finish, he turned and walked towards the direction of the wooden hut.

The white-robed man hesitated for while, and called out again, "Can you bring me to your house and let me rest awhile? My energy has

been spent and I need to eat something and get a good rest. If not I will not have enough energy to control the silver bead."

"No, I can't bring you along. If teacher finds out, he will be angry," Ah Dai replied after thinking for a moment.

Smiling, the man said, "No he won't. If your teacher knew that you have saved someone, he will be praising you instead. Furthermore, since you've already saved me, how can you bear to leave me here. What if the bad men came back, then I'll still be dead!"

The man's gentle smile moved Ah Dai and he hesitantly agreed, "Okay then… But, after you finished resting, you must leave as soon as possible. My teacher is going to return soon, and he doesn't like strangers."

"Okay, I'll rest a while then leave." The white-robed man wanted to see,exactly what kind of place did the kid named Ah Dai live in. He was also very interested to visit an alchemist's home. Most importantly, he wanted to figure out why the kid was not afraid of the evil energy emitted by his *Hell's Sword*.

The white-robed man indeed had profound strength; despite being inflicted by the poison for many days, he could already walk by himself after the silver bead had restrained the poison. Apart from the energy spent on controlling the silver bead, he still had around 20 to 30% of his energy left.

Bringing the white-robed "King of Hell" along, Ah Dai soon arrived at the wooden hut. As "The King of Hell" saw the sight before him,

he could not help but exclaim, “Are these all made by your teacher? He must be at the level of a Grand Alchemist. Ah, what a skillful magic formation!”

Gliss had never taught Ah Dai about magic formations, but Ah Dai could hear that the white-robed man was praising his teacher. He instantly smiled,”Yes, my teacher is very ~~sugoi desu ne~~ great! You must be tired, go rest first and I’ll bring you some food later. You may feel better after a good rest.”

“The King of Hell” nodded, and entered the room that Ah Dai brought him to. Straightforwardly, he sat on the bed and started cultivating in full concentration. He really needed adjust his mental state after being in constant torment due to the Matchless Holy Water. Ah Dai did not disturb him and carefully placed a basket of fruit next to “The King of Hell”, and quietly left. Until now, he was still excited that he had successfully refined the silver bead, helping to restrain the poison. Actually, he did not know that when Gliss had first started researching this method, Gliss himself had no confidence that it would succeed. This is because, his theory would only work if all of the conditions were met. If it were a normal person who was poisoned, he would have long melted into a puddle of blue water. Even sorcerers of a high cultivation level were unable to withstand the toxicity of the poison that was deemed as the world’s deadliest poison. Coincidentally, the man standing in front of Ah Dai, who was nicknamed “The King of Hell”, was one of the top experts throughout the continent. Only people of his power could fulfill the conditions that Gliss had proposed, and use their Qi to control the silver bead, preventing the poison from spreading.

Even so, in order to control the silver bead, “The King of Hell” had to expend the large majority of his energy.

Leaving the room, the first thing that Ah Dai did was to restore the research room to its original appearance. After that, he started to diligently practise his fire meteor spell outside of the house. Ah Dai could already effectively control this spell, except the fire meteors that he released were too weak. Even if the enemy was hit by the spell head-on, there would not be much damage. Each individual ‘meteor’ in the fire meteor spell was only slightly bigger than a spark, its power was extremely weak, and most likely, it could not even burn through an ordinary leather.

Since the fire meteor spell was almost at the level of Intermediate magic, coupled with the fact that he had already been practising for quite some time, Ah Dai started to feel fatigued. He sat on the steps of the wooden hut, leaned against the wall and unknowingly fell asleep.

“Ah Dai, wake up, wake up.” After God knows how long, Ah Dai vaguely felt someone patting his face, waking him up. Opening his eyes, he saw that it was the white-robed man that he had rescued. The complexion of the man had greatly improved, and the blue Qi around him was gone, indicating that he had successfully restrained the poison.
“Ah, Uncle! Have you rested well?”

“The King of Hell” nodded, “Yeah! You seem so tired, go back and rest. The sun has already set.”

Ah Dai only realised now that the sky was dark. The night sky with the surrounding mist gave off a mysterious aura. Standing up, Ah Dai stretched his stiff body then returning to his room. Originally, he planned to ask the white-robed man to leave as soon as he was rested, but looking at how late it was, he decided against it. Afterall, it was easy to get lost in the illusionary forest at night. *'Looks like I'll let him stay for a night.'*

Related

Chapter 008: Forced to Leave, Part 1

Translator: KuroNeko

Proofreader: Naervon

Editors: JerryDaBaws and Samskor

Enjoy, another one might be coming later… ~Jerry

P.S There was another chapter posted yesterday before the site crashed so remember to read that first…

Chapter 8: Forced to Leave (1)

Returning to the room, Ah Dai saw that the fruits in the basket had decreased by half. He faced the white-robed man, asking, “Uncle, why don’t you eat more? Is the fruit not nice?”

The man smiled, “No, the fruits are delicious, but I don’t really have a large appetite. Half a basket of fruits is enough for me, you should eat some too.” The more he looked at Ah Dai, the more he felt that the silly kid was lovable. If not for that kid, he would not have been able to restrain the Matchless Holy Water’s poison, and would really have gone to Hell to meet the King of Hell. After killing so many people, he did not dare to think that he could enter Heaven.

Ah Dai did not hold back either, lifting the basket and starting to eat the fruits. In just the blink of an eye, he had finished the remaining fruits. With his stomach full, Ah Dai became much more spirited. Looking at the handsome middle-aged man who was smiling gently

at him, he could not help but ask, “Uncle, why did those people want to kill you, and even made you consume the Matchless Holy Water? According to teacher, the Matchless Holy Water is very valuable. The people chasing you must be very rich, right?”

With a smile, the man replied, “Yes, they are indeed very rich, and not simply just rich. Uncle was careless in being poisoned. If not, they wouldn’t dare to send so little people after me.” As he spoke, he subconsciously touched his chest with a cold glare in his eyes.

Ah Dai nodded in agreement, “They are so bad! Giving Uncle such a toxic poison, if Uncle died, then Uncle can’t eat steamed buns anymore. Uncle, you have to take care!”

The white-robed man looked at Ah Dai’s gaze, his heart felt warm. For so many years, all he saw were people going at each other’s throats. For every moment of his life, he had to be on guard against the people around him. However, when facing the kind-hearted kid in front of him, he truly felt as though he could relax, and be the person he originally was. “Little kid, since you can refine a silver bead that suppresses the Matchless Holy Water, then your teacher must be an incredible person, can you tell me his name?”

Ah Dai readily replied, “Of course! My teacher’s name is Gliss.”

The white-robed man was stunned, “Gliss? The alchemist Gliss?” He naturally knew this person, Gliss was one of the few Grand Alchemists in the Heaven’s Gold Empire. However, in his memory, Gliss could not be considered as a good person. Although he had never committed any evil wrongdoings, he practised dark magic. Generally the people who practised dark magic had their minds and

emotions negatively affected.

“Yes! That is Teacher Gliss. Uncle, do you know Teacher?” Ah Dai exclaimed in delight.

Shaking his head, the man said, “I don’t know your teacher, but I have heard of his name. He is indeed a praiseworthy alchemist. Why isn’t he here though?”

Ah Dai proudly declared, ”Yes! Teacher is the best.” But his expression soon darkened, and he continued, “But Teacher went out to find some special materials for his experiment. He doesn’t like strangers, Uncle, you should leave tomorrow morning. The poison has been restrained by the silver bead, as long as you continue providing it Qi, there should be no problems within a few years.”

The man smiled and said, “I will leave tomorrow, early in the morning. Ah Dai, how long have you been staying with your teacher, and does he treat you well?”

“It’s been almost a year, Teacher rescued me and brought me out from Ninuo City and he treats me so well. After following Teacher, Ah Dai has never gone hungry. There are delicious fruits to eat every day and when Teacher returns he will always buy back steamed buns for me.”

Looking at Ah Dai’s face filled with content, the white-robed man asked, “Right, Ah Dai, what did you learn from your teacher?”

“Magic! Teacher taught me so many magic spells!” Ah Dai replied enthusiastically. With the heart of a child, Ah Dai wanted to show

off his skills. He chanted some incantations and a green-blue flame appeared in his palm, instantly lighting up the whole room.

“Not bad! Getting to this standard after only practising for a year is no easy feat. I think you have already reached the standards of a Junior Sorcerer.” The white-robed man was secretly trying to probe into Ah Dai’s background. Logically Ah Dai should not have the ability to resist the evil energy of the Hell’s Sword. But the evidence was right in front of his eyes, Ah Dai was unscathed even after being exposed to the evil energy. The Hell’s Sword is said to be the evillest weapon in the whole continent, so there must be a reason to why Ah Dai was not affected by it. Thinking about this, he asked hurriedly, “Ah Dai, apart from magic, did you learn anything else?”

Ah Dai kept his flame and pondered for a moment. “Oh, there is something else. I have memorised all of Teacher’s alchemy notes. If not, I would not have been able to refine the silver bead for you uncle. Other than that, I did not learn anything else. Because Ah Dai is very stupid,” said Ah Dai, as he lowered his head.

The white-robed man knew that Ah Dai was not the type to lie, but from his words it was impossible to find any information as to how he managed to resist the evil energy. “What were you doing before meeting Gliss?” The man continued probing, refusing to give up.

Ah Dai lowered his head, although he might be dumb, he still knew that there was nothing honorable about being a thief. He hesitated for a long while before finally revealing his past.

After hearing Ah Dai’s recount, the white-robed man was puzzled.

The alchemist Gliss' personality was definitely not the type to kindly take Ah Dai under his charge, and not to mention, giving Ah Dai an incredibly precious Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill. Gliss must have some ulterior motives for doing so. However, the Nine Metamorphosis Essence Pill could only help to remove the impurities in the body and strengthen the meridians, but it did not have any effect in resisting evil energies. Even the ordinary priests of the Holy Church would find it difficult to defend against the evil energy from the Hell's Sword. And Ah Dai was still so young, it was impossible!

"Ah Dai, come here, let Uncle have a close look at you"

"En." Ah Dai did not think much and readily walked towards the white-robed man. The man stretched out three fingers and held Ah Dai's veins. Instantly, Ah Dai felt a warm and peaceful energy surging through his body. The feeling was so comfortable.

"Ah! How, how can this be? Ah Dai, why does your body have such a powerful life force?" Even the usually impassive "King of Hell" could not help but be astounded by the pure and righteous aura inside Ah Dai. The bountiful life force within Ah Dai was not what someone of his age would possess.

Ah Dai scratched his head, and asked in puzzlement, "Life force? What is life force? I don't know anything about it!"

The white-robed man hurriedly questioned, "Ah Dai, faster tell Uncle, did you consume any heavenly treasures or anything of that sort? Or did Gliss give you anything special to eat?"

Ah Dai thought for a while and replied, “Nope! I’ve been eating these fruits every day. Teacher also brought back some steamed buns for me. Other than that, I didn’t eat anything else.”

The man’s heart was moved, “Ah Dai, bring me to the fruit forest, okay?” He was full of excitement, the vast amount of life force in Ah Dai’s body, was simply too important to him. Although his life was saved, even when he was at his prime, he did not have a definite chance of defeating his enemies, not to mention now when he could only muster half of his energy! Revenge must be taken. To him, the hate was deeply etched in his heart. Only by spilling the blood of his enemies would his revenge be complete. However, with his current strength he had no way of doing so. But as he was about to fall into despair, a miracle appeared in front of his eyes. He believed that if the righteous Qi within Ah Dai did not disperse then with his capabilities he could definitely cultivate Ah Dai to be the second “King of Hell” and Ah Dai could help him to fulfill his wish. He was not worried about Ah Dai’s character. The child in front of him, was the kindest person that he had ever met. What he needed to do now was to find out where the bountiful life force within Ah Dai came from.

“But Uncle, it is already very late, why don’t I bring you there tomorrow?” Ah Dai spoke with hesitation.

Shaking his head, the white-robed man insisted, “No, bring me there now. This matter is very important to Uncle. Didn’t you say that you wanted me to leave tomorrow?”

Ah Dai thought for a moment, replying, “Okay then, let’s go now.”

The two people left the wooden hut, and under Ah Dai’s guidance they reached the outer parts of the fruit forest. Dense mist covered the whole area making it hard for the moonlight to penetrate through causing the surrounding to be pitch black, thus their vision was limited to two metres. Ah Dai carefully created a flame, controlling it to be a red-colored flame. This way, he would be able to sustain the flame for a longer period of time with his current magic force. “Uncle, the fruit forest is inside the mist. You have to follow me closely, it is very easy to get lost inside.”

After entering the fruit forest, the white-robed man continuously inquired about the properties of each fruit. After an hour long of queries, he still did not find the thing he was looking for, and could not help but be disappointed.

“Nevermind, Ah Dai let’s go back.” They had already reached the depths of the fruit forest, and even the white-robed man was unable to determine his bearings with his capability.

Ah Dai nodded, yawning as he spoke, “Ah I’m so sleepy! Let’s go back and sleep. Uncle, you must be careful to not pick the fruits casually, many of the fruits here are poisonous. Last time, I accidentally ate two fruits, causing my stomach to be in constant pain. My body was cold one moment, and hot the other… It took me such a long time before I recovered.”

The white-robed man’s heart was moved, “Ah Dai, do you know what fruit you ate?”

Ah Dai shook his head and replied, “I don’t know. That day I was planning to pick some fruits for breakfast, but once I entered the forest, I smelled a strong fragrance. It was early in the morning and I was already hungry, so I just followed the smell, ……” Ah Dai recounted his experience of that morning. Although he was not able to express it very well, but his descriptions were enough for the white-robed man to understand.

Staring blankly in shock as he listened to Ah Dai, the white-robed man could not help but exclaim, “Fate, this is fate! Who knew that the Fruit of Rebirth that I have been searching for so long would actually be eaten by you.”

Stunned, Ah Dai asked, “Uncle, are the fruits that I ate called the Fruit of Rebirth? Even Teacher Gliss’ journals did not mention it. But the Fruit of Rebirth isn’t all that good! My stomach hurts so much after I ate it.”

The white-robed man let out a bitter smile, “That is not something that I can explain with a few words. Let’s go back first.” *Ah, the Fruit of Rebirth, why didn’t you appear before I got poisoned? Perhaps I would be able to break through the bottleneck that First Master was talking about. If so, I wouldn’t have to be afraid of anyone. Hais—, who would have thought, the miraculous Fruit of Rebirth actually grew in this sort of place.*

Related

Chapter 008: Forced to Leave, Part 2

Translator: KuroNeko

Proofreader: Naervon

Editor: Samskor

I would like to apologize for forgetting to say this last post but…

Welcome to our newest editor, Samskor!!! *clap clap clap clap clap*

I can now slack off a bit more. Enjoy. ~Jerry

Chapter 8: Forced to Leave (2)

After returning to the hut, Ah Dai sat cross-legged on the largest chair and told the white-robed man, “Uncle, I am going to meditate. You should rest early too.”

“Ah Dai, wait a minute, uncle still has something to tell you.”

Ah Dai was shocked and asked hurriedly, “Uncle, is anything wrong? Your complexion is so bad! Did the Matchless Holy Water’s poison spread again?”

The white-robed man shook his head and sighed, “No, it’s not the

poison. Ah Dai, this uncle's name is Owen, you must remember it. The Fruit of Rebirth that you have eaten is very important to uncle. But since you have already eaten it, uncle hopes that you are willing to be my disciple. The fruit has a large effect of increasing the cultivation of my school's martial arts. Are you willing to leave here with me? Uncle has many things that he wishes to accomplish, but as you know, a large part of my energy is used to suppress the poison, so I am unable to do those things. Therefore, uncle hopes that you can inherit my abilities and help uncle accomplish those things in the future. Are you willing?"

Shaking his head, Ah Dai replied, "No Uncle, I cannot leave with you. If I leave, teacher will be all alone! Unfortunately I've already eaten the fruit, and can't spit it out. How about we go to the fruit forest tomorrow again, and search for it, maybe there might be more?"

Owen smiled bitterly in his heart, if such precious treasures like the Fruit of Rebirth appeared so easily, then how could they be so valuable. Unexpectedly, Ah Dai had rejected his offer to be his disciple. There were so many people who wanted to be his disciple but did not even have the opportunity! However, he had already placed his hopes on the child in front of him. If Ah Dai did not follow even though he would live, he would not be able to accomplish his wishes. "Ah Dai, can't you consider it again?"

“No, I don’t need to reconsider. Uncle, I will definitely not leave teacher Gliss. Teacher has been so good to me, how can I leave him?” Ah Dai replied without hesitation. Although he had a good impression of the man named Owen, he would definitely not leave his teacher just because of that.

A frosty expression appeared on Owen’s face, “Ah Dai, let me ask you a question. Do you think I’m stronger, or your teacher Gliss is stronger?”

Ah Dai hesitated, the scene of the two black-robed men being killed flashed across his mind and he could not stop himself from shuddering. “Uhhh… I think, um… You are stronger.”

Owen cold hmpf-ed, “Let me tell you frankly, I didn’t get the nickname “King of Hell” for nothing. The number of people who have died by my hands have almost reached a thousand. Although I cannot use my full strength now, it won’t be too hard for me to deal with people like Gliss who are not very strong at magic. Do you believe me?” He waved his hand, white colored DouQi flashed across the room, and a corner of the chair disappeared without a sound.

Ah Dai stood up immediately, staring wide-eyed at Owen who seemed to have changed drastically. He stepped back, his voice quavering as he spoke, “Un-, Uncle, wha-, what are you doing?”

Owen gently rubbed his chest, replying, “I’m not doing anything. But, if you don’t go with me, I’m afraid that your teacher Gliss will soon become like M6 and M10. Ah Dai, you better think carefully, either leave with me or see your teacher Gliss perish.” Owen could see that Gliss held great importance in Ah Dai’s heart and he had no choice but to use Gliss to threaten Ah Dai. This child was simply too important to him.

Ah Dai was shocked, and his eyes became red. With a thump, he knelt on the floor, pleading, “Uncle, uncle, you mustn’t kill teacher Gliss. Ah Dai begs you, Ah Dai will do whatever you ask, just don’t kill teacher, okay?” With Ah Dai’s pure and honest character, how could he argue against Owen, “the King of Hell”.

Secretly pleased, Owen relaxed his expression, saying, “Ah Dai, uncle will definitely not harm you, nor kill your teacher Gliss. As long as you follow me, uncle promises, that your teacher Gliss will safely live on. Although you can’t be with Gliss now, after you have learned all my skills you can still return to see him!”

Ah Dai slowly lowered his head, how could he bear to part with Gliss. After a while, he reluctantly cried out, “Uncle, I will follow you, but you must not harm Teacher, okay?”

Looking at Ah Dai, Owen felt a sliver of guilt. He really could not understand how Ah Dai was so attached to Gliss with his typical character of an alchemist. However, he did not realise that Ah Dai had suffered too much as he grew up, as long as someone treats him well he would always remember it deeply in his heart. Nodding, Owen reassured, “I have never made empty promises, you can trust me. Furthermore, you just have to follow me, there’s nothing to worry about if we are always together. However, I have to warn you first, if you sneak away halfway, I’ll immediately return here. As for what happens to your teacher Gliss, I won’t go into details.”

“I, I surely won’t run away. Uncle, after I learn everything you teach me, can I really come back?”

gently, Owen replied, “En, I’ve already said that you can, I don’t have a habit of telling lies. But as for when you can meet my expectations, that will depend on how hard you work.”

Ah Dai nodded, “I, I will definitely study hard. I … …” Thinking of the long period that he was going to be away from Gliss, he could not help but burst out crying.

Owen did not console Ah Dai, and just let him sit on the ground venting his emotions. After God knows how long, Ah Dai seemed to have gotten tired from all the crying and fell asleep as he leaned against the wall. Crystal droplets of tears were still visible on his face. Owen sighed, and carried Ah Dai onto the bed. Letting out a self-deprecating smile, he thought to himself, *Ah, to think that I,*

“the King of Hell”, would actually have to act in such a manner and threaten little kids. Master, this is all because of you! Just you wait. The day that my disciple steps into the society, is the day that you will die! Lily, you rest in peace, big brother will definitely avenge you!*

[TN: The master that he is talking about here is the one he wants to kill, not the master from his school x.x]

The next morning, Ah Dai did not continue crying after he woke up. Under Owen’s watchful gaze, he silently packed some of the clothes that Gliss had bought for him into a small bag. Inside the bag he had also placed the remaining eleven silver beads that he refined the day before. After that, he picked a basket of fruits, and quietly started eating in a corner.

Owen broke the silence and asked Ah Dai, “Was it very hard for you, for you to leave with me?”

Ah Dai glanced at Owen, shaking his head. He spoke in a low voice, “Uncle, when are we leaving?”

Letting out a deep sigh, Owen hung his broadsword over his back and said, “Let’s go now then. I know you hate me for ruining your life, but I really have no choice.”

Ah Dai looked towards Owen, in his young heart, the positive image of Owen that he once had was replaced by a feeling of animosity, similar to how he viewed Uncle Li. “Uncle, can you let me leave a letter for Teacher?”

Owen nodded, “Yes, I’ll leave a letter for him too. Bring me the pen and paper.”

Although Ah Dai was confused, he still brought the pen and paper to Owen. After that, he started writing his letter to Gliss.

Owen pondered for a while and started writing his letter to Gliss. Once he was done, he picked up a stone from outside, using it as a paperweight and placed the letter beside the bed. “Ah Dai, are you done with writing? We should go soon, your teacher will know that you are safe after reading this letter. If you are fast, you should be able to reunite with him after a few years.”

Ah Dai lowered his head, kept quiet, and placed his letter underneath the stone as well. A few drops of tears rolled down, staining the paper. He then carried his bag and walked out of the room. Owen followed behind, only to see Ah Dai staring blankly at the wooden hut. While silently observing Ah Dai, he could not help but pity the child. However, the long years of training had caused him to be firm in his convictions. He would definitely not make a wrong decision due to a moment of soft-heartedness. “Okay, Ah Dai,

let's go while it's still early."

"En" muttered Ah Dai as gently caressed the silver-tin covered steam bun. Facing the wooden hut, he spoke, "Teacher, Ah Dai is going to leave, you must take good care of yourself! Ah Dai will definitely hurry back to see you as soon as possible." He kneeled on the ground and respectfully kowtowed three times before standing.

"Uncle, I, I don't know how to leave the forest. After I came here, I have never left."

Owen let out a smile and replied, "As long as you bring me to the place where you saved me, I will know how to bring you out."

The last remaining hope of Ah Dai was gone, he could only hope that Gliss would return sooner and rescue him. However, he was also afraid that Gliss would be killed by Owen when he returned. Filled with mixed feelings, he brought Owen into the dense mist. He would never have thought that, from this point onwards, he would never see his teacher — Alchemist Gliss, ever again.

[TN: *gasp, spoilers?!*]

Only after walking out of the mist did Ah Dai realise how much he could not bear to part with this place. He did not have to 'catch fish' anymore, he ate fresh fruits every day, and the "care" that Gliss gave

him; all of these were deeply etched within his mind.

Just as he had said, Owen was able to recognise the direction immediately after Ah Dai brought him to the place where he had fought with the black-robed men. He then proceeded to lead Ah Dai out of the illusionary forest. After walking for almost half a day, they were finally out of the forest. Ah Dai was able to see the sunlight once again but strong light made him slightly uncomfortable; his heart remained cold, despite the warm rays from the sun.

On the fifth day after Owen and Ah Dai left.

It was a dark gloomy room, the light was abnormally dim, making it difficult for people to see things further than one metre away. In the middle of the room, stood nine men, they were precisely the nine men who had unsuccessfully chased “the King of Hell”, yet still surviving. They stood silently in the middle of the room with their heads lowered, not daring to make a single sound. The whole room was filled with a strange atmosphere.

An illusory voice seemed to come from every direction, “M1, did you finish your mission? Have M6, M10 and M11 perished?”

M1 gravely replied, “Your Highness, the mission has failed. Although “the King of Hell” was poisoned by the Matchless Holy

Water, he could still execute the Hell's Sword, and we were no match for him."

"Hmm? Since you were no match for him, how are you able to return alive? Under the Hell's Sword, no one has lived to tell the tale."

The tone of the illusory voice was calm, but M1's back was already wet with cold sweat. He tried his best to control his trembling voice, "Your Highness, "the King of Hell" was after all our leaders in the past. He showed us mercy on account of the past, so we were able to return alive."

"Is that the case? Tell me everything that has happened."

"Yes, Your Highness. Originally we had chased "the King of Hell" into a large forest in the Valian Province. We had gained the upper hand but just as we were about to succeed, … …" M1 recounted the whole incident. "That is how it happened, M6, M10 and M11's corpses are currently outside."

"Eh—, M1, you have been in the organization for quite some time, this doesn't seem like the usual you! As an assassin, calmly analysing the situation is most important. I understand your thoughts, pointless sacrifices are meaningless. However, have you thought that with "the King of Hell's" personality, he would let you live and come back to report? If he really had the ability to kill you then, you would have long became a corpse. The phrase that "Once

Hell's sword is drawn, nothing will survive" is not for naught. Don't you know the effects of the Matchless Holy Water? Although he has profound strength, once the poison penetrates his body, will he still be able to deal with all of you so easily? Don't forget, you are the elites of the M assassination group. Perhaps after you left, he would not be have been able to resist the poison and fainted. If you had just persisted for a while more, you could have captured him. M1, your blunder this time is too great."

Sweat continuously flowed down from his forehead and M1 only replied after a long while, "Your Highness, I, I know my mistakes. Please give us a chance to make up for our mistake. Let us return to that forest, and we will surely bring "the King of Hell" back." They had seen the ruthless methods of their master, and it caused even them, who were not afraid of death, to be filled with a deep fear.

Related

Chapter 009: Shitang Township, Part 1

Translator: KuroNeko

Proofreader: Naervon

Editor: Samskor

first time posting >:D wheee~ hope yall enjoy ^^

*[edit: Shitang Township has been changed to Sweetrock Township]

Chapter 9: Sweetrock Township (1)

“There’s no need, “the King of Hell” would not be waiting for you to capture him. Just remember my words, always remain calm when facing situations. I will forgive you this time, after all, he was your leader, and there may be some unavoidable feelings. However, if the same thing happens again next time, you should all know of the consequences.”

From his words, he implied that there would be no punishments. M1 felt immense relief, and respectfully said, “Yes, Your Highness. Thank you, Your Highness, for your magnanimity.” The nine members of the M assassination group immediately kneeled down, secretly sighing in relief.

“Okay, you may leave now. From now onwards, you are not to take any steps out of the headquarters. Now that “the King of Hell” is

missing from the group, you must all work hard to raise your power. Do you understand? M1, you shall temporarily take over his position, and be the leader of the M assassination group. If there are any changes in the future, I will let you know."

"Yes, Your Highness." The nine members of the M assassination group bowed in respect towards the darkness, and immediately took their leave.

The room became silent once more. After a long time, a brooding voice sounded, "Highness, this doesn't seem to follow the rules. Are you just going to simply let them off?"

The illusory voice spoke, "You don't understand, the M assassination group has made quite some contributions to the organization, and now is the time to make use of them. Do you know how hard it is to train an M level assassination group? Although the nine of them cannot be compared to a single "King of Hell", but assassinating high level sorcerers will still be no problem. Such a pity! "The King of Hell" was my most favored, but he still has not reached the highest realm of assassination — killing without feeling. Pass along my orders, offer a high reward to the Thieves Guild for information on "the King of Hell". I want to see his body, whether dead or alive. At the same time, send out my nine-star assassination command, and have the Y team ready. Once we have "the King of Hell's" whereabouts, immediately move out, leave no witnesses. "The King of Hell" who has been poisoned by the Matchless Holy Water is no longer of use to me."

"Yes, Your Highness." A bright red light flashed across the dark room and instantly disappeared.

“Oh, “King of Hell”! Its’a hundred years too early for you to go against me!”

…

A month after Owen and Ah Dai had left the illusory forest, the alchemist Gliss returned. He was burdened with heavy feelings. The time was almost coming, but even after three months of repeated considerations, he still could not harden his heart. He was used to being alone, but ever since Ah Dai came, his life had become much more colorful. Ah Dai’s kindness and honesty had deeply moved his heart. However, the experiment must still be done, he was unwilling to give up the dream that he had pursued for decades. With conflicted feelings, he returned. In another month, it would be April, Year 989 of the holy calendar. According to Gliss’ predictions, that was the time for the opportunity of his lifetime. In this one month, he needed to discard his feelings in order to accomplish his lifelong wish.

“Ah Dai, Ah Dai, I’m back.” Gliss shouted loudly in the direction of the wooden hut. Although he was not willing to admit it, he did miss Ah Dai quite a bit.

After countless shouts and still no replies, Gliss was shocked. He quickly walked towards Ah Dai’s room, everything was in place, the same as before he left. Only, Ah Dai was nowhere to be found. Walking to the bed, he threw away the rock and picked up the two letters on the bed. He had an uneasy feeling. Hastily, he tore open one letter, but the writing on it did not appear to be Ah Dai’s.

“Greetings, brother Gliss. Although we have yet to meet, I am your

friend in spirit. A few days ago, I was chased by assassins to this place. Luckily, your disciple saved me, and I am very grateful. Brother Gliss, your research has greatly impressed me. Ah Dai used your research method and helped me to temporarily restrain the Matchless Holy Water that I was poisoned with. By chance, I found out that there was an abnormally strong life force within Ah Dai's body, and it was very suitable for learning my martial arts. As my power has greatly reduced, in order to get my revenge, I had no other choice but to force Ah Dai to leave with me. Once Ah Dai finishes learning my martial arts, I will definitely allow him to return and reunite with you. I have left this letter to inform you, so please do not worry, I will definitely treat Ah Dai well. I hope you can forgive me for doing so." And the letter ended off, "The King Of Hell".

[TN: special thanks to the translator(s) of the manhua, coz i used alot of references from the manhua]

Gliss' hands started trembling, the King of Hell, the King of Hell… Although he did not care about worldly matters, he had heard of the name, "King of Hell". "The King of Hell" became famous thirty years ago and was a top assassin in the continent. He had killed countless people, never missing his target. His Hell's Sword was able to kill even top experts, the saying "One swing of Hell's Sword can shake the earth, another swing will make ghosts flee" was not for naught. No one could escape from his assassination attempts. He was the trump card of the Assassins Guild, and had long become an M level assassin thirty years ago.

"Him, how could it be him? Ah Dai was taken away by "the King of Hell"." Worry filled Gliss' heart, "the King of Hell" was much more

evil than him. Countless questions flooded Gliss' mind. *Why was "the King of Hell" here? The fact that he was chased was not strange, after all, he had killed so many people, and he had countless enemies. However, who could have the ability to poison him with the Matchless Holy Water? As an assassin, his wariness must be great. Furthermore, why did he have to take Ah Dai away? Looking at his letter, he did not seem to have any ill intentions towards Ah Dai, but instead, he wanted to impart his skills to Ah Dai.* At this moment, Gliss was only full of concern for Ah Dai's safety. The fact that he could no longer continue his experiment without Ah Dai did not even cross his mind.

Amidst his confusion, Gliss proceeded to open the other letter. He could tell with a glance, the shaky handwriting belonged to Ah Dai. After carefully analysing it, the content of the letter was finally clear, the meaning was approximately, "Teacher, this is Ah Dai! Yesterday I saved a man, but he insisted that I leave with him, saying that he wanted to teach me some martial arts. I really don't want to go! Teacher, I really don't want to go! Ah Dai wants to be with you, you treat me the best in this whole world. However, the person I saved told me that if I do not go with him, he will kill you! Ah Dai doesn't want to leave Teacher, but more than that, Ah Dai also doesn't want to see Teacher die. Teacher, Ah Dai really really likes you. For your safety, Ah Dai can only leave with him. Teacher, your method of restraining the poison of the Matchless Holy Water worked, the person I saved is not facing any life-threatening issues for now. Teacher, there was a day when I sneaked into your research room, and when you were not paying attention, I used a bit of silver-tin to preserve one of the steamed buns that you brought back for me.

Every time I think of you, I will always look at it. Teacher, if you miss Ah Dai, just shout it out loudly, Ah Dai will surely hear you! Teacher, that person said, after I finish learning his martial arts, I can come back. You must take good care of yourself, after Ah Dai returns, Ah Dai will take good care of you. Teacher, I have washed your clothes, they are in the cabinet. I used some of your materials when I was saving that person, please forgive me. Do not forget to eat some fruits when you are doing your experiments. You need to take care of your health, so you must eat well. Teacher, I need to go now, wait for me, you must wait for Ah Dai to come back. After I come back, you must teach me magic again! Teacher, goodbye, Ah Dai is leaving, take care of yourself!" The letter ended off with, "Ah Dai who will miss you forever and ever." There were some creases on the letter, those were the tear marks left behind. Gliss knew for sure, that Ah Dai had cried just as he was about to leave. Although the language of the letter was not very fluent, Gliss knew that Ah Dai was constantly thinking about him, from the "Teacher" being mentioned in every sentence, to the concern that Ah Dai showed.

The letter in his hand gently fell to the ground as tears streamed down his cheeks. He never would have thought that, the silly kid Ah Dai, who was only with him for about a year, would actually have such deep feelings for him. The tears that flowed down Gliss' cheeks, were tears of regret. At this moment, his lifelong wish no longer seemed to matter. Dashing outside of the house, he suddenly cried out, "Ah Dai, come back! Quickly come back! Teacher will teach you magic, teach you alchemy! Faster come back, Teacher will not use you for the experiment anymore!" He regretted, his heart was filled with immense regret. Why did he chose to leave that day, why

was he so selfish, Ah Dai was such a good child! In Gliss' whole life, there was no one else who had treated him so whole-heartedly.

Gliss fell onto the floor, his tears still streaming down his face. The place where he sat, was precisely where Ah Dai had spent each day waiting for him. After a whole day, Gliss still did not move from that spot, and his surroundings remain shrouded in mist. In this one day, Gliss had thought about many things. Just as night fell, he slowly stood up with the support of the wall behind him. His stiff body made him seem older and frailer, "Ah Dai, you must come back quickly! Teacher has decided, after you come back, you will be my student for real!" Gliss was filled with incomparable pain, he had never felt such deep emotions, not even for his own brother. "Teacher has given you too little… As long as you come back, teacher is willing to do anything for you."

Gliss turned around and staggered into the house, his lonely back seemed so frail. This old man who had been obsessed with alchemy research for so long, finally understood the true meaning of feelings…

After a month long travelling from the west-most part of the continent, Owen and Ah Dai finally reached Sweetrock Township — a little coastal town situated in the eastern part of the United Regions Commonwealth. This region was under the control of the Sipho (西波) Tribe, the weakest tribe of the six great tribes in the United Regions Commonwealth. On the journey, Owen purchased a horse, they were constantly on the move, travelling through remote paths, and they would only rest at night. Every time they came across a city, Owen would also change his horse. Even so, it still took them

over thirty days to arrive at that their destination.

The nomadic tribe, Yalian (亚琏) Tribe, was the strongest of the six great tribes in the United Regions Commonwealth, and it was mostly made up of dark-skinned people. Although the dark-skinned people were often ostracised by others, it was an undeniable fact that they possessed strong bodies and perseverance. As a nomadic tribe, Yalian Tribe had the largest cavalry on the continent and was in control of more than one third of the flatlands in the United Regions Commonwealth. At the same time, it was also the leader of the commonwealth. The Yalian Tribe was situated in the westernmost part of the United Regions Commonwealth, sharing its northern border with Heaven's Gold Empire, its southern border with Prosperous Empire and its western border with the Holy Church. To the South of the Yalian Tribe, was the Heaven Origin Tribe (天元) that only shared a border with the Yalian Tribe.

Actually, the Heaven Origin Tribe was mostly made up of many uncommon races. Because of that, they named themselves after the Heavens' Origin Continent, to signify the declining population of the continent. The place where the Heaven Origin Tribe was located, was deemed as the most complex area. Instead of flatlands, every where was surrounded by large tracts of hills and forests. The dwarven race, the elven race, the werebeast race and the winged race, were normally unconcerned about worldly affairs and chose to live peaceful lives. But this did not mean that they were willing to let others invade their territory; the dwarves were skilled in forging, the elves were talented in archery, the winged people were able to fly at fast speeds, and the werebeasts were extremely strong. They were

definitely the elites of the United Regions Commonwealth. As a whole, they were all part of the Heaven Origin Tribe, any important matters would be discussed amongst all the four races.

To the northeast of the Yalian Tribe, was the Yajin (亚金) Tribe, made up of mostly white-skinned people. Most of the people there originated from the migrants of the Heaven's Gold empire and the smaller tribes of the United Regions Commonwealth. After many generations, it had now become the Yajin Tribe. The landscape of the Yajin Tribe, was mostly similar to that of the Heaven's Gold Empire, cluttered with buildings and cities. It was also the most developed tribe in the United Regions Commonwealth.

Straight towards the east of the Yalian Tribe was the second greatest tribe, the Puyan (普岩) Tribe. It was a mysterious tribe, their people very rarely came into contact with the other tribes. Unless there was a major incident in the United Regions Commonwealth, they would just live their lives inside the tribe. The main source of income for the Puyan Tribe was the weaponry that they produced.

To the north of the Puyan Tribe, was the Red Hurricane (红飓) Tribe. Having red hair was a trademark of their tribe and the Mercenary Guild also originated from the Red Hurricane Tribe. Most of the mercenary groups in the continent were actually made up of people from the Red Hurricane Tribe.

The easternmost part of the Commonwealth, which is also the easternmost part of the continent, was where Owen and Ah Dai had gone, the Sipho Tribe.

The Sipho Tribe was a small and honest tribe, the people in the tribe

generally fished for a living. Their greatest asset was their fleets of ships that were on par with any of the nations on the continent. Of the six great tribes in the United Regions Commonwealth, only the Sipho Tribe relied on communications with other tribes in order to make a living. If not, with the size of their tribe, they were unable to maintain a large fleet of ships. Therefore, within the border of the Sipho Tribe, people from other smaller tribes in the United Regions Commonwealth would often be seen.

[TN: omg this huge chunk was torture, i'll draw up a simple map later for those who are horrible at processing information like me]

[EN: Praise our lord and savior Kuroneko]

*edit: heres the map :3 (pardon my drawing/writing skills…)

Related

Chapter 009: Shitang Township, Part 2

Translator: KuroNeko

Editor: Samskor

Chapter 9: Sweetrock Township (2)

[EN: We changed the names of all the towns and Englishised them.]

Looking at boundless sea, Owen told Ah Dai, “In the future, we are going to live here. Do you know where we are?”

Shaking his head, Ah Dai replied, “I don’t know.” He had been very silent for the whole journey. While he was riding on the horse, he just sat there in a daze, even after a whole day, he would never complain about his aching body. Unless Owen asked him something, he would not speak up on his own. Owen also noticed that Ah Dai had become quieter than before, and he knew the reason it. However, he never questioned Ah Dai, because he believed that Ah Dai would get used to the life here after some time.

Sweetrock Town was one of numerous small towns in the Sipho Tribe that was situated near the sea. Many of the current people in the Sipho Tribe were migrants from the Prosperous Empire, therefore black haired people, such as Ah Dai, were quite a common sight. Arriving there, Ah Dai no longer stood out from the crowds, and this was the only thing that made Ah Dai feel slightly better.

For the whole journey, Owen tried his best to accommodate Ah Dai.

In order to let Ah Dai endure sitting on the horse for a long period of time, Owen bought a thick soft cushion specially for Ah Dai. Although Ah Dai would always respond with a shake of his head, Owen continued to show concern for Ah Dai, asking if he was tired or hungry every few hours. Ah Dai was no longer as quiet as when he had just left the illusionary forest, but the big barrier between Owen and him, was still there.

Owen and Ah Dai stepped into Sweetrock Town. As it was early in the morning, most of the laborers were either out fishing, or working in the ship factory of the Sipho Tribe. There were mostly women, kids and elderly left in the town. Occasionally, they would see some wives sitting together by the roadside washing their clothes, while their children played merrily nearby.

In order to not incite enmity from the villagers, Owen hid his broadsword behind some rocks near the sea, changed into a set of common civilian clothes, and even sold his horse before entering the village. But even so, they still managed to arouse suspicion from the villagers. A man who seemed around fifty years old, walked up to them and curiously asked, “You aren’t locals, are you? What are you doing here?” The language of the United Regions Commonwealth was different from the language of the Heaven’s Gold Empire. Even within the commonwealth, the six great tribes had different dialects, if one was not familiar they would find it hard to differentiate. On the way, Owen would teach Ah Dai some different languages with weird pronunciations. Although Ah Dai was a slow learner and could only learn a few simple words, he did not get fed up. Only now did Ah Dai realise, that the words that Owen taught him, were

the dialects of the people here. He was barely able to understand what the elderly man was saying.

Owen had a smile on this face, and replied in the dialect of the Sipho Tribe, “Hello, I was born here, it’s just that I had left for a long time.”

Hearing the same dialect, the old man visibly lowered his guard, and spoke, “Are you from the town? I can’t seem to recall you.”

Owen glanced at the man a few times, suddenly speaking out in surprise, “Ah! Aren’t you Brother Schiel?”

Schiel was shocked, “How do you know that my name is Schiel? You, who are you exactly! Why don’t I have any impression of you.”

“Schiel, it really is you, I am Owen! You forgot me? I’ve left for almost fifty years. Do you remember that time when we were young, playing with mud? We even got a beating that time.” Owen excitedly recalled.

Schiel stared at Owen, dumbfounded. After a long time, he finally spoke, “You, you really are big brother Owen. But, but, why do you look so young?”

Owen rolled up his white sleeve, revealing a fair-skinned arm, and there was a dark purple moon-shaped scar. “Look, it was from saving you, that I got cut by the boat’s anchor. Do you remember?”

Meanwhile, Ah Dai was just staring blankly at Owen and Schiel. They were speaking too fast, and Ah Dai could barely catch a few words.

Schiel grabbed Owen's arm, closely inspecting it. "Ah! You really are big brother Owen! If not for you, I would have died in the sea that time. However, brother, how are you still so young! I remember, you are even older than me by two years. I'm 56 this year, while you were born in February, Year 931 of the Holy Calendar, which means that you are 58 this year. I can't tell, I really can't tell it all!"

Owen smiled, "Actually it was nothing. It was probably because I've always been living in the forest, and absorbed some natural energy from the Earth, making me seem younger. Schiel, is our ancestral houses still there?"

Nodding, Schiel replied, "Yes. Let's go, I'll bring you to take a look. I've already taken over my father's position and was the town mayor for quite some years. With our relationship, there is no one who will dare to lay a hand on your ancestral house. However, it's a bit dilapidated now. If you want to live in it, you need to do some renovations first. Big brother, now that you are back, are you still going to leave next time?"

Owen shook his head, sighing, "Ah—, I won't be leaving anymore. I've been travelling for most of my life, it's time that I returned. Ah! Right, brother, this is my distant nephew, and he is my only family now. We will be living here, perhaps, I will live here until my death."

"Big brother, I was just worrying that there will be no one to accompany me. Now that you're back, let us accompany each other. Let's go, I'll bring you to the ancestral house, wait till my sons are back and they will help you renovate it. Then, we can be neighbors again." Schiel laughed heartily as he spoke.

Under Schiel's enthusiastic guidance, Ah Dai and Owen soon arrived at a courtyard facing the sea. This courtyard was quite some distance away from the houses of the other villagers in Sweetrock Town. Looking at the courtyard before him, Owen's eyes turned red. After all, this was where he had spent his childhood days.

Patting Owen's shoulders, Schiel spoke, "Hmm, thinking of your parents again? Ah, that huge tsunami had indeed caused countless deaths!"

Owen glanced at Schiel, replying, "It's already been so many years, what's the use of thinking?" As he spoke, he took out some gold coins from his pouch and stuffed them into Schiel's hands. "Brother, it has been so many years, I've become unfamiliar with this place, so I need to trouble you to find some people to help me fix this house."

Schiel immediately declined, "Brother, what are you doing? Aren't we brothers? Now that you've finally returned, it is my duty to help you. Do not worry, in the town, I'm still quite influential. When my sons return from work, I'll have them get some wood and materials, and repair the house for you. It should just take about a day. Don't give me money, if not, I'll take offense."

"How can I do this, troubling you is already enough, how can I ask you to pay as well. Quick, take it, if not I will not stay here anymore," insisted Owen. The two of them started bickering for a long time. Finally, Schiel could not argue against Owen, and accepted the money.

"Brother, go take a look at your ancestral house first. I'll make some preparations and you can come over to eat lunch. Let us have a few

drinks, I have some aged wine at home, haha." As he spoke, Schiel turned around and walked towards the town.

Looking at Schiel's disappearing back, Owen told Ah Dai, "Next time you see him, call him Uncle Schiel and call me Uncle, okay? This is where we will be staying from now on."

Ah Dai nodded, asking, "Uncle, when will you start teaching me martial arts?"

Owen smiled and replied, "Anxious? I know you want to go back and see your teacher earlier, but martial arts cannot be learned in just a few days. We need to make full preparations before we begin. Let's go, I'll bring you inside to take a look, it's been forty years since I last returned."

Ah Dai managed to understand Owen and Schiel's conversation about their age, and he curiously asked, "Uncle, are you really 58 years old?"

Owen looked at Ah Dai, gently speaking, "Yes! I'm 58 already. The reason why I still look so young, is because of the martial arts that I cultivate. It has an effect of slowing down the aging process, making me seem much younger. After we settle down, uncle will impart the martial arts to you."

When Owen pushed open the unlocked door, a musty smell greeted him. He wrinkled his brows, and brought Ah Dai inside. There was nothing around the courtyard that was about thirty square metres large, except for the two tiled-roof houses with closed doors. The surrounding walls were covered with cobwebs, but fortunately, there was no moss due to the salinity near the sea. If not, cleaning up

would be a much harder task.

Two days later, with Schiel's enthusiastic help, Owen's ancestral house was completely refurbished, and was even filled with some furniture that Owen had bought. Due to Schiel's identity as the mayor, the people of the town gradually grew to accept Owen and Ah Dai.

Ah Dai had become very relaxed, compared to the wooden hut in the illusionary forest, this place was more like a home to him and everyone treated him very well. He got to know Schiel's three sons and the eldest son seemed to look around Owen's age. However, when Schiel had told them that Owen was even older than him, his family all had looks of disbelief. Schiel's three sons were already married, and his oldest granddaughter was merely younger than Ah Dai by 2 years. The remaining two grandsons were 7 years old and 3 years old.

In the evening, after he had sent Schiel's family off, Owen stood in the middle of the courtyard. He took a deep breath of the brackish sea breeze and said, "Ah Dai, come here."

Ah Dai had just finished washing the dishes. When he heard that Owen had called, he dried his hands and walked toward Owen. "Uncle."

Owen turned around, looked at Ah Dai and solemnly said, "I know, you really hate me, you hate me for forcing you to leave your teacher. However, starting from tonight, will be imparting to you, my lifetime of martial arts. I hope that you can learn it seriously. If you want to see your teacher again, you must completely learn all of my martial

arts before you go. Do you understand?"

Ah Dai nodded, and quietly said, "Yes." He had voiced his agreement, but in his heart, he was already thinking about the illusionary forest, wondering if Teacher Gliss had returned.

"From today onwards, you are not allowed to practise the magic that Gliss taught you, it will make you distracted. In this town, magic is not commonly seen, so do not use your fire magic in front of people, okay?"

Ah Dai raised his head, staring intently at Owen as he insisted, "No, I must continue practising magic. I mustn't forget the magic that Teacher taught me."

Owen was shocked, it was the first time that Ah Dai had rebuked his words. However, he did not get angry, and gently said, "Child, you need to understand, magic and martial arts cannot be learned at the same time. There is a limit to how much one can learn in his life. It is not an easy feat to even master one of the two professions, not to mention learning both at the same time. Your teacher Gliss will not blame you."

Ah Dai stubbornly shook his head. "No, I can't do that, I must practise magic. I can stop using it in front of people, but I must practise it every day."

Owen thought for a while before replying, "Okay then, if you insist. I will allow you to practise it for one hour every night, but you can't let it interfere with your martial arts training, can you do that? If you

can’t, then you must give up on magic.”

Nodding, Ah Dai said, “Yes, I can definitely do this.”

“Okay, today I will first teach you the basics of martial arts. The dou qi cultivation method that I use, is called the Boundless Life Art, which means to have an endless life force. It increases and strengthens your life force, transforming it to dou qi that contains holy power. This can be said to be the most authentic high-level dou qi cultivation method on the continent. It is also the best method to improve one’s body, and that is why I still look so young. When circulating the Boundless Life Art in your body, you can produce the true qi that your teacher Gliss mentioned. When expelling the true qi and using it to attack, it becomes the dou qi. As you have eaten the Fruit of Rebirth, your cultivation speed will be much faster. Let’s go back to the house, I’ll teach you the mnemonic.”

After returning to the house, Owen said in a serious tone, “The main principle of the Boundless Life Art is to grow without end. As long as your true qi is endless, you can have endless dou qi to attack.” Previously, it was because of the Boundless Life Art that Owen was able to have an endless amount of true qi to scare away the assassins. “You must remember the first verse, it is: Qi as will directs, Qi from the heart, refine the Qi essence, have endless life force.

[TN: I cant… make it flow in english.. The problem with the 4 words craze in chinese]

The first step in cultivation is the foundation of the Boundless Life

Art. Okay, let’s begin.”

Owen made Ah Dai sit cross-legged on the bed, while he sat behind Ah Dai, his right hand placed on the middle of Ah Dai's back, instructing, "Close your eyes, silently recite the mnemonic. You have to understand the meaning behind it, and you have to use your mind to sense the places where the warm qi circulates, remembering the places. Okay, let us start."

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 010: Advent of the Blood Sun, Part 1

Translator: KuroNeko

Editor: Samskor

Enjoy the chapter! – Sam

Chapter 10: Advent of the Blood Sun (1)

Warm energy flowed from Owen's palm into Ah Dai's body. Owen knew that Ah Dai was a bit dumb, so he slowly circulated his true qi, allowing Ah Dai to remember it better. While he circulated the qi, he was also constantly reciting the mnemonic. It actually took a whole night to successfully circulate the qi through the correct paths for 7 times.

Under Owen's help, Ah Dai managed to enter the ideal state for cultivation. The qi that Owen transferred into his body gradually merged with the life force within his meridians, continuously circulating at a slow pace. He felt as though there was a large furnace inside him, radiating a warmth that left him incomparably comfortable. Without Owen's steady control, Ah Dai started to circulate the qi faster, waking up only after 7 cycles.

"How is it? How do you feel?" In the morning, after he had finished helping Ah Dai, Owen cultivated for a short while, before locking the front gate and going to Schiel's house. When Schiel asked about Ah Dai, Owen made up an excuse to cover up. He knew that the

first time cultivating the Boundless Life Art was extremely important, and Ah Dai must not be disturbed.

Ah Dai jumped down from the bed, looked at the sky outside the house, and was shocked to find out that the sky was already dark. Although he was in the cultivation state for a whole day, he still felt surprisingly refreshed, “Uncle, my whole body feels so light, and there seems to be a thread of something constantly moving, making me feel so comfortable.”

Owen nodded in satisfaction, “To accomplish this in just one day is not bad, I remember when I first started cultivating, it took me a full seven days before I could reach the standard you are at now. The Fruit of Rebirth is indeed very beneficial for cultivating the Boundless Life Art. Okay, go take a rest and have your meal, I’ve prepared some food for you. After you’ve finished eating, I’ll give you two hours of free time to do what you want. You can practise your magic, but to prevent others from finding out, you can only practise it in your room, but don’t set the house on fire.” The main reason why Owen allowed Ah Dai to continue practising magic was because he simply had too many enemies. Even though the martial arts that he practised were the top-tiered in the continent, the enemies that he made after countless years of killing were simply too many. If Ah Dai could have another identity as a sorcerer, he would face less trouble when he helped Owen to complete his revenge.

After cultivating for one whole day, Ah Dai’s mood had improved. He blushed as he said, “Uncle, don’t worry, I definitely will not set the house on fire. I will go and eat first.” As he spoke, he hurriedly ran out. Suddenly, he realised that, the uncle who abducted him, did

not seem so hateful anymore.

Immediately after he finished eating, Ah Dai did not waste anytime and started practising magic without taking any breaks. As the amount of time he could practise was short, and he was restricted to the confinements of him room, he could only meditate to increase his spiritual power.The meditation when practising magic and the state of cultivation when cultivating true qi were totally different. Meditation agglomerates the spiritual power within the body, and one need not be afraid of disturbances, as he can immediately awake from it. However, the state of cultivation was different, cultivating dou qi is equivalent to increasing one's potential power, and seven cycles of circulation must be completed in order for it to be effective. Therefore, it was crucial for there to be no disturbances, if not, there was a high chance of the cultivator to become deranged. After Ah Dai meditated for two hours, Owen woke him up.

[TN: In english, both are translated as meditation, but meditation to increase magic force and meditation to cultivate true qi are different. x.x]

"Ah Dai, if you are only meditating to increase your spiritual power, it does not actually affect your cultivation of the Boundless Life Art. Instead, it may actually have a catalytic effect, as your spiritual power increases, you can control the true qi easier. This is a pretty good plan. The basis for magic is magic force, which is also spiritual power. How about this, I will give you three hours of meditation time every day. As for cultivation of true qi, completely seven cycles of circulation is enough. For the remaining time, I will teach you some knowledge."

Hesitantly, Ah Dai asked, “If I only meditate to increase my magic force, but not practise it, will it affect the use of my fire magic?”

Owen laughed and replied, “Little brat, when did you become so clever? Meditating will certainly affect your control of magic. But magic force is the basis for magic, the higher your magic force, the stronger the magic spells that you can unleash. Actually, after you have cultivated the Boundless Life Art to a certain standard, the uses of magic is not very important. To me, unless the person is of the grand sorcerer level and above, it will be very difficult for him to cause any damage to me. The speciality of the Boundless Life Art is that it can retrain all types of evil energy, and it can cultivate the most authentic holy type dou qi. As the dou qi becomes stronger than the magic attacks, magic simply cannot deal any damage. Perhaps you are still confused now, but you will understand this in the future.”

Ah Dai scratched his head, saying, “Then I will meditate first. Uncle, do I start now?”

Owen nodded, “The foundation at the start is extremely important. There are nine parts to the Boundless Life Art, after you reach the third part, I will teach you others. You can start meditating first, I won’t help you today. Just follow the circulation paths that I taught you yesterday and cultivate, you can stop after you manage to circulate that weak stream of qi through seven cycles.”

With Owen’s help, Ah Dai sat on the bed, in a lotus position. Just as Owen was about to start his own cultivation, Ah Dai suddenly opened his eyes.

[TN: The position looks like this, I don't know how to describe it.]

[EN: It is called the lotus position/stance and it looks like that ^]

"What's wrong Ah Dai? Do you feel uncomfortable anywhere?" Owen asked in concern. Although the Boundless Life Art is an authentic cultivation method, there might still be dangers during cultivation.

Blushing, Ah Dai lowered his head and muttered, "Uncle, I have forgotten the mnemonic you taught me yesterday. Also, I can't find the circulation pathway anymore."

Hearing Ah Dai's words, Owen almost fainted. He had spent the whole of yesterday night reciting the mnemonic, and even slowly circulated his qi through Ah Dai's body, but Ah Dai still could not remember it.

With his head lowered, Ah Dai spoke softly, "Uncle, is Ah Dai very stupid?"

Owen secretly thought, "*Not just stupid, but extremely stupid!*" He went beside Ah Dai and said, "I'll guide you to circulate your qi for one cycle, but this time I will increase my speed. You must remember it carefully." As he finished speaking, he started to recite the mnemonic as he guided Ah Dai to circulate the true qi within his body. With his help, Ah Dai easily entered the state of cultivation and started cultivating by himself. By the dawn of the next day, he had already successfully completed seven cycles.

From then on, Ah Dai fell into this regular routine. In the morning, he would wake up from meditation, and Owen would teach him the

dialect of the Sipho Tribe. Ah Dai was a slow learner, but he had great perseverance. Normally, he could remember the stuff that he learned in three times the amount of time that other people would usually take. In the afternoon, Owen would allow him to have a few hours of free time, and Ah Dai would generally spend the time playing with Schiel's three grandchildren. It was due to their constant interaction that made Ah Dai become lively once more. At night, Ah Dai would start meditating after dinner. When all of the townspeople were sleeping, Owen would wake Ah Dai up and make him cultivate the Boundless Life Art. In the beginning, Ah Dai could not remember the mnemonic, as well as the complicated circulation pathway. It was only until after Owen had guided him for a month, that Ah Dai could barely remember. Owen told Schiel that he had accumulated some savings and returned to Sweetrock Town for retirement, thus he did not work at all. Of course, not all of the money that he earned from assassination was with him, but it was enough for Ah Dai and him to live on. Since he became an adult, Owen had never felt this leisurely before, in just a month's time, he seemed to have forgotten his past identity, and had completely assimilated into the lifestyle of Sweetrock Town.

This day, it was the 14th Day of the 4th Month, Year 989 of the Holy Calendar.

Early in the morning, Ah Dai and Owen had sensed that the atmosphere felt strange. Owen stood in the courtyard, looking towards the sky. Normally, by this time the sun would have long risen. However, the sky remained dark that day, large dark clouds were blocking the sunlight making the Earth seem abnormally

gloomy. Gusts of cold wind blew, making Ah Dai shiver uncontrollably, who was standing beside Owen. Ah Dai suddenly had an ominous feeling, but he did not know how to express that feeling.

Owen frowned and said, “What is going on today, why is the sky so dark?”

Ah Dai replied, “Yeah! There is a heavy feeling in my heart, and my body feels uncomfortable. Uncle, is anything bad going to happen? Ah! Uncle, quickly look at the sky, why did the dark clouds in the sky suddenly turn red?”

Owen had a shock as he looked at the sky. Indeed, the original gray colored clouds were gradually turning red. This strange phenomenon seemed to make him recall something. Suddenly, the blood-red clouds slowly faded, and the sun appeared in the middle of the sky. Its original dazzling gold radiance had become a demonic blood-red glow, dying the Earth in a bloody color. Owen involuntarily cried out, “The blood sun has arrived.”

Ah Dai asked in confusion, “Uncle, what is the blood sun?”

Owen merely shook his head, and did not reply, but there was an indescribable strange feeling in his heart. He had only heard of the blood sun, it was a phenomenon that only appeared once in a thousand years, and the day that it arrived, would be a day when the evil qi was the strongest. The domineering evil energy flooded his body, and Owen immediately touched his chest, circulating his true qi to suppress the evil energy. He said, “Ah Dai, Uncle needs to meditate for a while. It is best that you don’t go out, just stay at

home and practise your magic. From tonight onwards, the number of cycles that you need to circulate is increased to nine." After he finished instructing Ah Dai, Owen returned to his room. He needed to cultivate the Boundless Life Art immediately, in order to suppress the rampant evil qi.

Holy Church, Cathedral.

Four red-cloaked people were standing on the four platforms in the middle of the hall. They were the four crimson-robed bishops who were in charge of handling the affairs of the Holy Church. In the middle of the four platforms, there was a skinny, white-haired old man, one of his hands was placed over his left chest, while the other hand was pressed against his forehead. He was wearing a golden robe and a gold crown was placed on his head, seeming very regal. Surrounding the platforms, were twelve ivory-robed bishops who were currently sitting cross-legged on the ground. Constant incantations sounded from the hall, and holy energy continuously dispersed out from the cathedral.

Outside of the cathedral, there was a total of one thousand and eight hundred intermediate priests and high priests who were chanting the same incantations. The prayers resounded through the sky, creating a sacred atmosphere around the cathedral. The waves of holy energy shot towards the sky, a stark contrast to the evil energy emanating from the blood sun. Under the constant chants, faint red colored drops of rain fell down from the sky. It was just a drizzle, but it dyed the white colored robes of the priests red.

Inside the cathedral, the chants stopped, and the old man in the middle of the platform sighed, “Blood sun looming, evil rampaging, blood rain falling, calamity descends. It looks like, the will of the Heavens cannot be defied!”

One of the crimson-robed bishops said, “Your Eminence, we have tried our best. Ten years later, when the calamity descends, as long as we can get through it successfully, the thousand year great tribulation will be over.”

The golden-robed old man nodded, “From now on, command all of the priests to enter the preparation period. At the same time, the four of you need to start preparing, and start the plan. The Thousand Year Great Tribulation concerns the whole of the continent. According to the records of the Holy Church, the previous Thousand Year Great Tribulation had already caused immense destruction. Hopefully, we can survive this calamity. As long as we manage to find the savior, we can have a better chance of surviving this, therefore the four of you need to find the savior’s whereabouts as soon as possible.” He sighed secretly in his heart, *It was because of the previous Thousand Year Great Tribulation, that the Holy Church was established. The calamity that befell the continent caused numerous casualties. It was at the last moment, that a deity was born into the world to be the savior of the continent. He finally succeeded in purging the evil forces, and the day that the evil was banished, was the first day of the Holy Calendar. The savior became the first Supreme Pontiff of the Holy Church. However, before he passed away, he had predicted that the Thousand Year Great Tribulation would come again, and the blood sun signified that it was starting. Eleven years later, Year*

1000 of the Holy Calendar, the calamity would once again arrive. As the current Supreme Pontiff, he was unsure if he could successfully survive the calamity. It seemed that, he could only place his hopes on finding the new savior.

The four crimson-robed bishops bowed respectfully and said, “Yes, Your Eminence.”

The Supreme Pontiff glanced around, sighing, “May the Heavens bless you.” A light flashed as he disappeared from the middle of the platform. The four crimson-robed bishops executed their magic, and floated down. Suddenly, a girl wearing in a white dress and clad in jewels, who seemed to be around ten years old, ran into the hall and hugged a tall crimson-robed bishop, calling out, “Dad, Dad, what were you doing!”

That crimson-robed bishop was stunned for a moment, before hurriedly carrying the girl and speaking in a low voice, “Yue Yue, who let you in, didn’t we tell you to stay at home?”

Yue Yue pouted, “But you and Mom both went out, Yue Yue is bored by herself!”

The other three crimson-robed bishops had already left, and the twelve ivory-robed bishops also stood up. One of the ivory-robed bishops walked up, and carried Yue Yue over from the crimson-robed bishop’s hands, quietly saying, “Yue Yue, be a good girl, Mom will bring you home now.”

The crimson-robed bishop shook his head, he really had no idea how to handle his daughter.

.....

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 010: Advent of the Blood Sun, Part 2

Translator: KuroNeko

Editor: Samskor

I'm sure everyone will enjoy the ending of this chapter. – Sam.

Chapter 10: Advent of the Blood Sun (2)

The blood sun and the blood rain lasted for a whole day before gradually disappearing, and everything returned to normal. However, Ah Dai seemed depressed for the whole day and he did not even have the mood to practice his magic. For some unknown reason. His heart was always beating abnormally fast, as though something bad had happened. After the blood sun and blood rain and gone, did Owen finally awake from his cultivation. He had suppressed the evil energy for an entire day, thus he seemed extremely fatigued.

"Uncle, you have finished meditation?" Ah Dai asked, as he saw the pale-faced Owen walking out from the room.

Owen nodded, with a hint of fear in his voice, "Such a strong evil qi! It looks like, the legendary calamity is indeed arriving."

Ah Dai obviously did not understand what Owen was saying, as he said, "Today, Uncle Schiel came over, I told him you were sick and resting. Uncle Schiel said that all of the fishermen did not go out to sea and fish, so he wanted to ask you if you know the reason why."

“Okay, let’s go eat some food first. After eating, you can stay home and meditate. I will be going to your uncle Schiel’s house to pay a visit.”

The well-behaved Ah Dai nodded in acknowledgement, “ Okay, let’s eat.” The two of them ate some light foods, and Owen left the house while Ah Dai stayed at home by himself and started meditating.

The sudden change in the sky had left the masses panicking., some were rejoicing, some were worrying, but no one could tell exactly what the blood sun was. The commotion lasted for a few months before people finally calmed down. The four countries of the continent continuously tried to pacify the people, but there was still no explanations about the strange phenomenon from the Holy Church. After some time, the dissatisfaction with the Holy Church slowly started to grow. Only after one year of turmoil, did the influence of the blood sun and blood rain totally disappear. However, a strange atmosphere appeared on the continent.

Year 990, the fifth month of Holy Calendar, Ah Dai had already been at Sweetrock Town for one year and two months.

“Big brother Ah Dai, you have grown so much from the time you came.”

The thirteen year old Ah Dai looked at the little girl Xi Fei, who was younger than him by two years, and laughed, “Really? Recently, I’ve been eating more, it seems like I have grown a bit.” At thirteen years old, Ah Dai was already 1.6 meters tall, among the children of his age, he was considered to be one of the taller ones. In the past one year, apart from letting Ah Dai cultivate the Boundless Life Art,

Owen did not teach him any other martial arts. Therefore, Ah Dai was already able to understand the Suo language. As the six great tribes of the commonwealth had different dialects, Owen only taught Ah Dai the dialect of Sipho Tribe. Ah Dai trained extremely hard, and through his unremitting efforts, he managed to circulate 27 cycles every night. He had cultivated the Boundless Life Art to the second stage. Once, Ah Dai had asked Owen when he could finally leave, but Owen did not have a direct answer, and simply told him that there was much more needed to be learned. Currently, Owen had started teaching Ah Dai the language of the Holy Church. After all, it was the main language that everyone spoke, it was crucial that Ah Dai learned it. Today, after the lesson ended, Ah Dai and Schiel's three grandchildren were playing by the beach. After a year of cultivating the Boundless Life Art, Ah Dai was much stronger as compared to when he just left Ninuo City. Although he was not exactly handsome, his simple and honest behavior won the hearts of the townspeople.

[TN: difference between dialects & language -> it's like china's language is Chinese, but there are many different dialects of Chinese, eg. Cantonese, Hokkien, Hakka, etc]

"Big brother Ah Dai, let's go swim in the sea, okay?" Schiel's older grandson, the eight year old Xi Feng said. It was already the 5th month, and to the children living by the sea, it was suitable for them to swim. According to seniority, Ah Dai should have been their uncle, but due to the small age difference, they would always call him brother when there were no adults.

[TN: Owen & Schiel are "brothers, Ah Dai is Owen's "nephew", so

technically he is 2nd generation, but Schiel's grandchildren are 3rd generation, hence they need to call Ah Dai "uncle"]

Ah Dai was not very good at swimming, and could only swim a few rounds with Xi Fei's father's help. Thus, he hesitated before lowering his head and saying, "Y'all can go, I'm not good at swimming."

The four year old Xi Lei chimed in, "I want to go too!"

"No, you are still too young. You should go home, swimming is for the big kids like us, not for you." Xi Fei interrupted.

Xi Lei's eyes instantly became red, and he stretched out his hand, holding on to his sister's sleeve while crying, "Sister, sister, bring me along. Xi Lei will be very obedient."

Ah Dai crouched on the ground, hugging Xi Lei, "Xi Lei, be a good boy, the sea is too dangerous. You are still too young and cannot swim, I also cannot swim, let's stay behind and play with sand, okay?"

Looking at Ah Dai, Xi Lei agreed, "Okay, but big brother Ah Dai, you must build a huge sandcastle for me."

Ah Dai nodded, and told Xi Fei, "Little sister Fei Er, you can go with Little Feng, I will stay here and accompany Lei Lei. However, do not swim too far out, the sea is dangerous."

[TN: Fei Er, Little Feng, Lei Lei are like terms of endearment..?]

Xi Fei and her brother Xi Feng took off their coats, shouted in acknowledgement and dashed straight towards the sea. Since young,

they had learnt how to swim under their father's guidance, and the normal calm seas posed no problem for them. In just a short while, they had already disappeared into the waters. Meanwhile, Ah Dai and Xi Lei started playing with the sand, Ah Dai was very patient, playing happily with Xi Lei, who was only four years old.

Suddenly, a patch of dark clouds floated over the original clear skies. The winds started getting stronger, there were ripples over the calm sea surface as waves started forming.

Ah Dai stood up, staring into the distance but not catching any sign of the pair of siblings. He muttered, "Why are they not back yet, the waves are so big, it is very dangerous."

Xi Lei shook Ah Dai's arms and said, "Big brother Ah Dai, sister and brother will be fine."

The rain was pouring down, as gusts of cold air floated by the beach. Ah Dai worriedly walked closer to the shore, looking towards the distance, but he still could not find any trace of Xi Fei and Xi Feng. He turned around and shouted, "Lei Lei, it's raining, you go home first and tell your grandfather that sister Fei Er and Little Feng haven't come back, I'll wait for them here. Ask them to hurry over."

Xi Lei nodded and turned around, running towards the town. The winds became stronger, the waves became taller, but Xi Fei and Xi Feng were still nowhere to be found. The two of them were Ah Dai's good friends, and in Ah Dai's heart, they were already family to him. He walked towards the sea worriedly, letting the seawater splash against his pants.

No, I can't wait here any longer. What if Xi Fei and Xi Feng are in

danger, how can I face Uncle Schiel later! Thinking of this, Ah Dai immediately took off his clothes and jumped into the sea. He was not very good at swimming, but the Boundless Life Art caused his physique to become robust. He adjusted his breathing and struggled against the waves. In just a short while, he was washed to the deep parts of the sea by the waves, the shore was just a thin blurry line to him. While he swam, he continuously yelled out Xi Fei's and Xi Feng's names. However, his voice was totally covered by the raging waves, how could he find anyone in the endless sea. Until now, he did not realize that he himself was in danger.

As there were huge waves in the sea, Schiel's three sons had long anchored their boats and returned home. Just as they stepped into their house, they met Xi Lei who had went home to report. After hearing Xi Lei's words, they could not be bothered to rest, and immediately rushed to the beach.

Xi Lei shouted, "Father, look, isn't that brother and sister?" Indeed, Xi Fei and Xi Feng had just walked up to shore.

Xi Fei saw them and excitedly ran over, "Father, Second Uncle, Third Uncle, why have you come?"

Xi Fei's father, Xi Zhong, said with a deep voice, "You are too daring, how can you swim in such big waves? What if you get swept away by the sea?"

Sticking out her tongue, and pulling her father's hand, Xi Fei said softly, "Father, don't worry, me and brother Feng are good at swimming, how could anything happen to us? It's so fun playing in the waves! Just that it took us some time to return." Turning around

to her little brother, she asked, “Lei Lei, where is big brother Ah Dai? Aren’t you with him?”

Xi Lei was shocked and looked as his father, Xi Bai, asking, “Isn’t big brother Ah Dai waiting for you at the shore? Where is he?”

Xi Zhong looked at his two brothers, saying, “Everyone quickly look for Ah Dai, he surely would not have left Fei Er and Feng Er and went home by himself. He should be nearby.” Although that was what he had said, there was still an uneasy feeling in his heart. The beach was flat and there was nowhere to hide, if Ah Dai was nearby, they should have seen him long ago.

Suddenly, Xi Feng exclaimed, “Father, Uncles, look, isn’t that Ah Dai’s clothes?”

Xi Zhong, Xi Fa, Xi Bai, ran closer to take a look. Indeed, it was Ah Dai’s clothes that were lying on the beach, soaked from the rain. The three men looked at one another, and Xi Zhong said worriedly, “Not good, Ah Dai must have gone into the sea to search for them. This is bad, he is not very good at swimming, he might not be able to swim back. Number Three, quickly go and inform Uncle Owen. Number Two, let’s go into the sea and search for him.”

[TN: Xi Zhong is eldest, Xi Fa 2nd oldest, Xi Bai youngest of Schiel’s 3 sons (2nd generation); Xi Fei is Xi Zhong’s daughter, Xi Feng is Xi Fa’s son, Xi Lei is Xi Bai’s son (3rd generation) but tbh their names won’t be so important in later chapters xD]

At this moment, Ah Dai was unable to see the shore anymore. Under the dark clouds, the waves constantly bashed against his body. He swiped away the seawater on his face, anxiously look around, “Fei

Er, Little Feng, where are you?!" In his mind, he was only thinking about Xi Fei and Xi Feng's safety. A giant wave went by, causing Ah Dai to instantly drink mouthfuls of seawater, the bitter and salty taste left him extremely uncomfortable. As his strength slowly drained away, danger was fast approaching Ah Dai.

Ah Dai who was floating on the surface of the sea, suddenly felt immense pain coming from his feet, it seemed as though something had pricked his legs. Letting out a cry of pain, Ah Dai bent over, trying to feel his legs. He felt a slippery body, and there seemed to be a sharp spike on it, which was now deeply embedded into his leg. Fresh blood flowed from his body, surrounding him. Ah Dai used both hands to grab at that slippery body, and pulled it out from his leg with all his might. His whole right leg was numb, with blood continuously flowing out. Inhaling deeply, Ah Dai used the true qi in his body to seal his blood vessels, stopping the bleeding. The seawater relentlessly agitated the wound, causing Ah Dai to almost faint from the pain.

The slippery body in his hands suddenly started to violently wriggle, as though it wanted to escape. Ah Dai brought it closer to his face, and it actually turned out to be a two-feet long strange golden fish. Its whole body was radiating golden light, and it was different from the other fishes that Ah Dai had seen. It also had a shiny golden sharp mouth, the thing that had pierced Ah Dai's leg.

One hand grabbing at the strange fish's mouth and the other grabbing its tail, Ah Dai floated on the sea surface. Due to the blood loss, waves of dizziness struck him, along with countless waves battering against his body. The strange fish continued struggling, but

was unable to escape from Ah Dai's hands.

Ah Dai stared blankly at the strange fish, "You, why did you prick me? It was very painful!" The strange fish wriggled a few times, and the seawater on its body dripped on his eyelids, making it seem as though it was crying. Its two strange eyes that were shining with gold light looked sadly at Ah Dai, as if it was pleading to be spared.

The soft-hearted Ah Dai looked at it, and finally said, "I'll let you go, but you better not prick me again, and you cannot randomly prick other people next time." As he spoke, he let go of his hands, gently throwing the strange fish into the sea. The golden light flashed under the seawater, before disappearing.

Ah Dai carefully touched the wound on his leg, and continued shouting, "Fei Er, Little Feng, where are you? This is Ah Dai!" Only after shouting for a few times, his throat had become sore. Under the constant pounding from the waves, Ah Dai was slowly losing consciousness. Just as he was about to faint, a golden light flashed, the strange golden fish had returned. It used its mouth to nudge Ah Dai's body, there seemed to be something dangling on its mouth.

Ah Dai wiped away the seawater on his face, panting as he asked, "Is it for me?"

The strange fish seemed to have understood Ah Dai's words as it nodded. Ah Dai took the thing from its mouth, it was actually a white jade ring. From the surface, it seemed to be nothing out of the ordinary. Ah Dai blinked a few times, barely managing to put the ring on his index finger, before finally passing out.

At the shore, under Xi Bai's lead, Owen anxiously reached the

beach. The fierce waves constantly rushed up the shore, where Xi Fei, Xi Feng and Xi Lei stood nearby. Xi Fei and Xi Feng knew that they were in trouble, and lowered their heads, not making a sound. Worriedly, Owen asked, “Fei Er, have your father and your second uncle found Ah Dai?”

[EN: I hate this cliffhanger….]

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 011: The Strange Golden Fish, Part 1

Translator: KuroNeko

Editor: Samskor

Chapter 11: The Strange Golden Fish (1)

Xi Fei shook her head, saying, “Father, they haven’t returned. Grandpa Owen, it is our fault. If brother Feng and I didn’t go into the sea to swim, big brother Ah Dai would not have gone to find us.”

Owen was filled with worry, naturally he would not blame them, but his heart had long flown to the sea. After a year, the more he interacted with Ah Dai, the more Owen came to like the kind-natured child. Although it had already been a year, Ah Dai still continued to miss his teacher Gliss every day. The silver-tin bun was placed under his pillow, and he would stare at it every morning, muttering a few words. *Everything about Ah Dai was so innocent, child, you must not be in danger!* By this time, Ah Dai was already in the sea for around an hour.

Just then, two silhouettes came out from the sea, it was Xi Zhong and Xi Fa. Owen instantly rushed over, hurriedly asking, “Did you find Ah Dai?”

Xi Zhong and Xi Fa looked at each other, revealing expressions of guilt. Xi Zhong replied, “Uncle Owen, the waves are simply too big, we also didn’t dare to go too far in. I’m afraid Ah Dai was swept

away by the waves, we could not find him."

A cold glint flashed across Owen's eyes. If it was the old him, he would have killed all of them to vent his anger, but he could not do that now. He merely said, "You have tried your best, go home and tell this to Schiel. I'll try looking for Ah Dai again."

"Uncle Owen, I think it's too difficult, the waves are too big, with the addition of the rain, it really is too hard to find him!" Xi Fa persuaded.

Owen responded angrily, "No matter how hard it is I must try, Ah Dai is my only family, how can I just watch him die? All of you can go back first."

The three brothers were shocked, the usually suave Uncle Owen had suddenly become so irritable. The three of them each grabbed their own child, and walked towards the town. In this sort of weather, unless it was the Sipho Tribe's fleet of ships, normal fishing boats were unable to withstand the strong waves.

Owen took a deep breath, and circulated his true qi within his body, stabilizing the silver bead which was suppressing the poison. With a howl, he jumped into the air, towards the boundless sea. The jump of his, was at least 30 metres far. Without any hesitation, he lightly stepped on the crest of the wave, ascertained his direction, and leaped across the waves further into the sea. His true qi continuously circulated in his body, in just a short while, he already could not see the shore. If not for the Boundless Life Art, he would not have been able to support his constant depletion of true qi. It was really too difficult to find someone in the vast sea, Owen's true qi was

constantly decreasing but he still had not found any trace of Ah Dai.

Suddenly, a flash of gold light came from under the sea, leaping out of the sea surface. Following his instincts, Owen chased after the golden light. After five minutes, he finally saw Ah Dai who was floating on the sea. Immense joy spurred Owen on, as he shouted loudly, stretching out his right hand. A white light flashed, and Owen actually blocked a huge incoming wave. Waving his hand, he carried Ah Dai into his arms. With a touch, he found out that Ah Dai was not in danger, just that he had drank too much seawater.

Carefully carrying Ah Dai under his arms, Owen gathered his qi and quickly leaped towards the shore. The true qi inside his body circulated constantly, but it was no longer enough to support his rate of expenditure.The shore was just ahead, but Owen had only 50% of his true qi remaining. He could no longer continue using his true qi, if not the Matchless Holy Water's poison would act up again. Helplessly, he could only jump into the sea and continue swimming forward. Fortunately, he grew up near the sea, and he could still remember how to swim after all these years. After much effort, he finally succeeded in bringing Ah Dai back to shore.

"Big brother Owen." Schiel's voice sounded, he was anxiously waiting with his three sons near the shore. Once he saw that Owen had brought Ah Dai back, the four people immediately rushed over. Xi Zhong carried Ah Dai from Owen, while Xi Fa and Xi Bai supported Owen. It turned out that, the three brothers were afraid that their father would blame them in the future, thus they did not heed Owen's words, and told Schiel everything that had happened. Schiel was furious at his grandchildren, but did not have time to

lecture them, and instead rushed over to the sea with his three sons.

“Big brother Owen, how are you?” Schiel worriedly asked.

Owen was panting nonstop as he circulated the true qi within his body, slowly recovering. He had rescued Ah Dai at last, and he could finally relax. “Schiel, I’m fine, but Ah Dai has drunk quite a lot of seawater, Xi Zhong, quickly help him get the seawater out. Schiel, don’t blame the children, it isn’t really their fault, Ah Dai overestimated himself.”

Schiel glared at his three sons, scolding, “It’s all because of your children. Big brother Owen, let me support you back. Ah Dai is really such a kind child.”

……

Ah Dai slowly opened his eyes, his mouth was dry, his stomach felt empty and his body was devoid of energy, “I, am I dead?”

Owen’s voice sounded, “If I arrived just a bit later, I’m afraid that you would have drowned. You know you can’t swim well, yet you still want to save people, tsk! Quick, drink this ginger soup to drive out the chill.”

Gently, Owen helped Ah Dai sit up, and brought the ginger soup to his mouth. Ah Dai looked at Owen, and his eyes immediately turned red. Without bothering to drink the ginger soup, he tightly hugged Owen, crying out, “Uncle, Uncle, Ah Dai died, Ah Dai died.”

Owen’s eyes also turned red, he put down the ginger soup, and patted Ah Dai’s back, soothing, “Ah Dai did not die, uncle has already saved him from the sea. Come, drink some ginger soup first.”

Ah Dai loosened his hands while sobbing, and looked at Owen who was full of concern, “Uncle, am I really not dead?”

Smiling, Owen pinched Ah Dai’s arm and asked, “Does it hurt?”

Ah Dai let out a grin and nodded, “Yes.”

Owen laughed, “If it hurts, that’s good, it means that you can still feel it, therefore you are not dead. You really scared me, here, be good and drink some ginger soup, then go take a rest. Everything will be fine tomorrow.” He picked up the bowl of ginger soup, lightly blew at it, and slowly fed Ah Dai.

After a bowl of hot ginger soup, Ah Dai’s body instantly felt warmer. Looking at Owen’s concerned expression, Ah Dai’s heart also felt warmer. It was at this moment that he had truly liked the handsome-looking uncle.

Owen placed the bowl at one side, and helped Ah Dai lie down again. As he tucked in Ah Dai, he said, “Ah Dai, this time was really too dangerous. If not for the bountiful life force in you, you might really have died. Don’t be so rash next time, saving people is good, but you need the ability to do so.”

Ah Dai struggled to sit up, worriedly saying, “Uncle, Uncle, quickly save Fei Er and Little Feng. I haven’t found them in the sea, they must be in danger!”

Owen scolded, “You silly kid, how can you treat other people’s lives as more important than your own. They are better swimmers, and came back long ago. Quickly lie down.”

Once he heard that Xi Fei and Xi Feng were not in danger, Ah Dai

relaxed his breath and lied down on the bed, muttering, “That’s good, that’s good.”

“Oh right, Ah Dai, what happened to your leg? It seems to have been pierced by something sharp, even the muscles on your leg have been pierced through,” Owen asked.

Ah Dai replied, “It was a strange fish, … … “ He recounted the whole experience of meeting the strange fish and how he freed it.

Owen said in realisation, “No wonder, when I was finding you, there was a gold flash of light in the sea, and I followed it to you. That means, it was the strange fish that saved your life. What goes around comes around! Your kindness has saved your life.”

Ah Dai suddenly remembered something and raised his left hand, “Uncle look, this was what the strange fish gave me.”

Owen glanced at it, it was just a normal white jade ring. From its appearance, there seemed to be nothing amazing about it, but Owen could faintly sense that it contained something special. He carefully took off the ring from Ah Dai’s finger, the jade grew warm when it touched Owen’s hands. He circulated some true qi into the ring to inspect, there seemed to some energy that was constantly moving within the ring, removing Owen’s true qi. After looking at it for a long time, Owen finally placed the ring back on Ah Dai’s finger, “Keep this ring properly, it might have some use in the future.”

Ah Dai nodded, he quite liked the white jade ring.

“Go and sleep, you still can’t eat now, tomorrow Uncle will cook porridge for you.”

“But, Uncle, I haven’t cultivated today.” Since he came here, Ah Dai had never gone a night without mediating, he felt uncomfortable that he did not meditate for one day.

Owen smiled and said, “Forget it for today, you can’t rush while practising martial arts, we will see how tomorrow. Uncle is going to rest as well, in order to save you, I’m thoroughly exhausted.” As he finished speaking, he blew out the candle and walked out. The storm outside had stopped and Ah Dai was safe, there was a feeling of indescribable happiness in Owen’s heart.

After Owen had left, Ah Dai struggled to sit up. He accidentally touched the wound on his leg, causing him to feel waves of pain. Although he was stupid, he knew that Owen had high expectations of him. Uncle had treated him so well, so he could not disappoint Uncle. A year long of living together had made the kind Ah Dai forget his previous hatred of Owen. He took a deep breath, and started circulating what was left of his true qi.

It took a whole ten days of rest, before Ah Dai recovered. Apart from Xi Lei, Xi Fei and Xi Feng did not want to play with him anymore. The reason was that they got a harsh scolding from Schiel because of Ah Dai. Ah Dai was sad, but he could do nothing about it, therefore he spent all of his time training instead.

……..

The seasons passed, and another two years had passed. Ah Dai had already cultivated the Boundless Life Art to the Fourth Stage. Breaking through each stage of the Boundless Life Art was extremely difficult. If not for the Fruit of Rebirth that Ah Dai had

eaten, he was probably unable to reach this stage even after ten years. Although he had already reached the Fourth Stage, he still could not fully display its might. Owen had told Ah Dai that the Boundless Life Art needed to reach the Fifth Stage before there was a significant difference, and Owen had only reached that stage when he was 28. Despite that, Ah Dai could already transform his true qi into the dou qi outside of his body, and there was a faint white light surrounding his body every time he trained. The fifteen year old Ah Dai was around 1.8 metres tall, and even though he did not do any heavy labor, his body was still unusually sturdy. After three years, despite his few hours of meditation, he could already produce a blue flame with his flame spell. Once, he tried to secretly execute the fire meteor spell, the fireballs that he produced were almost 3 centimetres large, and all of the fireballs were blue. Each day, apart from cultivating and meditating, Owen would also explain some of the situations in the continent, as well as teach him the culture and customs of the various countries. Ah Dai had already mastered the Holy Church language to the extent that he was able to converse fluently with Owen. And in the two years, he had also learnt a bit of the Prosperous language. The dumb Ah Dai, had now mastered the four languages of the Holy Church, Heaven's Gold Empire, Prosperous Empire and the United Regions Commonwealth. This was because his memory had greatly improved after cultivating the Boundless Life Art for a long time.

[TN: Just to clarify, after cultivating the Boundless Life Art, the true qi in Owen and Ah Dai's bodies are "sheng sheng (life life) true qi" becoz of the art, but it sounds weird to translate it, so i just left it as true qi. So their true qi is special from other ppl's true qi because

they cultivated that art.]

Ah Dai would still think of Gliss often, missing his Teacher who was far away from him. However, the care that Owen showed him had also made him very touched, and he had long treated Owen as his real Uncle.

……

Spring, Year 992 of the Holy Calendar.

“Ah Dai, let’s go, Uncle will bring you somewhere. From today onwards, you will be learning new stuff.” Owen said in a strict voice to Ah Dai who had just eaten his breakfast.

Ah Dai was shocked for a moment, and asked, “Uncle, are you going to teach me that flying martial art?”

Owen let out a smile, and replied, “Uncle does not know how to fly, just that I can jump a bit higher. You can also do that in the future. After three years, your improvement was faster than my expectations. Originally, I thought that you would need five years to be at the stage where you are at now. Now that you have cultivated the Boundless Life Art to the Fourth Stage, your foundations are already stable, and you can continue in the next step of cultivation. What you need to do now, is to undergo physical and combat training. Uncle has already thought of an idea, and prepared it a few days ago. I will bring you there now.”

“Okay!” Ah Dai readily agreed. After three years of simply meditating and cultivating, even though Ah Dai had a strong willpower, it was still too simple and repetitive for him. With his

childish attitude, he was extremely willing to try something new.

Leaving their house by the sea, Owen brought Ah Dai towards the South, along the shoreline. After walking for half an hour, they finally arrived at a large area of rocks.

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 011: The Strange Golden Fish, Part 2

Translated by the one and only Kuroneko and edited by darklord

Enjoy the chapter and the minor cliff

Chapter 11: The Strange Golden Fish (2)

“Ah Dai, this is the place I found recently. The Heavens are really helping me, this place is extremely suitable for you to train. Let’s go up.” As he spoke, he wrapped his hand around Ah Dai’s waist, and lightly landed on one of the biggest rocks while carrying Ah Dai. The thunderous sounds of the waves breaking against the rocks could be heard, although it was a sunny day, the waves here were abnormally large.

“Ah Dai, there is a special spot amongst these rocks. It was formed naturally, and when the waves pass by other rocks, it will somehow form a huge surge of force. I have set up a large wooden pole for you, later, I will tie you to the pole and leave your arms free. Just follow the circulation method I taught you and turn your true qi into dou qi, using it to resist the force from the seawater. Try your best to not let it hit your body, understand? This way, it can help you train your body, as well as cultivate the Boundless Life Art. Look, it’s there.” As he spoke, he pointed to a spot some distance away.

Ah Dai looked towards where Owen had pointed at, and sure

enough, amidst the rocks, there was an empty spot. After the seawater had passed the other rocks, it would form into huge waves at that spot. The waves relentlessly bashed against the rocks, and after many years, a deep crater was formed near the rocks closest to the waves. Meanwhile, in the middle of the empty spot, there was a 1 metre-wide wooden pole sticking out of the ground. No matter how the waves crashed against it, the wooden pole remained sturdy and unmoving.

Ah Dai curiously asked, “Uncle, how did you put the wooden pole there?”

Owen let out a mysterious smile, “Beneath the seawater, there is also a large piece of rock. Uncle used his true qi to embed the wooden pole into the rock, naturally, it would be sturdy, Today is your first time, try your best. If you really can’t resist the waves, then you just have to let them rush over your body. After two hours, I will let you down.” As he spoke finish, Owen brought Ah Dai and jumped down. There was a bump in the middle of the wooden pole, just nice enough for Ah Dai to use as a footrest. Owen retrieved the rope that he prepared and started securing Ah Dai’s body to the wooden pole. At the same time, he was also repeatedly waving his palm towards his back, even though the force from the waves was strong, it was unable to reach them, halting 3 meters aways from them.

“Ah Dai, look carefully at what Uncle is doing, and slowly try for yourself later. After two hours, I will come and pick you up.” Owen said, as he hopped onto the wooden pole on one leg, and shot towards the air, landing on a nearby rock. After a few leaps, he disappeared from Ah Dai’s sight.

Boom, a large wave suddenly crashed against Ah Dai's body, he felt as though he had just been hit by something very heavy and instantly gulped down a huge mouthful of seawater. He had no time to adjust and immediately circulated his qi to his palm to strike out. Usually, Ah Dai had very few chances to use his dou qi, so he had hardly any experience. The dou qi he struck out was scattered and not gathered, it could only help to lessen the force of the seawater, but was unable to fully block it. Fortunately, the waves were not continuous, after a few large waves, it would take a while to accumulate the force for the next wave, giving Ah Dai some respite. Ah Dai's palms constantly struck out, and the wave was like an martial art expert, helping Ah Dai to practise executing his dou qi. To Ah Dai, the two hours seemed to drag on endlessly, although he could not block the seawater from hitting his body, he continued to strive on. Time and again, Ah Dai was almost knocked unconscious by the barrage of seawater, but he continued to persevere. Amidst the loud sounds, Ah Dai finally used up his last bit of true qi, and he could only stretch out his hand to block, letting the waves relentlessly rush past his body.

Owen did not actually leave, and he was hiding behind a rock observing Ah Dai's continued efforts in resisting the waves. Ah Dai's performance had clearly left him displeased, with Ah Dai's current stage of cultivation, he could have done much better. However, the way he executed his dou qi was incorrect, his comprehension skill was indeed lacking. Sighing, Owen stood up, standing on top of the wooden pole after a few leaps. He released the semi-conscious Ah

Dai from the ropes, lifting his shoulder and flew towards a nearby rock.

The sun was hanging high up in the middle of the sky. Owen placed Ah Dai on a flat surface and used a sucking force from his hands to make Ah Dai sit upright. He then placed his palms on Ah Dai's shoulders, circulating his dou qi into Ah Dai's body. With the external help, Ah Dai was instantly invigorated, and was more awake. Owen said in a serious tone, "Concentrate on circulating your qi, condense your qi in the dantian, then circulate it through your veins."

[TN: Another 4-worded terror sorry if the meaning wasn't expressed accurately.]

Ah Dai felt as though his body was falling apart, there was indescribable discomfort, and his limp body seemed to be unable to produce any force. With the warm flow of energy from Owen's palms, Ah Dai felt slightly better, and tried his best to gather the remaining energy in his body. With the help of Owen's true qi, he slowly entered the state of cultivation.

Ah Dai finally awoke in the afternoon, while Owen was guarding by his side all the time. The deafening sounds of the waves continuously sounded. "You're awake, go eat some food first." Owen said as he passed Ah Dai a basket of steamed buns and salted fish. After the few hours of cultivation, Ah Dai's true qi had mostly recovered, just that his body still felt sore, and his muscles felt so weak that he could not exert any force. Taking the basket, Ah Dai

wolfed down the food. Eating was Ah Dai's favorite activity and the best method to replenish his energy.

Owen waited till Ah Dai had finished eating, before saying, "Your performance today had made me really disappointed, do you know? With your current ability, you should well be able to endure for two hours, and should not be in such a pathetic state. Did you forget what I taught you? And where did your composure go? Did you forget everything after being hit by the wave? You wasted too much energy at the start. Furthermore, do you think that you can totally suppress the waves with at just your current standard? The dou qi that you gave out was too scattered, how can it withstand the force of the waves? If you had used a through point strike instead, you can at least block the waves hitting your body, and even save some energy. Carefully think through this, we will stop for today." As he finished speaking, Owen picked up the basket and left, without turning back.

Ah Dai sat alone on the rock, the aftertaste of the buns and salted fish was still in his mouth. Ever since he had arrived, Owen had hardly gotten angry at him, even if he had done something wrong, Owen would still patiently guide him. The sudden strictness, was a little hard for Ah Dai to take in. He held his head, muttering to himself, "It looks like, I am really too stupid. What is the meaning of a through point strike, is it to gather all the energy before releasing it?" Ah Dai continuously tried to understand the meaning of a through point strike, and returned home only late at night.

Owen had already prepared dinner. As soon as he saw Ah Dai return,

he told Ah Dai that he was going to see Uncle Schiel, and left.

Ah Dai knew that Owen was not truly angry at him, just that Owen could not express his disappointment. Ah Dai secretly vowed that he would work hard and meet Owen's expectations. After dinner, he did not waste any time, and did not even meditate, but started cultivation. While he was cultivating his true qi, he was also thinking about the meaning of the through point strike.

The next day morning, before the break of dawn, Ah Dai woke up. He quickly made breakfast, and then knocked on Owen's door, "Bang, bang, bang, Uncle, it's time to wake up, I've made breakfast."

Opening the door, Owen put on a coat and walked out, "Ah Dai, why did you wake up so early?"

Ah Dai replied, "Uncle, I did not meditate yesterday night, but immediately cultivated, thus I finished the 27 circulations earlier. Let's quickly eat breakfast, and go to the rock area, I want to try the through point strike that you mentioned."

Owen smiled and said, "Okay, let's eat first. Cultivation is not merely about working hard, comprehension is also important. Although hard work is important, it does not mean that you can become a top expert just based on effort alone. During your free time, you should try to think more about the application of dou qi, it will be very beneficial for you."

Ah Dai lowered his head, "Uncle, Ah Dai knows that he is stupid, but, I will definitely work hard, and not disappoint you."

Patting Ah Dai's shoulder, Owen said, "Okay, Uncle was not really angry at you yesterday. It was not your fault, after all, it was your first time doing this type of training. Does your body still hurt?"

"My shoulders are still slightly sore, but other than that, I'm much better," Ah Dai muttered.

Owen smiled, "If not for the recovery effect of the true qi that you cultivated with the Boundless Life Art, I think you won't be able to even wake up today. The sun is almost rising, let us eat first before we go."

Although it was already the fifth month, it was still cold at the beach in the early morning. The salty sea breeze blew across Ah Dai and Owen's bodies, Owen turned around and said to Ah Dai, "The weather is a little cold, can you bear it? Remember, only use 70% of the energy, and keep the remaining 30%. This way, before your first strike is completed, you will be able to conserve enough energy for your second strike, allowing you to continue the endless cycles."

Ah Dai was shocked, using 70% and keeping 30%, it was not what he had thought of yesterday! "Uncle, a through point strike, doesn't it mean to gather all of the energy, and condense it before releasing it? Why did it become 70% and 30%?"

Owen was also shocked, he never thought that Ah Dai would interpret it that way, however, Ah Dai's interpretation was also reasonable. Owen laughed and said, "What you have just said, is actually the earth-shattering strike, but not the through point strike. Ah Dai, you have improved, you have learnt how to think. Let Uncle

tell you, the through point strike and the earth-shattering

strike that you have said are actually quite similar. The only difference is that the through point strike doesn't require you to use all your energy. As long as the energy used can resolve the problem, it is enough. The similar part is that both of them require you to gather and condense the true qi, before expelling it out of your body, forming a indestructible column of dou qi."

Ah Dai still seemed a bit unsure as he looked at Owen, whilst scratching his head.

Owen continued, "Ah Dai, you must remember, you must not carelessly use the earth-shattering strike. Because, once all of your energy and potential is used up in one strike, you will be vulnerable for a period of time. If you are unable to kill all of your enemies in that strike, you will be at the mercy of them. Therefore, do not ever use the earth-shattering strike unless it is your last resort, understand?"
At this moment, they had arrived at the rock area, where the wind was obviously stronger. Ah Dai said, "Uncle, let us go down now. Just tie me to the usual spot, and I will try."

Owen shook his head and replied, "The wind is too big, and the water is very cold in the morning. How about this, show me the earth-shattering strike that you thought of yesterday." The day before, Owen had already noticed that Ah Dai was deep in his thoughts, but the reason why he ignored Ah Dai was because he wanted to give Ah Dai space to think. Today, it was time for Ah Dai to test the outcomes of his ideas.

Ah Dai asked, “Uncle, but didn’t you say that the earth-shattering strike was useless? Why do you still want me to practise it?”

Smiling, Owen answered, “It is not useless, the basis for the through point strike is the earth-shattering strike, just that they have a difference in the amount of dou qi used. Display the earth-shattering strike one time for Uncle to see, then I will help to correct you.”

“Use all of your strength, your Boundless Life Art has already reached the Fourth Stage, it will display a certain power. Your target is this rock in front of you.” As he spoke, Owen pointed towards an average sized rock in front of them. It was about 3 metres away from them, and behind it, was the vast sea.

Ah Dai nodded, and walked forward a few steps, to the edge of his current rock. He recalled the idea that he had thought of, took a deep breath, closed his eyes, and started circulating the true qi within him.

A faint white colored light surrounded Ah Dai’s body, as he got into a horse stance, with his fists by his sides. Using his spiritual power, he slowly controlled the the dou qi within his dantian, gathering it into his right fist. Under his desperate efforts, the true qi inside of him continuously gathered, and the white light surrounding him suddenly converged. Owen who was standing by the side, could clearly see that the true qi within Ah Dai was already circulated to his chest, and was moving towards the direction of his right fist.

Ah Dai’s right fist started to light up, all of the true qi was gathered within his fist. He took a deep breath, and used his spiritual power to forcefully condense the true qi in his fist. The light became

dimmer, but Owen was shocked to find out that Ah Dai's right fist seemed to have an explosive power.

Related

Chapter 012: Danger of Death, Part 1

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Have fun reading!

*[TN: update, I've changed the names of the 3 basic sword stances from (slash, slice and stab) to (cleave, pick, and stab)]

Chapter 12 : Danger of Death (1)

"Ah Dai, quickly stop!" Owen cried out, if Ah Dai continued, the true qi would be compressed too much, and there was a chance of his hand exploding.

However, Ah Dai was already unable to stop. After his true qi was condensed, it was no longer the gentle energy circulating within his body. His eyes widened as he shouted, "AH——" His right fist suddenly shot towards the rock, and a beam of white light that was around 5 centimetres in diameter shot out. Immediately after, Ah Dai collapsed onto the ground, his body was limp.

"Boom, boom—" The two loud bangs made Owen dumbfounded, even if Ah Dai could smash the rock into powder, he would not be this shocked. However, the sight before him was really unbelievable. There was a hole in the middle of the average-sized rock, caused by the dou qi that Ah Dai emitted. The dou qi had passed through the rock, and hit heavily against the surface of the sea, causing a water

column of almost 10 metres to appear. However, there were no signs of cracks around the area where the rock had been penetrated, showing how concentrated the attack was.

Owen stood dumbfoundedly, only reacting after a long time. The strike that Ah Dai executed just now had already reached 50% of Owen's strength, which is to say, the dou qi that Ah Dai had released, was 200% of his own standard. *Ah!* Owen walked up and hugged Ah Dai in his arms, then stretched out his right hand and placed in on Ah Dai's dantian, checking his current condition. Ah Dai's dantian was surprisingly empty, not even a sliver of dou qi was left. His whole body was limp, clearly a sign of overexertion. Owen bitterly laughed, "He really used all of his qi in this earth-shattering strike! This kid, has—"

Carrying Ah Dai, Owen continuously channeled his true qi into Ah Dai's body. After a while, Ah Dai slowly woke up. When he was executing the earth-shattering strike, he felt as though his body was sucked dry, the explosive force from the compressed dou qi had taken away all of his energy.

"Uncle, was my earth-shattering strike successful?"

Owen forced a smile and nodded, "You are too reckless. If you were attacking enemies instead, I'm afraid you will not be able to recover, even after a week. 200%, that is a frightening power! Ah Dai, how did you compress the dou qi, but not let it explode?"

Ah Dai replied, "I don't know either. Yesterday I was thinking about the through point strike that you mentioned, and I thought that it would be better to compress the energy to the smallest possible.

Therefore, I tried my best to compress my true qi, and execute it like dou qi. After that, I don't know what happened. Can true qi explode too?"

"Of course, when true qi is too concentrated, the powerful energy will explode. There was even a case where an expert had died from compressing the true qi within his body. Perhaps, the spiritual power from your meditation, coupled with the Fruit of Rebirth, have saved you this time. In the future, unless there is no other choice, you must never do this again, it's too dangerous."

Ah Dai nodded, "Uncle, my body feels empty, it's so uncomfortable! Didn't you say that there will be an endless supply of true qi when cultivating the Boundless Life Art? How come I've used up all of it, and there's no more?"

Owen snapped back, "Even though it's endless, it still requires a source to supply. Even your source has been used up, how will your true qi be able to replenish? Let's go back, I'll help you recover your energy first."

Even though Owen had used the same source of true qi to help Ah Dai cultivate, it still took a full two day's worth of effort, before Ah Dai finally recovered to his initial state. In the two days, Owen had advised Ah Dai on the methods of cultivation, as well as how to execute the dou qi to the greatest effect and efficiency.

"Your energy has recovered, today you shall go up onto the wooden pole again. Remember what I've taught you, use 70% and keep 30%. Be careful not to use the earth-shattering strike again. Overexertion will not be beneficial towards your future cultivation."

Ah Dai was also fearful, as it took two whole days before the true qi within him could recover to its initial state.

The days passed by as Ah Dai continued his practicing through point strike. He had found the correct method, the impact of the waves was no longer a threat to him, instead it helped him to improve rapidly. After 3 months, he could endure for a whole afternoon, not letting the waves hit his body. His body also became sturdier with each day of fighting against the waves, there was a healthy bronzed glow on his skin, a stark difference from his original fair skin, and a sharp, cold glint would occasionally flash across his eyes.

Owen stood on a rock, looking pleased as Ah Dai continuously fought back the waves with his punches. He nodded in satisfaction, and muttered, “His progress is really fast! Although the Fruit of Rebirth has an extraordinary effect, this kid has indeed worked hard as well.” The hard work needed to withstand the waves was not what normal people could imagine. Ah Dai had stopped learning knowledge, and only spent all of his time fighting against the waves, meditating and cultivating. However, he had never once complained.

In the afternoon, Owen untied Ah Dai from the wooden pole. After they had eaten,just as Ah Dai was about to return to the wooden pole, Owen stopped him. “We will begin the next lesson, your dou qi execution is already quite good.” As he spoke, he grabbed Ah Dai’s slender arms, “Do you know, the form of your hands are better than Uncle’s? Most of my martial arts are related to the sword. From today onwards, you will need to experience the features of the sword. I have nothing to teach you in this aspect, you will need to experience it for yourself. Only after you can become true friends

with the sword, will you be able to unleash its true power." He retrieved the huge broadsword behind the rocks, which he had hidden when they first arrived. As it was unused for a few years, it was covered with rust.

[TN: so apparently, Owen had 2 swords, one was the Hell's Sword, and the other was the broadsword from his school Q~Q]

"Old buddy! You must be lonely. " Owen looked at the broadsword in his hands with misty eyes. The sword had accompanied him for 30 years! He held the sword in one hand, and the other hand was radiating white colored true qi. He guided the white light towards the sword, instantly removing the rust on the sword, revealing a glimmering sword.

"Ah Dai, this broadsword had accompanied me for 30 years, from today onwards, it will be your partner. It is five feet six in length, the hilt is one feet two, the blade four feet four; its maximum width is half a foot, the thickest part is three feet, and it weighs 76 kilograms. Its name is TianGang Sword."

Ah Dai was shocked, "76 kilograms? Uncle, did you say wrongly?" Even the town blacksmith's hammer weighed only 20 kilograms.

Owen lifted up the sword, and with just the quiver of his finger, he caused the sword to create an afterimage. The 76 kilogram sword seemed like a light feather in his hands. Placing the sword in front of him, he sighed while stroking the blade of the sword, "Is it very

heavy? Perhaps, at the start you may think so, but once you have become one with the sword, you will no longer feel its weight."

Ah Dai looked at the TianGang Sword that was even taller than him, his heart filled with excitement as he walked up and asked, "Uncle, can I try it?"

Owen curled his fingers around the hilt, pointing the sharp end of the sword downwards, and passed the sword over. As Ah Dai grabbed hold of the hilt, Owen loosened his grip, and Ah Dai felt a sudden heaviness. Although he had mentally prepared himself, he did not grab the sword tight enough, and the sharp edge of the sword instantly sunk into the ground, causing a loud sound. Owen chided, "Silly kid, did you cultivate the Boundless Life Art for naught? Use qi to wield the sword."

Ah Dai stuck out his tongue, as he took a deep breath and started circulating the true qi within his body, causing a white glow to emanate from his body. With both of his hands, he gripped the hilt of the sword tightly, and instantly lifted the TianGang Sword. Under the help of the true qi, the sword indeed felt lighter. However, he still could not wield it with ease, if not for his constant training of using dou qi, he might not have been able to even lift it. Owen said in a low voice, "Guide your qi in your dantian, steady your feet and circulate the true qi to your waist. From waist to back, from back to shoulder, from shoulder to arm, from arm to elbow, from elbow to wrist, from wrist to hand, from hand to finger. This is the foundation of using the sword. There are 36 moves in the TianGang Sword Technique, however they are very complicated. I'm afraid that you won't be able to remember them, so I've simplified them into 9

moves. Look, this is the first move, Rainbow Through the Sun."

There was a blur in front of Ah Dai's eyes, and his hands suddenly felt lighter. In just a moment, the TianGang Sword was already in Owen's hands. Owen's body flashed in the air, as he became one with the sword, dashing out. The TianGang Sword was surrounded with the white glow, and there was an indomitable aura around it. When he landed, Owen asked, "Did you observe it carefully? It may seem easy, but it requires your hands, eyes and heart to be coordinated. How about this, you don't need to practise the sword technique now. Today, you will just practise the three basic sword stances, cleave, pick and stab." He described the main points of the three stances, and passed the TianGang Sword to Ah Dai before he left.

"I cleave, I cleave!" When the sun had finally set, Ah Dai had already practised to the point that his whole body was sore. Although it was just three simple stances, he could not seem to find the correct feeling.

"How was your training?" Owen suddenly appeared on the rock, whilst holding a tree branch.

Ah Dai scratched his head and replied, "I don't know how to put it, but it just feels different from what you have demonstrated."

Owen took a look at the sword marks on the rocks, and shook his head, "Slashing requires an imposing power. Although you can only use 70% of your power and keep the remaining 30% for the next move, you need to display the dominance over your opponents. Look." As he spoke, he raised the tree branch high above his head.

The surrounding wind seemed to have stopped moving, no longer blowing across Ah Dai's body. An abnormally strong pressure forced Ah Dai back a few steps, as he looked in shock at the tree branch in Owen's hands.

The pressure suddenly disappeared, causing Ah Dai's body to feel light. "Did you look carefully? Now, use your sword to slash towards me, as long as you can make both of my feet leave the ground, you will have succeeded," said Owen.

Ah Dai nodded, and copied Owen's movements, his hands lifting the TianGang Sword into the air. He let out a warning to Owen as he channelled dou qi into the sword, slashing the sword downwards. Although his strike did not have the dominance of Owen's, there was still a faint radiance emanating from the TianGang Sword.

Owen let out a pleased smile. Just as the sword was about to hit him, he used the tree branch to gently slice towards the sword, directing it away. Ah Dai felt that the sword in his hands had suddenly become heavier, as it slashed downwards, with almost half of the blade sinking into the ground.

Owen said, "Dou qi needs to either be conserved or suddenly released. If you had not released all of your dou qi just now, I would not have been able to deflect it so easily. Again."

Just like this, the pair of old and young started to train on the rocks. The endless true qi continuously supported Ah Dai in wielding the sword. It was at night when Ah Dai could finally force Owen to defend against him. Although he was unable to force back Owen, Owen was still pleased with the results. In order to let Ah Dai better

grasp the essence of the sword and to understand its meaning, Owen continued to tie Ah Dai on the wooden pole. However, the difference was that Ah Dai had to use the TianGang Sword to slash apart the waves. Time flew by, and in the blink of an eye, Ah Dai and Owen had already lived in Sweetrock Town for six years.

On top of the rock, a light constantly flashed. It was Ah Dai, who was practising the TianGang Sword Technique. In the continent, the 36 moves of the TianGang Sword Technique was considered to be one of the most widespread sword arts. Its power was not very great, but it was extremely useful for large-scale fights, making it suitable for the battlefield. Although Owen had simplified it for Ah Dai, the power of the technique did not lessen. After a long period of training, Ah Dai was already skilled in using his dou qi to control the TianGang Sword. Due to his earlier years of establishing a strong foundation for his dou qi, Ah Dai was now able to learn other stuff in a much shorter time. In the three years, Owen had imparted his whole lifetime of skills to Ah Dai. Ah Dai might be a little dumb, but his hard work had paid off. His Boundless Life Art was almost at the Fifth Stage, and there was huge improvement in his body and sword techniques. When facing Owen who was wielding a tree branch, he could at least withstand ten moves without defeat.

Owen stood by the side, looking at Ah Dai who was practising the sword, and revealed a satisfied expression. After Ah Dai's Boundless Life Art had broken through to the Fifth Stage, he would be able to learn the secret techniques. The eighteen year old Ah Dai was almost the same height as Owen, and his shoulders were broad. Apart from his youthful face, he seemed almost like an adult.

“Okay, Ah Dai, come back,” Owen shouted loudly.

Ah Dai used his qi to lighten himself, and landed beside Owen whilst holding his sword, “Uncle, are we going to learn something new today?”

Owen smiled, shaking his head, “In this few years, you have already learnt most of the basics, Uncle is very pleased with that. After some time, when your Boundless Life Art has reached the Fifth Stage, Uncle will teach you the infamous Hell’s Sword Technique. That is my true ability! Let’s go, your Uncle Schiel came over today morning, inviting us to a crab meal. You are going to enjoy yourself.”

Once food was mentioned, Ah Dai was still like a child, his eyes glistened with excitement, and he laughed, “Okay! Ah Dai loves to eat crabs!”

The two of them laughed and chatted on the way back to Sweetrock Town, while the TianGang Sword was left amidst the rocks as usual. Although Schiel and his family were very close to Owen, Schiel still did not know that Owen and Ah Dai had practised martial arts. Owen had only told them that Ah Dai had grown up, and was working in the shipyard.

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 012: Danger of Death, Part 2

Translator: KuroNeko

Editor: JerryDaBaws

Enjoy! ~Jerry

1Chapter 12: Danger of Death (2)

“Grandpa Owen, you’ve arrived, please come in.” The sixteen year old Xi Fei warmly received Owen and Ah Dai into the house. At sixteen years old, she had already grown to become a young lady, being dubbed the prettiest lady in SweetRock Town. Xi Fei glanced at Ah Dai, blushing as she turned to call her grandfather.

“Big brother, you’ve come, let us brothers drink heartily today.”

Owen laughed, replying, “Of course, I was still afraid you wouldn’t be up for it. That time we drank, you still lost to me! Where’s Zhong, Fa and Bai? I don’t see the three of them.”

Schiel smiled and said, “The weather was good today, so they went out with their wives to fish. Perhaps they will only return at night. Fei Fei, go and serve the crabs and the dishes.”

“Ay—” Xi Fei responded then went into the kitchen with her younger brothers, Xi Feng and Xi Lei.

“Big brother, our little lass’ cooking skills have improved, her mom lazing around everyday with all of the cooking now being done by her,” Schiel praised.

Owen nodded, “Yeah, she’s all grown up now, whoever marries her sure is fortunate.”

Schiel moved closer to Owen and said, “Big brother, the reason why I’ve called you over today, is to discuss Fei Er’s marriage! You must help to matchmake.”

Shocked, Owen asked, “Why, do you have someone in mind?”

Schiel glanced at Ah Dai, “I’ve watched Ah Dai this kid grow up, he’s kind and honest, unlike the other foolhardy kids in town. I can only be at ease marrying Xi Fei to Ah Dai! How does that sound? Big brother, if my Fei Er marries Ah Dai, it will be his fortune, haha.”

Owen was surprised as he looked at Ah Dai who was in a daze, “Brother, they are of different seniority and not to mention, they are still young, we should discuss this a few years later.”

Schiel laughed and said, “We’re all from the neighbourhood. Everyone minds their own business and no one will gossip. The two of them, one is eighteen and the other sixteen, they can’t be considered young anymore. Why? Is my Fei Fei not good enough for Ah Dai? Ah Dai, tell me, do you like Fei Er?”

[TN: Fei Fei and Fei Er are just pet names for Xi Fei]

In Ah Dai’s mind, he suddenly recalled Yatou’s appearance.

“Big brother Ah Dai, wait till I grow up, then I’ll marry you, okay?”

“From now on, I, Yatou, will be Ah Dai’s fiancee. You must treat me well in the future.”

Ah Dai's mind was filled with thoughts of Yatou, and he only replied after Schiel had called out a few times. "Ah, Uncle Schiel, what did you say?"

Schiel grumpily said, "Little kid, what were you thinking about so intently, let me ask you, do you like Fei Fei?"

Nodding, Ah Dai replied, "Yes! Sister Fei Er is a very good girl."

Schiel looked towards Owen in satisfaction, "Look, you see, even the children have agreed, my Fei Fei is also okay with it. Ah Dai, if Fei Er marries you, you must treat her well, okay?"

Owen furrowed his brows, Ah Dai was currently at an important juncture of his training, how could he have the time to marry? Not to mention, there were so many things that Ah Dai needed to do. However, Schiel's family had always took good care of the two of them, so how could he reject Schiel's well intentions.

Just as Owen was conflicted about his decision, Ah Dai suddenly shook his head, saying, "No, no, Uncle Schiel, I can't do this!"

"Why not?" Schiel glared at Ah Dai.

Ah Dai lowered his head and muttered, "I, I already have a fiancee."

That one sentence caused both Schiel and Owen to be stunned. Owen had never heard Ah Dai mention that he had a fiancee.

"Clink—" Xi Fei who had just walked out of the kitchen dropped the plate of steaming hot crabs after hearing Ah Dai's words. Her eyes were red as she stared at Ah Dai, crying out, "Ah Dai, I hate you!" She turned around and ran back to her room while covering

her face. It turned out that Xi Fei had originally ignored Ah Dai as she was reprimanded by her grandfather for almost causing Ah Dai to drown. However, as time passed, Xi Fei had long forgotten that incident. Slowly, she began to like the tall and plain Ah Dai, so she asked her grandfather Schiel to talk to Owen. But due to Schiel's rash character, and adding on the fact that Xi Fei really liked Ah Dai, he proposed the marriage, causing the scene just now.

Owen pulled Ah Dai to the side, sighing, "Brother, I'm really sorry, Ah Dai was indeed engaged since young. Hais—, it was Ah Dai that did not have the good fortune. We will leave first." As he spoke, he dragged the ignorant Ah Dai and left Schiel's house. After hearing Ah Dai's words, Schiel was too mortified to even send them off, and just let them leave.

Outside of the room, Owen finally released the breath that he was holding, and spoke softly to Ah Dai, "You little kid, when did you learn to lie? But good thing it was at the right moment, if not, Schiel would really marry his granddaughter to you. Ah Dai, was Uncle too selfish?'

Shaking his head, Ah Dai replied, "How can Uncle be selfish? Ah Dai is so dumb, I won't be able to take good care of Sister Fei Er. Also, Ah Dai did not lie, I really have a fiancee."

Under Owen's inquiry, Ah Dai recounted the story of him and Yatou.

Owen laughed, "So it was like this! I'd have never imagined that there are quite some people who will like such a silly kid like you. However, as a man, you must first have some accomplishments before you start a family, do you understand? Ah—, Uncle will have

to rely on you to avenge my blood feud."

Ah Dai was shocked, and asked, "Uncle, what feud do you have? With your martial art and strength, can't you take revenge?" Ah Dai knew deep in his heart, although he had been learning from Owen for 5 years, if Owen had used all of his power to attack, he would not be able to even take one hit. Furthermore, the evil skill that Owen had used back in the illusionary forest, was engraved into his mind, that was a force to be reckoned with!

A cold glint flashed across Owen's eyes as he said, "Now it's still not the time for you to know. My enemies are strong to the extent that you will not be able to fathom it. If I was not poisoned by the Matchless Holy Water then perhaps I could still have a chance to go all out. However, in my current condition, I simply have no hope of defeating them. Child, Uncle shall place my hopes on you, to fulfill this wish."

While the two of them chatted, they soon arrived at their house. Suddenly, there was a change in Owen's expression as he grabbed Ah Dai, and shouted out, "Who's there, come out now."

A sinister voice rang out from the courtyard, "En, you're indeed worthy of the title, "King of Hell". We were already very careful, but you still discovered us." The shadows flickered, and suddenly, 7 men who were fully clothed in black appeared in front of Owen and Ah Dai. Each of them were holding a narrow sword in their hands, with their cold gazes fixed on Owen.

Ah Dai got a shock as he realised that, the attires of the 7 men seemed to be exactly the same as the people who were chasing

Owen, back in the illusionary forest. The only difference was that this time, the person in the middle had a small golden skull on his chest, and the other six men had a fist-sized silver skull on their chests.

Owen gasped, “Vice leader, Y assassination group.”

The middle person let out a cold sneer, “So the top assassin recognises us. You are indeed quite formidable, to be able to last till now even after getting poisoned by the Matchless Holy Water. Obediently follow us back. You ought to know, even without being poisoned, you still might not be able to contend with us. We have really searched for you for a long time!”

There was a conflicted expression on Owen. After a long while, he took a glance at Ah Dai, and sighed, “You are quite formidable yourselves, even finding me here. I can follow you back, however, this child does not know anything, I hope you can let him go.” At this moment, Owen was already in despair. He was very certain of the Y assassination group’s power, not to mention, even the unfathomable vice leader was present. His only hope now, was to keep Ah Dai safe. However, in front of these merciless assassins, it was an extremely difficult task!

The vice leader looked at Ah Dai, “ ‘King of Hell’, you should know the organisation’s rules better than me.”

Owen snapped back, “Vice leader, don’t push me too far.” His hand reached towards his right chest as his dou qi started emanating from his body.

The vice leader only let out a cold laugh, “King of Hell, are you

really able to use the Hell's Sword? I'd like to see you try."

Turning his head towards Ah Dai, Owen warned, "Faster leave, go to somewhere far away. Go back and see your teacher."

Ah Dai said with determination, "No, Uncle, if we must die, let us die together, I will definitely not abandon you."

Owen's heart was filled with anxiety, but he was clear of Ah Dai's character. He let out a smile and said, "Okay then, stay at the side and look at how Uncle will kill this bunch of bastards." He extended his left hand and used his dou qi to gently push Ah Dai away. His eyes flashed a cold glint as dense killing intent surrounded him. He understood that to have a chance of survival he had to risk it alll. The evil qi that had not been seen for six years suddenly surged out from Owen's chest, and covered the 7 men in front of him.

Shock flashed across the vice leader's eyes as he said in a low voice, "Owen, are you really going to resist to the end? Okay then, I'd like to see how many moves you can execute with the Hell's Sword. Attack!" Under his command, the six Y assassination group members brandished their narrow swords, and like six venomous snakes, they flew towards Owen from various angles.

Unexpectedly, Owen did not block the attacks, and simply lightly dodged to the side, following the sword qi, like a falling leaf. However, the opponent he was facing was the one of the top assassins of the Assassins Guild. Even though he had avoided the frontal attack, there were still scratches on his shoulder and legs.

The sky seemed to have darkened as the evil qi continuously increased, and the six Y assassination members attacked non-stop,

causing Owen's injuries to increase. In just a short while, he was covered in blood. If not for the fact that the assassins had to spend much of their energy to resist the evil qi, Owen would have perished long ago.

Ah Dai who was watching intently by the side, could no longer help it, and dashed towards the group of men. His right fist extended, and a gust of white colored dou qi surged out, hitting one of the black-robed men.

That black-robed man did not even turn his head as he stabbed out with his sword. A red glow flashed and the dou qi that Ah Dai had released instantly disappeared. The narrow sword was like a venomous snake as it struck towards Ah Dai's lower abdomen. Ah Dai had no time no dodge and could only stare as the sword pierced towards himself. He had finally realised the vast difference in strength between him and the men in front of him, but it was too late. Just as he closed his eyes in preparation for death, Owen suddenly blocked in front of him. With a kick, the narrow sword was pushed aside, yet it still left a wound on Ah Dai's lower abdomen. Owen had also paid the price for his action, his left shoulder was pierced through by another assassin.

Owen let out a howl as the evil energy burst out, leaving a faint blue glow on his chest. The six assassins took the chance and simultaneously attacked. Owen kicked Ah Dai away, as he roared, "Don't come over, I'll take care of this!"

The surrounding air had actually turned gray due to the dense evil energy, and Owen's white shirt was stained in red. Amidst the gray-black air, he seemed like an evil spirit. "Do you really think that the

Y assassination group is that great? In the eyes of the “King of Hell”, you are only the dogs of that bastard. Let me show you what is the true power of death! Hell’s Sword, Heaven Splitting — Earth —— Crasher ——!” The eerie blue light that seemed to have come directly from hell once again appeared from Owen’s chest. All of the evil qi in the air instantly gathered within the blue light. Ablood-curdling scream rang out as one of the Y group assassins collapsed onto the ground. There was a small hole in the middle of his brows and his body started to shrivel. However, Owen did not stop here, his silhouette flashed, along with the eerie blue light. “Hell’s Sword, Ghost and God — Terrorizer—!” The eerie blue light split into streaks of light and two more screams rang out. Another two assassins had fallen. The eerie blue light emitted shrieks of delight after it had absorbed the blood essence of the two men and its blue glow instantly spreaded out.

[TN: I’ve used the manhua’s translation for the skill names. But the direct translation is : King of Hell’s first flash (冥王一闪) and King of Hell’s second flash (冥王再闪). Basically the skills are in order, [Heaven splitting earth crasher] is the first move, and [Ghost and god terrorizer] is the second move. There may/will be more moves in the Hell’s Sword Techniques later on.]

*P.S. Next chapter is like super duper long T~T gonna take longer to translate… ;w;

Related

Chapter 013: Hell Sword Nine Techniques

Translator: KuroNeko

Editor: Samskor

Enjoy this super long/ info-loaded chapter :3

Chapter 13: Hell's Sword Nine Techniques (冥字九决)

Ah Dai had been kicked over 50 metres away, but the scene of the enormous surging force from the dou qi was still deeply engraved in his mind.

The vice leader shouted, "He is going to fight to the death, everyone attack together!" He could no longer stay out of the fight. Moving his body, a great claw-shaped golden dou qi shot towards Owen's silhouette.

Owen let out a wretched laugh as the eerie blue light shone brighter, "Hell's Sword Instant — Death —— Cleave!" All the streaks of light recombined, forming a huge blue colored light blade. With a cleave, the golden colored dou qi claw instantly dispersed. The light blade slowed down, but still managed to take the life of an assassin, and his body disappeared without even leaving a trace.

The vice leader was taken aback, he had only heard that there were two moves of the Hell's Sword, one was the [Heaven Splitting Earth

Crasher], and the other was the [Ghost and God Terrorizer]. He was able to deal with the power of these two moves, so he was unafraid of Owen's resistance. However, this third move of the Hell's Sword that he had never heard of, just appeared in front of his eyes, and this caused him to be extremely shocked. If not for his subordinate using his life to face that bizarre and domineering attack, he was not confident of taking on that strike himself. The vice leader no longer dared to hide his true power, and the golden glow around him instantly spread out, forming countless claws that shot towards Owen who had just finished his third move. The remaining two members of the Y assassination group also followed after, even though they were facing such a strong opponent, their resolves were not shaken.

Owen was already prepared as he roared, "Die! Hell's Sword Endless — Cleaving —— Shadows!" Numerous blue colored shadows floated out from his body, and shot towards the vice leader in mid air. The vice leader let out a cry of astonishment, "More moves?" The huge waves of blue light that contained death qi rushed towards him. The dou qi that he had released seemed so weak in comparison that it was consumed immediately by the light. He could not be bothered to continue attacking, but sought self-preservation instead. Raising his arms, he caught the two assassins by his side, and used all of his energy to throw them towards the large sea of eerie blue light.

The last two assassins did not even have time to cry out, before they

disappeared amidst the air. However, the remaining blue light had still managed to take away one of the vice leader's hands. He could feel the blood and life force flowing out from his left arm and without hesitation, he grabbed his left elbow, and forcefully tore away his lower arm, throwing it away.

Owen rushed towards the vice leader like a mad devil, yelling, "Hell's Sword… …"

Once he heard the two words, the vice leader was scared out of his wits. Instantly, his right fist smashed towards the ground, causing a loud boom. Amidst the noise, a crater of almost 3 metres deep appeared, and the vice leader had used the rebound force to jump away, disappearing in the distance.

All of this, had only happened in a few breaths' of time, when Ah Dai had rushed over, everything was over. Owen was half-kneeling on the floor, panting non-stop as Ah Dai dashed towards him, crying out in excitement, "Uncle, Uncle, you are so powerful! The bad people were all chased away by you."

However, Owen did not reply, merely continued panting. Ah Dai was shocked and immediately went behind Owen's back, sending his pure true qi into Owen. With Ah Dai's help, Owen seemed much more at ease, as he let out a breath and turned his head towards Ah Dai, saying, "Quickly bring me into the house. Don't stop, continue giving me your true qi."

Ah Dai was surprised to discover that Owen's eyes had turned fully red, and there was a faint blue qi on his face, almost making him seem like a blood man. Hastily, he helped Owen up, using one hand

to place Owen's arm over his shoulder, while his other hand was placed on Owen's back, constantly providing true qi.

Returning to the room, Ah Dai helped Owen to lie on the bed, and used one hand to press against Owen's dantian, using all of his energy to circulate his true qi. Unfortunately, Ah Dai found that Owen's condition had become abnormally chaotic, his true qi was moving erratically, causing his face to change color. In addition, although the blue colored qi did not become denser, there were still no signs of it dissipating.

"It's okay Ah Dai, you don't need to give me so much true qi, just maintain a little will be enough." Owen wheezed out, as he opened his blood red eyes.

"Uncle, are you alright? You need to rest well, don't speak too much, you will surely recover." Ah Dai asked in concern.

Lightly shaking his head, Owen replied, "Ah Dai, listen to Uncle. Uncle has a lot of things to tell you, if I don't say it now, I'm afraid there will be no time in the future."

Tears streamed down Ah Dai's cheeks as he shook his head fiercely, "No, no, Uncle, you will surely be fine, you will surely recover."

Owen let out a smile, "Child, everyone will die one day, Uncle is already over 60 years old, it would not be considered a premature death. However, Uncle still has a lot of unfulfilled wishes, I hope that you can help Uncle. Then, Uncle can die in satisfaction."

Ah Dai choked out, "Uncle, tell me, Ah Dai will surely work hard to

accomplish your wishes.”

Owen sighed, “I’m really ashamed to say, Uncle has done many wrong things throughout my life. When I was fit and young, I wandered the continent, relying on my martial arts. In order to earn more money, I joined the an assassin group, which was part of the Assassins Guild. I was young and reckless, not knowing the meaning of fear, and I committed some serious offences. However, I was careless, and my identity was revealed. As a result, I became a wanted fugitive of all the four empires. And from then on, I could no longer live a normal life, and fell into the claws of the Assassins Guild. When I was 27, I had already reached the level of an Annihilator*. At 37, I became the leader of the M assassination group in the Assassins Guild. Although there are not a lot of assassins in the guild, every one of them possesses extremely strong martial arts, and they are skilled in concealment and assassination. There are four levels of assassins, the highest being the Annihilators (M), then Silent Assassins (R), Dark Assassins (A), and normal assassins (C).”

[TN: In Chapter 9.1, the voice mentioned M level assassins -> Annihilator level, each level of assassins form 1 assassination group, the group name in brackets]

Owen wheezed a few times, and Ah Dai immediately rushed to supply him more true qi. Owen looked at Ah Dai, and there was a

hint of grief in his blood-red eyes.

“Uncle, rest a while first, don’t speak anymore.”

Owen shook his head, “I’ll have no other chance if I don’t say it now. After I’ve finished speaking, you must hurry up and leave this place. I don’t need you to remember every word that I’ve said, but you must listen closely, this concerns your future. Apart from the four groups of assassins, there is another even more mysterious group. They are the ones who ambushed us just now, wearing a silver skull on their chest. In the guild, they are known as the Slayers (Y assassination group). They are veterans who retired as Annihilator level assassins, all of them are over 60 years old and the organization will support their remaining years. Of course, due to their many years of experience, along with their impressive skills, whenever there are special missions, they will still be tasked to carry them out. These Slayers have extremely honorable positions within the organisation, and only His Highness, AH! No, the leader of the Assassins Guild can mobilize them. I’m not too sure about their exact numbers, but it shouldn’t be too many. I’ve killed 6 today, I estimate there is at most 6 of them left. That man with the gold skull on his chest, is the vice leader of the Assassins Guild. You’ve seen his skills, if not for the Hell’s Sword, I would not be a match for him.”

Ah Dai asked, “Uncle, is that vice leader your enemy?”

Owen widened his blood-red eyes, and said with hatred in his voice, “He is just one of them. The other one, is the leader of the Assassins

Guild, also called His Highness by the other assassins. It was him, who destroyed my original peaceful life, and ruined my future." As he spoke, his body suddenly started convulsing, writhing continuously as he exuded a monstrous hatred. After a long while, Owen finally continued, "Speaking of this, I must tell you a secret of mine. Ah Dai, unwrap my robes."

Ah Dai was confused, but he still followed Owen's instructions. He carefully unwrapped Owen's blood-stained robes, there was a slit in his clothes, and it was slightly bulging, seeming as though there was something within.

Owen took a deep breath, a white light flashed across his face, and he pressed against his back with much difficulty. There was a movement near his chest and he carefully retrieved an item from the slit in his clothes. It was a black leather sack, with long strings slanting across it. The black sack was thin, about 5 inches long, and a black sword hilt peeked out from it. There were complicated symbols carved on the hilt, with a glowing black jewel at the end of the hilt, that was continuously emanating evil qi.

Owen seemed somewhat infatuated as he looked towards the sword hilt, sighing, "This is the Hell's Sword that helped Uncle to become famous in the continent." He grabbed the hilt, and pulled out the Hell's Sword from the leather sack. There was a lifelike white dragon carved on the sheath of the sword, but this dragon did not have any scales, only a skeleton and claws. It looked extremely bizarre, especially with two eerie blue jewels as its eyes. The sword was merely taken out of the sack, still unsheathed, but the evil qi had immediately become denser. Even with the protection of his true qi,

Ah Dai could not help but shiver.

"This leather sack had never left my side for almost 40 years. My title as the "King of Hell" was also due to this sword. This sword is the greatest evil in this continent, although it had given me unparalleled power, it had also indirectly ruined my life. That year, I was 27. As I have been practising martial arts since young, at that time, I could already be considered as an expert. The young and reckless me, loved to adventure, and I would always wander the continent with a group of friends. By chance, we came across an ancient hideout, it was laden with traps, but it still aroused our interest. After a month's worth of effort, we finally reached the depths of the hideout. There were no treasures, unlike what we had originally thought, instead there was only a large magic sealing array, and the sword was in the middle of it. It was only until some time later, that I found out the purpose of the sealing array, was to seal the evil qi within the Hell's Sword. We have tried many different methods, but we still could not break the sealing array. To the group of adventurous people like us, how could we just give up so easily? Finally, after a whole month's time, we managed to find the core of the array. Just as we broke the core, the immense evil qi devoured the life of my companions, and I was the only one able to survive due to my holy attribute qi from the Boundless Life Art which I've cultivated since young. The Hell's Sword seemed to have sentience, as it floated towards me. The death of my companions had deeply shaken me, and I wanted to place the Hell's Sword back into the sealing array. However, the array was already broken, and could not

be repaired. It was at that time when a noise suddenly sounded from the cave. Even now, I can clearly remember that voice, it was left behind using an advanced level sound transmission magic, and the voice claimed that he was the 4th Supreme Pontiff of the Holy Church. He had accidentally found the Hell's Sword, but was almost consumed by that immense evil force. Even with his ability, he still could not destroy the sword, and could only seal the sword in an array that was set up by him and some other crimson-robed priests. He said, 'Whoever breaks this sealing array, would become the sinner of this world. One must be the guardian of the sword, and not allow it to wreak havoc.' At the same time when the Supreme Pontiff had obtained the Hell's Sword, he had also obtained two scrolls. One of them, was the method of using the Hell's Sword; and the other, even he was unable to understand. According to my calculations, at the time I got the sword, it had at least several thousand years of history. You should know, the Supreme Pontiff now, is already of the 28th generation."

Emotions surged in Owen, as he looked at the evil sword within his hands, dimly shaking his head. The story behind the Hell's Sword had also ignited Ah Dai's curiosity, while suppressing the evil qi, he asked, "Since this sword is so evil, why does Uncle still use it?"

Owen bitterly smiled, "This is the human desire. Even though the Hell's Sword is incomparably evil, it still contains a powerful force. With this power, one can definitely become a supreme expert. How can I, someone who has a passion for martial arts, resist its temptation? In the cave, I opened the first scroll, and followed the

descriptions inside, learning two of the moves. At that time, I was not yet obsessed, and could still firmly recall what the Supreme Pontiff had said, thus I kept the Hell's Sword, and did not let anyone see it. This leather sack, was handmade by that Supreme Pontiff, and it has an effect of suppressing the evil qi. Therefore, when the sword is within the sack, it's evil qi is not that obvious." As he spoke, he kept the Hell's Sword back into the sack, the evil qi immediately converged, and Ah Dai instantly heaved a sigh of relief. At this moment, the blue qi on Owen's face seemed to have increased and his body was shaking uncontrollably, a clear sign that the poison of the Holy Matchless Water was breaking out.

"Uncle, the poison seems to flaring up, you better rest first. I will help you use dou qi to suppress it."

Owen shook his head, "There's no need, the poison has already penetrated the marrow, Uncle cannot be saved. Let me finish speaking, if not, even after I die, I will not rest in peace. I have kept all of this in my heart for too long. When I was 27, I had already cultivated the Boundless Life Art to the Fifth Stage, the stage that you are about to reach soon. My strength was not weak, but I was still unable to face true experts. My parents had perished in a tsunami when I was young, and I was taken in by my master while I was wandering. My master is one of the 5 well-known Sword Saints in the continent, his skills have already reached a transcendental realm. After I obtained the Hell's Sword, I wanted to quickly return to Master's side, and continue cultivating. However, on the way back, I met a group of bandits. They were plundering a village,

setting fire and massacring the villagers, doing all sorts of evil deeds. At that time, I still had a sense of righteousness, and rushed up without hesitation. When I had killed most of the bandits, their boss suddenly appeared. I had never thought that, such an expert would actually appear in such a remote village. Only after 10 moves or so, I was already heavily injured by him, he had recognized my school, and was fearful of my Master's retaliation, thus he decided to kill me in order to silence me. Just as I was about to die, I suddenly recalled the Hell's Sword, and the first move [Heaven splitting earth crasher]. Under my control, I attacked, but since it was my first time executing that move, I had yet to fully master it. That strike did not only kill my opponents, but the evil qi from the sword had also taken all the remaining lives of the villagers. It was also because of my reckless usage of the Hell's Sword, that changed my entire life." Owen's face was filled with agony as he spoke.

Shocked, Ah Dai muttered, "All the villagers died?"

Owen nodded, "Yes, they've all become corpses, and there's no one left alive, the evil qi of the Hell's Sword is really too tyrannical. When I woke up, I saw that all of the villagers had become corpses; that sight, almost made me go crazy, I had never killed so many people before! So, I vowed then, to never use the Hell's Sword again. It took a full month before I finally recovered. However, on the way back to Master, I met the people from the Assassins Guild. I have no idea how they found out that I had the Hell's Sword, but they kept pestering me to join them. I was a disciple from a proper and upright school at that time, how could I agree to join them? So I flatly

rejected them, and sent them away. But who knew, because of this, my beloved, was brutally abused to death." Owen tightly gripped the sword hilt, his body continuously trembled as a monstrous hatred aroused in him, a layer of black qi flashing from his blood-red eyes.

Raising his hand, Owen stopped Ah Dai from speaking, and continued on, "My Master had two children, one girl and one boy, and his daughter was my beloved woman. Although I was like a wild horse, always wandering outside, she was the one who was able to hold on tightly to my heart, keeping me grounded. When I finally returned to Master's side, the news of my junior sister's death was like a thunderbolt, striking me so deeply that it was unbearable. My junior brothers were all saying that junior sister had died because of me. Indeed, if not for me, why would junior sister descend the mountain? She did it to find me! As a result, she was ambushed in a small town, and was raped—then—killed—" Owen gritted his teeth, and there was now a tinge of gray and black in his blood-red eyes. The shocking hatred and resentment had an oppressive feeling on Ah Dai, making it hard for him to breathe.

After a long while, Owen finally calmed his emotions, and a blood-red tear fell from his eyes, "Junior sister had died, and I didn't even know who was the murderer. I frantically ran out, asking everyone that I saw, if they had killed my junior sister, I was searching everywhere like a madman. Just when I was about to almost lose it, the people from the Assassins Guild came to find me again. They told me, if I joined their assassination group, they would tell me the person who killed my junior sister. At that time, I was already

anxious and furious to the point that I didn't even stop to think, and agreed without hesitation. So, they brought me to find the murderer who killed my junior sister, he was one of the nobility of the Sunset Empire, and he unabashedly admitted his doings. I did not use the TianGang Sword Techniques that Master taught me, but instead, I used the extremely evil Hell's Sword. That night was filled with bloodshed, the 123 people of that noble family, apart from the one who died under my sword, had all of their souls devoured by the Hell's Sword. Influenced by the evilness of the Hell's Sword, I decided to join the Assassins Guild, and became an Annihilator. Ten years, a whole ten years! I finally regained my senses with the help of the vitality from the Boundless Life Art. However, I was already unable to extricate myself from the clutches of the Assassins Guild. The title as the Number 1 Killer on the continent was already bestowed on me, no matter where I went, I was an assassin whose hands were stained with blood. Ah Dai, Uncle is a bad man, isn't he? Uncle has killed so many people."

Ah Dai was long shocked by Owen's story, and his brain seemed to have stopped working, as he blankly shook his head, "No, I don't know, I really don't know."

Owen sighed, "My entire life, is really… …, 30 years as an assassin had destroyed my life. Just a few months before I met you, I overheard the leader and vice-leader's conversation on a chance occasion. Their words revealed something, it turns out that, it was, it was, them who had plotted my junior sister's death! Their motive, was to trick me into becoming a member of the Assassins Guild. I

regret, I really regret! Why was I so dumb? I wanted to rush in for revenge, but my long experience as an assassin allowed me to keep my head cool, even when I was furious. After all, even when using the Hell's Sword, I might not be a match for the leader and the vice-leader. Therefore, I decided on assassination, I would wait for a perfect chance to suddenly ambush them, and avenge my junior sister."

Ah Dai looked at Owen in shock, muttering, "A plot, it was actually all planned?"

Owen nodded his head in pain, replying, "Yes, it was all a plot. Ah Dai, you are really too kind, in this dog-eat-dog world, people will only take advantage of your kindness. Perhaps I was too careless, and exposed myself through my expressions, the leader found out that I knew that secret. Of course, he would not allow me to be able to threaten his life, expressionless, he invited me for a drink. Ever since junior sister's death, apart from killing, drinking was my only solace, so I drank the grape wine that he offered me. However, I had never thought that, there was actually the famed greatest poison of the continent, the Holy Matchless Water, within the drink. After I drank that cup of wine, His Highness, no, that bastard told me the truth with no reservations. He did not kill me, but instead, let me consider. He said, if I was willing to forget the past hatred, he would give me the antidote for the Holy Matchless Water."

Stunned, Ah Dai exclaimed, "But, there is no antidote for the Holy Matchless Water!"

Owen nodded, "I know, but at that time, I could only agree to consider, and after that I found a chance to escape. That bastard

ordered the 12 Annihilators, who were once under my command, to kill me. After that, you have seen what happened in the illusionary forest. Now that I think of it, perhaps that bastard may have the same method of suppressing the poison like yours. However, even if he could really cure my poison, how can I allow myself to continue being subservient to my enemy."

Owen paused for a while, before continuing, "Ah Dai, do you know why Uncle was able to kill those men, allowing only the vice-leader to escape?"

Ah Dai thought for a while and replied, "Uncle has profound martial arts, those bad guys were surely no match for you."

Owen shook his head, "No, with my skills, I can at most deal with two of the Slayers. Even at my prime, whilst using the Hell's Sword, I can barely kill 5 of them. Do you still remember your earth-shattering strike? That method of condensing all your power and releasing it at one go. Today, I had used that method, without considering the consequences, I compressed all of the true qi within my body. At the start when I did not fight back, I was compressing my true qi. That sudden explosive force is indeed powerful, allowing me to actually execute the Hell's Sword Fourth Move, it's a pity that the explosive force was depleted before I could execute the fifth move. It's Heaven's will! After spending all of my energy, I can no longer suppress the poison, the true qi within my body has been depleted, and the poison had already started flaring up when I was using the Hell's Sword, If not for the true qi you have been continuously supplying, I would not be able to last until now. It's

such a pity that I didn't manage to kill the vice-leader as well. This Hell's Sword, shall belong to you from now on. Treat it as Uncle's last gift to you." As he spoke, he handed over the leather sack within his hands.

Ah Dai recalled how evil the Hell's Sword was, and said with a tinge of fear in his voice, "No, Uncle, I don't want it, I… …"

How could Owen not know what Ah Dai was thinking, he sighed and said, "Child, the sword is innocent, the Hell's Sword may contain evil qi, but using it to kill bad guys, is more than suitable. After many years of studying it, Uncle has found out, that the true qi we cultivate is precisely the nemesis of the evil qi. It was because of the Boundless Life Art that Uncle cultivated, that I was not influenced by evil. After your Boundless Life Art reaches the Eighth Stage, you can control the emission of the evil qi, such that you won't easily harm the innocent." Owen took out two pieces of sheepskin from the leather sack, "These two pieces of sheepskin, one of them is method of training the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques, while the other is something that even that Supreme Pontiff couldn't figure out. You must carefully study it, according to my speculation, the ancient writings on this sheepskin should contain some of the secrets of the Hell's Sword. The Hell's Sword Nine Techniques, can be said to be the strongest sword art in the world. There are a total of nine moves, and it must be used with the Hell's Sword in order to showcase its true power. You have to figure out the specific training methods yourself, but it isn't too difficult, what is most important is that you must control the evil qi and not let it harm yourself." After

he finished speaking, he placed the sheepskins back into the sack, and handed the sack over to Ah Dai once more.

Looking at the hope in Owen's eyes, Ah Dai, who was filled with strong aversion towards the sword, reluctantly accepted it.

Owen let out a sigh of relief, the Hell's Sword had accompanied him for over decades, and he had long formed deep emotions for the sword, even if it had changed his whole life.

Owen took out a small book from his chest, and passed it to Ah Dai, saying, "Ah Dai, from today onwards, you are the protector of the Hell's Sword. In your hands, the Hell's Sword can only be used to kill evil people, do you understand? This book is the cultivation methods for the later stages of the Boundless Life Art, take it and read it, you must practise it diligently. Without the protection of the Boundless Life Art, you must not carelessly use the Hell's Sword. Uncle has already cultivated the Boundless Life Art to the Eighth Stage, and in my prime, I can at most execute two moves of the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques; if I use all my energy, I can execute the Fourth Move, Hell's Shadows. This nine moves of this sword technique, it gets stronger with each move, perhaps the last move, even a god might not be able to take it on. After your Boundless Life Art has been cultivated to the Fifth Stage, you can try practising the First Move, Hell's Flash. Hell's Sword Heaven Splitting Earth Crasher, at that time, Uncle has used this one move to kill countless people. Since it has come to this, Uncle no longer wishes for you to help me take revenge, you are too kind, how can you defeat those bastards. Unless your life's in danger, do not carelessly use the Hell's Sword. If you use it, you must kill everyone who sees it. Only

this way, can you protect yourself, understand? Perhaps, after you cultivate the Boundless Life Art to the Ninth Stage and learn the Fifth Move of the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques, you might be able to contend with those bastards."

[TN: It's.. a darned long chapter ;w;]

Related

Chapter 014: King of Hell's Passing

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Enjoy a full chapter!~

Chapter 14: King of Hell's Passing

The icy cold feeling continuously emanated from the leather sack, into Ah Dai's body, Owen's recount of his life experiences had thoroughly shaken his heart. Subconsciously, he decided that he would help Uncle complete his revenge, no matter what. "Uncle, can the last four moves of the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques be trained?"

Solemnly, Owen said, "No, definitely not. The evil qi contained within the last four moves is really too overbearing. If the evil qi invades your body, you will be controlled by the sword, losing your mind, and becoming its puppet, as a killing maniac. Therefore, you must definitely not exceed your limits and execute the later moves. Ah Dai, have Uncle's eyes become gray?"

Ah Dai was stunned, and looked towards Owen's eyes. Indeed, his eyes had already become totally gray, seeming exceptionally strange.

Owen sighed, "This is the backlash from exceeding my limits and using the Hell's Swords. Luckily, I'm about to die, so I won't become a killing maniac. However, you must be careful, do not

carelessly execute the later moves. Although I have the ability to execute the Fourth Move of the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques, my energy was not enough to continuously use Hell's Flash, Hell's Second Flash, Hell's Cleave and Hell's Shadows. The evil qi has totally penetrated my meridians, if not for my years of cultivating the Boundless Life Art, I'm afraid I'd have lost my mind long ago. Child, there are no absolutes in life, it's the same for the Hell's Sword. If you use it with kind intentions, then you will be kind; if you use it with evil intentions, then you will be evil. You must understand this principle." Just as he finished speaking, the blue light on Owen's face suddenly became denser. There was a change in his expression, as he suddenly let out a loud scream, spitting out a mouthful of red blood that had a tinge of blue.

Anxiously, Ah Dai immediately transferred the remaining true qi within his body into Owen's body. Owen was trembling all over, seeming to be struggling against the poison of the Holy Matchless Water. After a long while, his heaving chest finally calmed down, but his eyes seemed much dimmer than before. Weakly, he said, "Ah Dai, strap the Hell's Sword to your chest, quickly."

Ah Dai was shocked, but the kind him could not bear to refuse Owen's last wish. He tore open his coat, and used his right hand to strap the sword across his body. Tightening the leather strap, the hilt of the sword laid exactly against his chest. The chilling energy flowed into his body, and Ah Dai could not help but be startled, his true qi seemed to be circulating, surging through his body. The energy that was originally depleted, rejuvenated once more.

With the support of Ah Dai's true qi, Owen held back his desire to

vomit. He knew that he could not suppress the poison any longer, and he was on the verge of death, “Ah Dai, you… you must… promise… Uncle, you must not… give up on… the Hell’s Sword, try your best… and learn… its first move, only this way… can you survive… in this… dog-eat-dog… society. As for… the last… four moves… of the Hell’s Sword Nine Techniques…, if your life force… and holy qi… can surpass… the standards… of the Ninth Stage… of the Boundless Life Art, you can… try them, but… you must… be careful, you must never… face the backlash… from the evil qi. Also, you must not… carelessly provoke… the Assassins Guild, their power… is too… strong, with your… kind nature, you are… no match… for them. Oh, also…, the silver beads… that you… helped me refine… to control… the poison, you must… keep them safe…, although it cannot… cure the poison… of the Holy Matchless Water, if you… get poisoned, you can still… use the same method… to force… the poison together, then expelling it… out of your body. It’s… such a pity! My ability… is not enough, if I reach… the Ninth Stage… of the Boundless Life Art, I… might have been able… to force all… the scattered poison… into the silver bead. After Uncle… dies…, you… must burn… the house… together with… Uncle’s body, … just use… the flame spell… that you have been… practising, in case… the poison… in Uncle’s body… spreads to others… and harm them. Dying here…, Uncle… has finally… come home…. Child, don’t… cry…, Uncle… doesn’t… like… to see… you cry, you… are… a man, you… must be… strong…, Uncle… cannot… take care… of you… in the future, you must… take care… of yourself…, understand?” When he finished speaking, Owen could not help but spit out another mouthful of blood, the blue qi

had already covered his whole face. Due to the overconsumption of his true qi, along with the poison spreading throughout his body, and the backlash from the evil qi, even a god might not be able to save his life. After spitting out blood, Owen seemed to look slightly better, there was a slight flush on his blue face.

Ah Dai's tears had long dripped onto his robes, he could clearly feel, that the life of the Uncle that he had lived with for five years, was slowly fading away. He could only nod continuously, agreeing to Owen's last instructions.

Owen spat out another mouthful of blood, as he stretched out his now blue hands, gently caressing Ah Dai's hair. His last flashback seemed to have raised his spirits, as he said with a smile, "Child, do you know? The five years living with you, are the calmest, and most satisfying five years of Uncle's life. After leaving here, don't immediately run away, bring all of the food at home, and first hide at the rocky area for 10 days, before going away. The organisation will not let me go so easily, you must be careful in the future. Ah! Right, you know magic, you should at least be at the level of a Junior Magician. If you continue walking towards the West from here, you can reach the borders of the Red Hurricane Tribe. Inside there, you need to find a branch of the Magician's Guild, and register as a magician. Once you wear the large magician robes, they won't be able to find you so easily. In addition, magicians also receive stipends, it should be enough for your normal life. Uncle was too hurried when escaping from the Assassins Guild, and did not have enough time to bring along my fortune, you have to rely on yourself in the future. After you return to your Teacher Gliss, you need to

spend time on cultivation as well, try your best to practise the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques, then you will be safer when you explore the continent. Apart from my junior sister, Uncle is most regretful towards my Master who has nurtured me since young. If you have the chance in the future, you can return to the TianGang Sword School to pay your respects, and if you see people wielding the same big swords as you, you must be respectful towards them."

The flush on Owen's face gradually became dimmer, as blue blood continuously flowed from his seven orifices. The last remnants of his energy was depleted, and he could not endure it anymore, his whole body was trembling as he said, "Remember…, on the… continent, try not… to interact with… three types… of people, the first… is… people from… the Holy Church, they are… too upright, if they… find out… the Hell's Sword… on your body, there… may be… bad consequences. The other… two types… are people… from the… Assassins Guild… and the… Thieves Guild. When… you meet… your teacher… Gliss, tell him… I am… very sorry… for taking… his student… for some years, he… must be… hating me. Ah… Dai…, Gliss may… not be a… bad person, but… his reputation… on the… continent… is not… that good either, you… need to… be wary…, do not… tell him… about the… Hell's Sword. Uncle… cannot… hold… on… anymore, retract… your… true… qi, burn… this place, you… must… burn… this place, and… throw… the corpses… outside, then… quickly… leave, you… must… quickly… leave! I… wish… I could… live… with you… longer! But…, Uncle… needs… to… go, you… must… take… care… of… your……" Before he could utter the last word, Owen, the "King of Hell" who had wandered the continent for decades, suddenly passed

away. Even before he died, he still had an expression full of concern, worrying about the youngster in front of him.

Ah Dai's eyes glazed over as Owen's hand gradually fell from his face, there seemed to be a huge rock crushing against his heart, and it felt extremely uncomfortable. He did not know how many tears he had shed, and his heart had become fully cold. It was then when he realised, how deep his feelings for Owen were. The Uncle who had showered him with care and concern, imparted a whole lifetime of martial arts and knowledge, now departed.

6th Month, Year 994 of the Holy Calendar, the King of Assassins who had traversed the continent for countless decades, had now passed away, with hatred and unwillingness in his heart.

[TN: not actually the King of Assassins, but it just implies he was very famous/strong as an assassin]

Owen's corpse rapidly became colder, the poison from the Holy Matchless Water was fully unleashed, causing his body to gradually turn a dark blue color and his face had also started rotting at its seven orifices. There was no longer any trace of life. Ah Dai stood up, wiping away the tears on his face. Although he was unwilling to leave Owen's side, he remained clear-headed under the stimulation from the chilling energy of the Hell's Sword. He understood that, Uncle was most worried about him, even before his death, therefore he could not disappoint Owen and he must live on. Only by living on, he would have the hope of avenging Uncle.

Thinking about this, Ah Dai ran towards his room, and started packing the silver beads that he refined and some of his clothes into

a bag. Then, he went to the kitchen and took some food, before returning to Owen's side. He had done everything while still crying, the person closest to him had departed, how could a barely seventeen year old child like him bear the grief.

There was already a puddle of blue water under Owen's corpse, his once handsome face was now corroded by the poison to the point that he was unrecognizable. Ah Dai let out a howl, "NO——" Uncle had already died, he definitely did not want Uncle's body to be further destroyed by the poison. With great difficulty, he started chanting the incantation for the flame spell, " Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! Please bestow upon me your blazing strength, in my name, by thy power, searing flame appear." A deep blue flame appeared in his hands, as he closed his eyes and clenched his teeth, sending the flame out. The flame drifted towards Owen's body, engulfing him totally, and under its extreme heat, Owen's body had turned into a pile of blue colored ashes in just a few moments.

Ah Dai crouched on the floor, bursting into tears. While he cried, he used a small shovel and scooped the blue ashes into a small earthen jar. Closing the lid, he then placed the jar carefully into his bag, and ran out of the house, carrying two bags. The three corpses were still lying on the ground. Ah Dai looked back towards the house that he had lived in for five years, his heart was filled with emotions as he clenched his teeth and used the flame spell once more. Large blue flames flew towards the roof under Ah Dai's command, and in just a short while, the small courtyard had become a sea of fire. Lightly kicking the three corpses into the fire, Ah Dai ran towards the distance, filled with hatred and grief.

At this moment, Schiel was sulking at home, Ah Dai had openly rejected his proposal, causing him to lose face, after all, his Fei Er was more than adequate to marry that silly kid! He had never heard any mention of a fiancee, and he really wondered how Big Brother Owen was willing to let go of such a good marriage. Until now, Xi Fei was still crying in her room, making Schiel even more frustrated. 'Bang, bang, bang.' Loud knocking sounds were heard, in frustration, Schiel snappily shouted, "Who's that, knocking so urgently!"

"Dad, it's me, quickly open the door, there's trouble." It was Xi Zhong's voice.

Shocked, Schiel quickly rushed up to open the door. There was an anxious look on Xi Zhong's face as he panted, "Dad, go and take a look, something big happened."

Schiel furrowed his brows, "What's all the fuss about? How can anything big happen in this small town?"

Anxiously, Xi Zhong replied, "It's Uncle Owen. Uncle Owen's house had suddenly caught on fire, second brother, third brother and I happened to see it when we were on our way back from fishing. The two of them have gone to call the townspeople for help."

Schiel got a big shock, exclaiming, "What did you say, Big Brother Owen's house is on fire? Quick, let's go."

When they arrived at Owen's house, there was only dense smoke billowing into the sky, the fire was already burning to an end. In this small town by the sea, the sea winds blew relentlessly, and along with Ah Dai's profound flame spell, the house had already turned

into ruins.

Schiel stared dumbfounded at the sight before him, and turned towards his second son, Xi Fa who was currently trying to put out the fire, questioning, “Where are they? Where is your Uncle Owen and Ah Dai? Have they come out yet?”

Xi Fa solemnly shook his head, “I haven’t seen them. Dad, the fire was so big, if they are inside, I… I’m afraid, the odds are against them.”

At the same time Schiel’s family were mourning for Owen and Ah Dai, there were a few pairs of cold gazes staring intently at the scene from within the crowds.

“Vice-leader, we have went in to take a look, but apart from the bones of our dead brothers, we did not find the bodies of the “King of Hell” and that little kid.”

The enigmatic voice was filled with hatred, “I’m so pissed off, I didn’t think that the “King of Hell” would have such vitality, even after being poisoned by the Holy Matchless Water, he could still execute the Hell’s Sword Techniques. If I had known earlier, I would have brought your team along, then we would have been able to capture him for sure. The “King of Hell” might have died, but the child should still be alive, quickly, split up and find him. Even if it’s just a body, you must also bring it to me. The Hell’s Sword must not fall into others’ hands.”

“Yes, vice-leader.” The figures disappeared amongst the crowd, and the fire in the courtyard also gradually weakened.

……

“Ah——” Ah Dai stood on top of the wooden pole, desperately splitting the waves that rushed up, one by one. Half a year ago, Owen had already broke the wooden pole into two, and let Ah Dai stand on it to withstand the waves, training his stability. The waves were continuously split into two as Ah Dai swung his TianGang Sword, his body was long soaked by the seawater as he continued to vent, but the sorrow within his heart simply would not disappear.

Boom, a huge wave pushed the exhausted Ah Dai into the sea, Ah Dai did not struggle, and allowed the huge waves to smash against him, washing away the resentment in his heart.

“Why? Why must y’all kill Uncle Owen, why——” Ah Dai lamented towards the sky, but apart from the surging sounds of the waves, there was no one to answer his question.

Ten days later, Ah Dai gradually recovered from his grief over Owen’s death. Owen’s death had caused deep emotions to surge within him, there was now an expression of hatred on his face. After eating some dry rations, Ah Dai fastened his bags and the TianGang Sword to himself, touched the Hell’s Sword near his chest, and left the rocky area. He determined the direction before walking towards the territory of Red Hurricane Tribe in the West. Perhaps Owen’s death was too much of a shock to him, despite his dumb mind, Ah

Dai could clearly remember every single word that Owen had said before his death. It was Uncle's last instructions, and no matter what, he had to do everything according to Uncle's instructions.

What Ah Dai did not know, was that Owen's last words had saved his life, the people from the Assassins Guild had only left one day earlier, after not being able to find his body.

Three days, it was already three days before Ah Dai finally reached the borders of the Red Hurricane Tribe, but, the rations that he brought from home were all finished. After not drinking anything for a whole day, his mouth was parched and there were cracks on his lips. Subconsciously, he entered the city in front of him.

On the streets, there were people dressed in mercenary clothes everywhere. Owen had once described the various attires for the different professions, and he knew that the Mercenary Guild had originated in Red Hurricane Tribe, thus there were large numbers of mercenaries and mercenary groups gathered here. His goal was to find a Magician's Guild so that he could obtain money for food.

The city was bustling with life, and it was much bigger than the Ninuo City that he lived in when he was young. After taking just a few steps, an aroma of buns wafted towards him and Ah Dai could not help but turn his head to take a look, his whole body trembling.

"Steamed buns, selling steamed buns, fragrant and sweet steamed buns, one copper coin for two. Selling steamed buns… …"

The clear and loud voice caused Ah Dai to unwittingly walk over, the person who was selling steamed buns, was a short and fat man in his forties. He was almost totally bald, except for a ring of red hair,

and every time his hollered, the fats on his face would jiggle. There was hot steam continuously rising from the bamboo steamers before him, signifying that the steamed buns were just freshly made. As he saw Ah Dai walk over, there was a huge smile on his face as he said, “Little brother, do you want some steamed buns? My steamed buns are famous far and wide, they are fragrant and sweet, once you eat one, you will want another.”

Ah Dai looked at the plump steamed bun owner, secretly thinking that, his buns must surely taste good, if not, he would not have that figure of his. Steamed buns, were always Ah Dai’s favorites, not to mention that he had not eaten them for a long time, however, there was not a single copper coin in his pocket, so how could he afford to buy the delicious buns in front of him.

Swallowing his saliva, Ah Dai shook his head.

The stall owner had just opened his stall today, and he had not sold many steamed buns yet. Although the silly looking fellow was plainly dressed, one look at the huge sword behind him could see that he was a martial arts practitioner, which martial arts practitioner did not have any money on them! Not to mention just the money needed to buy some steamed buns. Therefore, once he saw Ah Dai shaking his head, he hurried asked, “Why? Little brother, are you unsatisfied with my steamed buns? It’s only a copper coin for two, and it’s best to eat it for breakfast. How about, you can try one first, I won’t charge you for this.”

Once Ah Dai heard that he did not need to pay, his eyes immediately brightened, and he hurriedly nodded. The stall owner picked up a bun from the steaming hot bamboo steamers and passed it to Ah Dai.

Ah Dai received it with both of his hands, and with one bite, he ate one third of the bun. He had not eaten such a delicious bun in more than half a month, and he wolfed down the whole bun in just a few seconds of time. The fragrance of the bun flooded his body, and Ah Dai felt much more spirited after eating something, “Uncle, the buns you make are great, soft and fragrant, it’s so delicious.”

Hearing that Ah Dai was praising the buns he made, the stall owner instantly let out a grin, pridefully saying, “Of course, you can just ask around, in the streets nearby, my steamed buns are the most fragrant. Just buy some of them, even though they can’t be compared to restaurant food, my steamed buns are still very delicious.”

Ah Dai lowered his head and glumly said, “I, I really want to eat your steamed buns, but… but, I don’t have money.”

Shocked, the fat owner muttered, “No money and you ran towards my stall? And even ate one of my buns. My buns are only for paying customers to try, what is this? Eating a free meal? Ay— Forget it, it’s my misfortune, quickly go away, don’t obstruct my business.”

Ah Dai lowered his head and walked away, thinking to himself, he would return the money for the steamed bun once he got the money.

“Wait,” the stall owner’s voice suddenly rang out from behind him. Ah Dai got a shock, was the owner going to chase him for the money again? Turning around, he saw the owner waving his chubby hands in the air, signalling him to go over. Ah Dai walked back to the steamed bun stall, with his head still lowered as he said, “But, I, I really don’t have any money. I’m sorry, I’ll surely buy your steamed buns once I have money.”

The stall owner glanced at Ah Dai, and passed him a paper parcel, sighing, “Little fella, you don’t seem local, you must have come here due to some difficulties. Here, these steamed buns are for you, eat them first. It’s not easy trying to make a living, just take them.”

Stunned, Ah Dai looked at the stall owner, and his eyes became red. Ever since Owen had died, the stall owner in front of him was the first to care about him. His heart that had turned cold due to Owen’s death once more warmed up, and in a trembling voice, he said, “Thank you, thank you so much. You really are a good person.” He received the parcel and immediately opened it, wolfing down the steamed buns as he was starving.

The owner also took out a bowl of warm water from his stall, “Little brother, eat slower and don’t choke, come drink some water.”

In just a short while, Ah Dai had finished all the five steamed buns in the parcel. Instantly, his spirit was lifted, and there was a warm feeling in his body as he drank the water. With much gratitude, he exclaimed, “Uncle, thank you so much! You are such a good person.”

The stall owner smiled, “I’m not really that good, just that when I was younger, I was in the same situation as you. I came upon a steamed bun stall, and really wanted to eat, but just like you, I had no money at that time. Luckily, that kind owner took me in, and even betrothed his own daughter to me. Because of him, I am able to live the life that I have now. We had the same predicament, some steamed buns can’t be considered as much. Little fella, where are you planning to go? Why did you not bring any money along, but looking at the sword on your back, you seem to be a martial arts

practitioner?”

Once he mentioned martial arts, Ah Dai could not help but think of the deceased Owen. There was sadness in his heart as he asked, “Uncle, thank you for your steamed buns, can you tell me where is the Magician’s Guild?”

The stall owner heard Ah Dai mention the Magician’s Guild and immediately revealed a look of admiration, “Magicians are all experts with great abilities, our town is big, so there is a sub-division of the Magician’s Guild, why? Are you looking for someone there? Or are you finding work there?”

Ah Dai scratched his head and replied, “I guess, it’s to find work.” After filling his stomach, and obtaining information about the Magician’s Guild, Ah Dai sorrowful mood suddenly became better.

“Follow this road and turn right at the second intersection, then walk to the end of that road and turn left. After passing one more intersection, you will be able to see it. The Magician’s Guild and the Mercenary Guild are both there. However, it is hard to find work at the Magician’s Guild, why not become a mercenary instead? There are many mercenary groups in the city that are recruiting now, and the pay is pretty good, you get a few gold coins each month. If there’s no other options, you can always work here, although it may be tougher, I can at least guarantee you a full meal. My wife is looking after the kids at home, and can’t help me out, so everything here is done by me.”

Ah Dai thanked the owner for his kind intentions, and continued on his way to the Magician’s Guild. He must do according to Owen’s

last words, and since Uncle had told him to register as a magician at the Magician's Guild, there must be a reason for it.

After turning a few corners, Ah Dai arrived onto a big street. There were many people walking on the street, and most of them were carrying weapons and wearing armor, with a mercenary badge on their chests. He didn't have to walk to far before a colossal building appeared in front of his eyes. There was a huge logo of a shield and two long swords on the top of the building, and below the logo, there were two big words*— Mercenary Guild. There were people continuously streaming in and out of the house, and it was bustling with life.

[TN: In chinese, Mercenary Guild is 佣兵工会, so technically it would be four big words, but then it makes no sense in english so I changed it to two.]

Ah Dai curiously glanced at it, but just as he was about to walk forward, someone wearing the mercenary uniform walked towards him. That man was even taller than Ah Dai, and he had puffy red hair. He was wearing brown leather armor with a long sword hanging from his waist, the mercenary badge on his chest was a red colored lion head, and he looked extremely sturdy.

"This little brother, please stay." The big fellow stood in front of Ah Dai.

Shocked, Ah Dai asked, "Me? Is there anything wrong?"

The big fellow let out a laugh, "Little brother, looking at your attire, you seem to be a martial arts practitioner, are you wanting to join a mercenary group! Our Red Lion Mercenary Group is pretty famous

in this city, come join us, the basic wages each month is three gold coins. If your mercenary level increases in the future, there will be a corresponding increase in wages, and you will also receive a part of the remuneration for each mission. This is the best treatment for mercenaries."

The big fellow spoke very quickly, thus Ah Dai did not fully understand his meaning, and shook his head, "I, I don't want to be a mercenary."

The fellow was dumbfounded as he furrowed his brows and questioned, "What? Are you sure, even though you don't seem like a local, but all the young warriors that come here, all of them want to become mercenaries and gain some merits for themselves. Little fella, if you don't grab hold of such a good chance, you will regret it in the future."

Ah Dai continued to shake his head, "I'm sorry, I really don't want to be a mercenary. Please step aside."

The big fellow hmpf-ed and muttered, "What a good-for-nothing brat." As he spoke, he turned around and walked towards the Mercenary Guild.

Ah Dai was miffled, not joining a mercenary guild meant that he was a good-for-nothing? *Nevermind, I'll ignore him, I have to get to the Magician's Guild first.* Hurriedly, he walked forward.

The Magician's Guild was also a large building, next to the Mercenary Guild, but it seemed much more deserted, there were only a few people who entered and left the building. Just as Ah Dai was about to walk in, a voice came from behind him, "Wait a minute,

little brother." Ah Dai turned around and took a look, it was the red-haired fellow from earlier, and this time he had brought another person. The person was around 1.8 metres tall, seemed to be in his forties, he had no facial hair, and his hair and eyes were both black. There was a glint in his eyes, and he was also carrying a TianGang broadsword, like Ah Dai's, on his back, seeming very authoritative.

Stunned, Ah Dai merely stood there and watched as the two men walked towards him. The red-haired fellow said, "Little brother, this is the vice-leader of your Red Lion Mercenary Group, he should be your senior from your school."

Ah Dai was shocked when he heard that the other man was a senior from his school. Looking at the sword hilt behind the man's back, he instantly thought of Uncle's words. Suddenly, he realised that the vice-leader of the mercenary group, should be someone from the TianGang School Uncle had once told him that, if he met any people from the TianGang School, he must definitely be respectful. Immediately, he bowed and said, "Uncle, how are you."

The middle-aged man with black hair smiled, "Little brother, I wonder which senior brother is your master? I am Feng Ping, judging from your age, I should be your senior uncle."

Senior Uncle? Ah Dai shook his head, "I, I don't have any master, only teacher."

There was delight in Feng Ping's heart as he thought, *This silly kid, he must have never seen the world, and only just started wandering the continent.* In a gentle voice, he asked, "Then, what is the name of your teacher?"

Ah Dai hesitated for a moment, before replying, “I, I cannot say.” Owen had instructed him to always be careful outside, and he must not easily reveal his identity. He must not speak of Uncle Owen’s name, and even more so, he must not tell the man about Teacher Gliss.

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 015: The Magician Exam

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

We are all a bunch of lazy people… Enjoy…~

Chapter 15: The Magician Exam

Feng Ping only thought that Ah Dai was forbidden from saying his teacher's name, and did not take it to heart, smiling as he commented, "You really are a respectful kid, not bad, you're worthy of being from our TianGang School. Come, let us find a place to have a good chat." As he spoke, he grabbed Ah Dai's elbow and led him away.

Ah Dai did not want to follow him, but Owen had instructed him to be polite to people from the TianGang School, so he could only reluctantly be dragged away by Feng Ping, to an area behind the Mercenary Guild.
The area behind the Mercenary Guild was a large training ground, and many mercenaries who did not have missions would always go there to practice their martial arts. Walking into the training ground, there were currently quite some people practicing their martial arts, and when they saw Feng Ping, most of them would call out 'Big Brother Feng' or 'Leader Feng'.

After Feng Ping greeted everyone one by one, he pulled Ah Dai into the center of the training ground, "Okay, here is good." Using one hand to pull out the large sword behind his back, he smiled and said,

“Since you can’t tell me your teacher’s name, then let senior uncle try guessing it. As long as you execute some moves of the TianGang Sword Techniques, I should be able to guess which senior brother’s disciple you are.”
Ah Dai stood dumbly at the center, unsure of what to do. He had just stepped into the society and he was like a newborn child, not knowing anything.

Feng Ping shouted, “Draw your sword! Let senior uncle give you some tips.” As he spoke, his hands gripped the sword, and a faint white light radiated from the sword tip, it was precisely the Boundless Life dou qi.

[TN: suggestions please, boundless life/sheng sheng? People who cultivate the Boundless Life Art have different true qi and dou qi that contain holy attribute/ are more bountiful. In chinese it is called 生生斗气 (Life Life Dou Qi), but it sounds awkward, so for previous chapters I just left it as dou qi/true qi.]

Looking at Feng Ping use his Boundless Life dou qi, there was a sense of familiarity within Ah Dai’s heart. It was as though Owen had revived, and wanted to exchange some moves with him. Since Uncle had said that he was from the TianGang School, then the person in front of him, must indeed be his senior uncle. Pulling out his own TianGang Sword, Ah Dai respectfully said, “Senior uncle, please advise me.” The image of Owen using a tree branch to guide him flashed across his mind, and Ah Dai’s eyes became slightly red as he raised the TianGang Sword high above his head, letting out a huge shout. The Boundless Life dou qi surged out, carrying a wisp of white light. It was like his usual splitting of the waves, his

indomitable momentum, that domineering aura, suddenly surged forth, causing the red-haired fellow to take a few steps back.
Feng Ping's eyes lit up as he exclaimed, "Good momentum!" His hands gripped the broadsword as he rushed forward to block, just hitting against the edge of Ah Dai's sword.

Ah Dai felt the Boundless Life true qi within his body was surging out like waves, and his white colored dou qi suddenly produced faint ripples. With a 'clang', the two TianGang broadswords clashed against each other in the air, and the rebound force caused Ah Dai to take a step back. However, it felt that the senior uncle's power was not as strong as Uncle Owen's.
Feng Ping had to take three continuous steps back before he could stabilise himself and he was taken aback. The dou qi on Ah Dai's sword was precisely the Boundless Life dou qi that was the pride of the TianGang Sword School, however the difference was that, the child in front of him could actually send out three waves of dou qi in a single strike. Its power did not seem to be any weaker than his, and the boy seemed to have even more profound cultivation than him. According to his knowledge, none of his senior brothers should have been able to teach such an outstanding disciple. Retreating, he gathered his dou qi, and suddenly burst towards Ah Dai, like a streak of rainbow. It was one of the moves of the TianGang Sword Techniques, Rainbow Through the Sun.

The clashing of their strikes just now, allowed Ah Dai's confidence to increase, and with another loud shout, he swung his sword, using the easiest move of the 9 moves in the simplified TianGang Sword Techniques, cleaving.

[TN: update, I've changed the names of the 3 basic sword stances in chap 12.1 from (slash, slice and stab) to (cleave, pick, and stab)]

Feng Ping looked at Ah Dai's TianGang Sword cleaving against his, but he was unable to counter. He did not know why, but it seemed that Ah Dai's sword had sealed all the possible paths of countering and he could only forcefully fight head on. Clang, another sound rang out, as Ah Dai once more stepped back, while successfully resolving Feng Ping's strike. Their sparring had attracted the attentions of many mercenaries, but these mercenaries were of lower ranks and their martial arts were not very good, so they could only cheer on from the sides.
Feng Ping landed on the ground with both feet, his breathing was slightly irregular as he quickly sent away the mercenaries nearby, and pulled Ah Dai aside, praising, "Good sword skills. Kid, you must be the leading 4th generation disciple in our Sword School. Quickly tell me, which senior brother taught you?"

Ah Dai placed the TianGang Sword back into his big leather bag behind his back, while he slowly thought and replied, "I, I don't know teacher's name. He only taught me sword skills."
Feng Ping continued to ask, "Then, tell me, where is your teacher at now?" He thought to himself, that his senior brothers from the school who had better martial arts were currently in seclusion training, as long as the silly kid before him reveals his teacher's whereabouts, he would surely be able to guess which senior brother was the kid's teacher.
Ah Dai's eyes turned red as he replied, "My teacher, he, he is already dead." Thinking of Owen's death, sorrow surged within his heart,

and he could not help but start weeping.

Feng Ping was shocked, and involuntarily exclaimed, “What?” He continued to question Ah Dai, helplessly Ah Dai could only describe Owen’s appearance. However, no matter how much Feng Ping pondered, he simply could not figure out who was the dead senior brother. It seemed like, he would have to wait till he returned to the mountain, and ask his master about this.

“Ah Dai, how did your master die?”

Ah Dai knew that he could not answer this question, thus he hesitated for a long while before he finally said, “He was killed by a bunch of people in black clothes. I also don’t know why, but before teacher died, he told me to wander the continent, so I came here.”

Feng Ping patted Ah Dai’s shoulder, and consoled, “Okay, don’t be too sad. How about this, in a few days’ time, you can follow me when I return to the mountain. I’ll bring you to meet Grand master, he will surely get justice for your master.”

Ah Dai was shocked, thinking, Does Uncle’s master still have a master? However, he did not dare to ask and merely replied, “Senior Uncle, I, I can’t return to the mountain with your now. Teacher had instructed me to finish some tasks before he died, I’ll go with you after I have finished the tasks.” Right now, what he wanted to do first was to register and become a magician, and secondly, to return to the Illusionary Forest and see his Teacher Gliss. If he followed Feng Ping back to the TianGang Sword School, he would surely be delayed.

Furrowing his brows, Feng Ping said, “What is so urgent that you

must do it immediately?"

Ah Dai lowered his head, "Senior Uncle, don't make it difficult for me, it's all some private matters of teacher, he had specially instructed me to finish those tasks before he died."

Sighing, Feng Ping relented, "Okay then, follow me." As he spoke, he took Ah Dai into a small room behind the Mercenary Guild. The Red Lion Mercenary Group that Feng Ping was in, could be considered to a First Grade mercenary group, and had quite some fame on the continent. Originally, he wanted to pull Ah Dai into joining the group, but looking at Ah Dai now, he could only give up on this idea.

Feng Ping took out a small sack from the cabinet, and passed it to Ah Dai, "Take this on your way. After you have finished your master's tasks, just come back and find me here. Generally, I will always be here, but even if I'm not, I will usually return within a month. At that time, I'll bring you to the mountain. Be careful on your journey, the continent is not very peaceful right now."

Ah Dai took the heavy sack, with his experience as a thief, he only needed one touch to realise that it was a sack of money, "Senior Uncle, thank you, but, how can I take your money?"

"What's there to be polite with senior uncle, we are all a family, helping each other out is a given. Right, Ah Dai, don't you have a proper name?"
Shaking his head, Ah Dai replied, "Ever since I can recall, I was always called Ah Dai."

Feng Ping sighed and said, "You must have suffered quite a bit when

you were young. Ah Dai, although I have only exchanged two moves with you just now, I feel that your Boundless Life dou qi does not seem to be any weaker than mine, which stage are you at now? It seems that you are more proficient than me in mastering the essence of the boundless life."
"I have cultivated the Boundless Life Art to the Fourth Stage, it should be at the Fifth Stage soon," Ah Dai scratched his head and answered.
Hearing this, Feng Ping was shocked, he had only just reached the Fifth Stage last year, while the silly looking kid seemed to cultivate even faster than him. One must know, after reaching the Third Stage, every subsequent stage becomes harder to cultivate. Even in his master's generation, only one or two people had cultivated to the Eighth Stage, and only Grandmaster had reached the Ninth Stage. When he was at the age of this child before him, he had only reached the border of the Third Stage, and his master was already very pleased with him.

"Reaching the Fifth Stage is already very good. You must continue to work hard, and you can surely be the glory of our TianGang Sword School in the future."

Ah Dai nodded, "Senior Uncle, I will surely do that." He had already planned that, after finding his Teacher Gliss, he would focus on training and cultivation for a few years.

"Since you still have many things to do, I shall not hold you back any longer. If there's a chance in the future, let us have a good chat." Feng Ping escorted Ah Dai all the way out of the Mercenary Guild before he finally stopped. Under his concerned gaze, Ah Dai did not

dare to go straight to the Magicians' Guild, but instead walked away and took a roundabout route to return. This was not because he had become clever, but rather, it was because he felt that it would be inappropriate for Feng Ping to see him enter the Magicians' Guild.

"Kid, did you enter the wrong place." A deep voice rang out.
Ah Dai had just stepped across the entrance of the Magicians' Guild and he was still thinking about the kind-hearted senior uncle. The sudden voice gave him a scare, as he looked around him, only to see a great magic hexagram drawn on the floor of the great hall. There was also a huge white wooden board on the wall across him, and there were quite a few names written on it, ranking from high to low. At the top was the title of the Mage, but there were no names below it, only the word 'Vacant'. After that was the Grand Magician, with only one name below it; followed by Advanced Magicians, Intermediate Magicians and Junior Magicians, there were the most names below the Junior Magicians title. Under the wooden board was a counter, and in the whole hall, there was only the old man wearing yellow colored magician robes behind that counter. It was the old magician who had spoken out earlier.

Ah Dai scratched his head and tentatively asked, "Here, isn't this the Magicians' Guild?"

The old magician remained seated and replied, "Indeed, this is the Magicians' Guild. Please leave, we do not have any magicians here who are willing to become mercenaries."

Ah Dai was stunned, the old magician before him had thought had he was one of members of a mercenary group. Immediately, he waved his hands, saying, "No, no, I'm not a mercenary. I'm here to take the

magician's exam as well as to receive stipends." He had finally found the Magicians' Guild, and he wondered how he would look like when he donned the magician robes.

The old magician was dumbfounded when he heard Ah Dai's words, "Are you kidding? Do warriors practice magic too? It's such a rare sight."
Ah Dai blinked his eyes, and retorted, "Why can't warriors learn magic too? And, I am indeed a magician! Uncle told me, I should at least be at the level of a junior magician."

The old magician furrowed his brows, the kid wearing warrior clothes did not seem to joking, but with the TianGang Sword behind his back, he seemed to have quite decent martial arts! So how could he learn magic? Magic was not something that anyone could learn, only those with high natural talent could learn it, even he himself, was only an earth elemental junior magician after practising for so many years. As he had no titles of nobility, he could only be a custodian in this building. Looking at the silly looking kid before him, he did not believe that the kid would be any stronger than him. He waved his hand towards Ah Dai and said, "Come over here."

Ah Dai stepped forward, walking before the old magician. The old magician carefully sized him up, saying, "No matter how I see it, you look like a warrior. However, since you are willing to accept the exam, then hand over the exam fee first. If you manage to pass the exam, the fee will be returned to you, if not, the money will belong to the Guild."
Shocked, Ah Dai asked, "There's still an exam fee? I haven't heard Uncle mention it, how much is it?"

The old magician held out five fingers, and wiggled them, “Not much, just 5 gold coins.”

Five gold coins, Ah Dai started using his fingers to count. 1 gold coin was 10 silver coins which is 100 copper coins, 1 copper coin could buy 2 steamed buns, so 5 gold coins could buy 1000 buns. 1000 buns? That was enough buns to last him a few months. Stammering, Ah Dai asked, “Uncle, can, can I pay less?”

The old magician hmpf-ed in disdain and snapped, “Less? You want to pay less? There are rules here, if you don’t have the money, then quickly leave. Come back after you get enough money.”

Ah Dai felt for the sack of coins that Feng Ping gave him just now, gritted his teeth, and took out the sack. He hoped that the sack was full of silver coins, so that he could have enough to pay for the exam fee of 5 gold coins. Placing the sack on the table, he loosened the strings, and glanced at the old magician again, before opening the sack. Once he opened the sack, both Ah Dai and the old magician were stunned, this was because, the sack was actually full of gold coins, and there were even 7 or 8 purple colored amethyst coins inside.

The old magician could not help but exclaim, “Looking your shabby clothes, who would have thought that you were so rich.”

Ah Dai did not care how much money he had, as long as he could take the magician exam and become a magician, he would be satisfied in fulfilling Owen’s wish.

Passing 5 gold coins to the old magician, he asked, “Then, can I take the exam now?”

The old magician hmpf-ed, “Who knew that such a shabby looking kid was actually so rich, okay then, wait here for a moment.” As he spoke, he entered a small door.

After a while, the old magician walked out with a blue-robed magician. “Branch leader, this is him, look at the warrior clothes that he is wearing, how can he be a magician?”

The blue-robed magician seemed to be around forty or fifty years old, and he glared at the old magician, saying, “Old Huang, you are getting more presumptuous. Although magicians are a revered profession, you cannot treat people in such a manner! If the other branches knew that we have ruined the reputation of magicians, there will be trouble in store for me. Are you getting tired of being a custodian?”

The old magician immediately let out an apologetic smile, “No, no, branch leader, I know my mistakes, I will definitely not do this again.”
The blue-robed magician nodded in satisfaction, and walked towards Ah Dai. Ah Dai could clearly feel that there were extremely strong spiritual fluctuations coming from the blue-robed magician in front of him.
Amiably, the blue-robed magician asked, “Lad, are you taking the magician exam?”

Ah Dai nodded and replied, “Yes, I’ve already paid the fees, are we going to start now?” With the money that Feng Ping had given him, he was thinking of quickly finishing up the matters here, then going back to the steamed bun stall to return the money for the buns. That person had treated him so well, and Ah Dai felt indebted to him.

The blue-robed magician gently smiled, and stretched out his hand to Ah Dai, “Here, take back the 5 gold coins.”

Shocked, Ah Dai hurriedly replied, ”I, I really am a magician! I don’t want the money, just quickly start the exam please.”

Smiling, the blue-robed magician pointed towards the old magician, “Lad, I apologize on behalf of his actions just now, there are no fees for the magician exam. He felt that you did not seem like a magician and purposely made things difficult for you. Take back the money, and I will immediately start the exam for you.”
Ah Dai finally accepted the gold coins from the blue-robed magician’s hands, and carefully placed them back into the sack. Without delay, the blue-robed magician said, “Follow me.” Under his lead, the two of them entered a smaller hall.

The smaller hall was in the shape of a square building. Once he entered, Ah Dai could feel strong magic undulations coming from the four walls and the ceiling.

The blue-robed magician seemed to have sensed Ah Dai’s curiosity as he explained, “This place is for magic examinations, therefore there are magic enchantments placed within the walls. Later, you can just display your full power without concerns. My name is Giger, and I am the leader of this Branch Guild. Okay, you may begin.”

Ah Dai was stunned, start? What was he supposed to do, it was his first time going to a Magicians Guild, so how could he know how the magic exam was like? “Uncle Giger, how, how do I start?”

Giger furrowed his brows, he was the only grand magician in this city, and people would normally respectfully call him Sir grand

magician, but the kid before him actually called him uncle, thus he could not help but feel uncomfortable. However, he was usually tolerant, and would not make a fuss with a kid, so he just indifferently said, “You just have to cast your strongest magic spell or the magic spell that you are best at. Whichever element you are, just use the magic related to it.”

“En,” Ah Dai replied. The strongest magic spell that he was good at, should be the fire meteor spell. He recalled the incantations, and was just about to cast the spell, when he realised that Giger was still standing in front of him. With kind intentions, he warned, “Uncle Giger, can you step to the side? I’m afraid of the spell hitting you.”

Giger let out a smile as he said, “Your magic spell will not be able to harm me, just be at ease and cast it.” He was thinking that, with Ah Dai’s age, he was at most a junior magician.

At the same time when Ah Dai was undergoing the magician exam, Feng Ping was feeling extremely regretful in the Mercenary Guild. He paced back and forth in the room, muttering to himself, “I am so stupid! How can I just let Ah Dai go? The deaths of senior or junior brothers are important in the school, no matter what, I need to go back and report. Ahh——, I really am so stupid! No, I must immediately go back and report to the Elders, if not, when there are investigations in the future, I will surely be in trouble. Ah Dai had already left for quite some time, forget it, there’s no time to find him, I’ll just have to report back to the school by myself.” Thinking of this, Feng Ping briefly packed his bags, left some instructions for his men, and immediately got on a horse, speeding towards the city gates.

In the Magician's Guild back hall.

Ah Dai chanted, "Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! Please bestow upon me your blazing strength, in my name, by thy power, searing flame appear." With two crackling sounds, two dark blue flames instantly appeared in Ah Dai's palms.

Giger got a great shock, in order to summon such deep blue flames, one must be at least an intermediate magician. Not daring to be careless, he hastily chanted some incantations, and cast a water protection spell. As he finished chanting, a layer of faint blue ripples appeared before him, instantly blocking the heat from Ah Dai's flame spell.

However, Ah Dai did not just stop here. His hands slowly clasped together as he chanted in a loud voice, "Arise, orbs of fire!" Using a shocking amount of spiritual force, the blue flames condensed into many small fireballs of 3 centimeters in diameter, floating in the air. A glint flashed across Ah Dai's eyes as he sent the large sea of blue fireballs towards Giger.

Giger was full of praise, "Good, your fire meteors are pretty strong. Under the protection of water, in thy name, by the power of the water elements in the heavens and earth, condense, ——Ice Wall."
Instantly, a thick layer of white colored ice appeared before Giger just as he finished chanting.
"Boom, boom, boom boom… …" Countless blue fireballs rammed against the ice wall in front of Ah Dai, leaving behind deep marks in the ice wall.
Giger had originally thought that Ah Dai's fire meteors only contained one wave of power, but he had never thought that, there

would be endless fireballs. The relentless barrage of fireballs caused a crack in the ice wall, and it actually started to collapse after a short while. Helplessly, Giger could only take two steps back, and summon another ice wall.

It was not that Ah Dai did not want to stop the fire meteors, but he was too anxious, and under such intensity, his magic force rapidly decreased. The ice wall in front of him blocked all of his attacks, and he could only continue to control his fireballs to attack. He thought that he had to break through the defense in order to pass.

Ah Dai successfully broke apart two ice walls, and when Giger summoned the third ice wall, his magic force finally ran out. His face became extremely pale as the blue flames in his hands gradually dissipated. His body felt weak as a strong wave of fatigue washed over him, causing him to stop and gasp for air. There was disappointment in Ah Dai's heart as he thought, Why? Why can't I even pass the junior magician exam?

Giger was even more surprised, although he had caused Ah Dai to finally deplete his magic force, he still had a hard time defending. Of course, it was partly due to the fact that he was solely focused on defense.
Withdrawing the ice wall, Giger walked up to Ah Dai, and praised, "Well done lad, having such strong magic power at such a young age, your future will be limitless! But, with your magic force, why didn't you execute grander magic spells? Although the fire meteor spell will get stronger according to the magic force that you have, it is still an elementary magic spell after all, and it cannot display great power."

Ah Dai lowered his head and muttered, “I, I only know how to use the fire meteor spell, it is the spell that I’m best at. I, I’ll leave first then.” As he finished speaking, he turned around and started to walk away.

Giger immediately stopped him, and asked in surprise, “You haven’t claimed your magician badge and your monthly stipend, why are you in such a hurry to leave?”

Shocked, Ah Dai pointed to himself and asked, “Can I still get a magician badge even though I didn’t pass the exam?”

Only now did Giger realised that, the silly kid before him, who was quite talented, actually thought that he had not passed the exam. Giger let out a smile as he said, “Child, your performance was already very good, with your standards, you’ve reached the intermediate magician level. If you know some grander spells, perhaps you might even reach the advanced magician level. After you go back, you have to consult your teacher, hopefully next time when you return, you can pass the advanced magician review. Child, at your age, apart from the clergy, there are very few people who are able to reach such standards.”

Immense delight filled Ah Dai as he exclaimed, “Are you saying, that I’ve already passed the junior magician qualifications?”

Giger replied, “No, you have passed the intermediate magician qualifications. Wait for a while, I’ll go get the registration form. After you’ve registered, you will officially become an intermediate magician.”
“Thank you, thank you Uncle Giger.”

Giger furrowed his brows as he said, “Don’t call me uncle, call me Grand Magician Giger next time.”

After passing the magician exam, Ah Dai was overjoyed, he had finally fulfilled one of Owen’s wishes. In excitement, he readily exclaimed, “Yes, yes, thank you Grand Magician Giger.”

Giger smiled, and walked towards one of the walls. Chanting some incantations, a blue light flashed, causing a small door to appear. Under Ah Dai’s amazement, Giger opened the door and walked in. Ah Dai was filled with admiration, thinking, The magic level of Grand Magician Giger was indeed profound! I wonder if Teacher Gliss had that sort of power, after I return, I must definitely work hard and learn more magic from Teacher. To Ah Dai, the fancy magics were much more interesting than dully practising martial arts.

Just as he was immersed in his thoughts, the door towards the main hall suddenly opened, and the old magician came running in, with a look of panic on his face. He glanced at Ah Dai, and asked, “Lad, where’s the branch leader?”

Ah Dai replied honestly, “He told me that I’ve passed the exam, so he went to get the registration forms.”

The old magician was shocked, and there was a tinge of jealousy in his voice as he remarked, “Who would have thought that you were able to pass the exam. Youngsters are really not pragmatic, learning both martial arts and magic, be careful of not being able to master anything ultimately.”

Ah Dai immediately nodded his head and replied, “Yes, my Uncle has said the same thing before, thank you for your advice.”

Ah Dai's politeness had caused the old magician to feel embarrassed, as he coughed two times and did not speak anymore.
"Why are you so slow! Does your magicians' guild have such low efficiency?" A clear voice, like the sounds of silver bells, rang out from the main hall.

The door opened, and there was only brightness in front of Ah Dai, it seemed as though the whole back hall had lit up for the person who had entered. It was a fourteen, or fifteen year old girl, who looked like an angel simply by standing there. Her long, light-blue hair was braided into two plaits, her height was around 1.6 metres, and she was clothed in an immaculate white dress. There were two faint dimples on her fair skin and her glimmering eyes were extremely mesmerising, but there was a faint sense of anger in her expression as she glared at the old magician in dissatisfaction, with one of her hands on her slim waist, while her other hand was twirling a small magic wand that was only about 1 foot long. Ah Dai could not see the wand clearly as she was twirling it, but he could vaguely sense that, it was surely not a normal magic wand. The most unusual thing was that, there was a faint holy qi emanating from the girl's body, making her seem like a celestial fairy.

Ah Dai was in a daze, he had never seen such an elegant and refined beauty before! If comparing Xi Fei to her, the former was like a firefly while the latter was the bright moon. (totally incomparable)
The girl instantly discovered his fixated gaze on her, and immediately used her wand to point at Ah Dai's nose, while hmpf-ing in anger, "You big blockhead, what are you looking at? Haven't you seen any pretty girls before!"

Ah Dai lowered his flushed face in embarrassment, thinking to himself, Although this girl is very pretty, she is way too hot-tempered, even more severe than Xi Fei, Yatou is still the best to me. The old magician smile apologetically, “Little Miss, it’s better for you to wait in the main hall, the branch leader has gone to take some stuff, he will come back soon.”

The girl pursed her lips as she said, “No, I’ll wait here, quickly call him over. Your efficiency is really too slow, if not for this young mistress needing money urgently, I won’t even have come to this lowly place.”
It was at this time, that Giger finally came out from the door in the wall, while holding a pile of stuff in his hands. Seeing the current situation, he could not help but feel shocked, he took a glance at the angry girl before he asked the old magician, “Old Huang, what’s going on here?”

The old magician immediately let out a sigh of relief as he saw Giger, and let out a bitter smile, replying, “I wonder what day it is today, normally there won’t be anyone coming for the magic exam in a whole month, but today, two people came. This…, no, this young mistress wants to take the magic exam too. Since you’ve come, I’ll return to the main hall then.” As he finished speaking, he immediately rushed out.

Giger passed the items in his hands to Ah Dai, saying, “Lad, you’ll have to wait a while, after I’m done testing this girl, I will help you register.”

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 016: The Willful Girl

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Enjoy more chapters!~

Chapter 16: The Wilful Girl

Ah Dai immediately agreed, he had already passed the magician exam, and he didn't mind waiting a while longer.

Giger turned towards the girl, smiling, "Young lady, if I'm not wrong, you should be from the Holy Church?"

The girl was shocked as she replied, "How did you know?"

"No matter what, I am still a grand magician, if I can't even recognise the highest blessing magic, Light of God, wouldn't that be too shameful? I wonder which holy father is this young lady the daughter of."

There was shock in the girl's heart, she would never have thought that even after running all the way here, she would still be recognised. Pursing her lips, she said, "I came here to take a magician exam, not to let you investigate my identity. You must be the branch leader right, quickly, let me take the magician exam."

Giger was secretly complaining, he could see that the girl in front of him was not of ordinary origins. The blessing magic, Light of God,

could only be executed at birth, by light attribute magicians who had blood ties with the girl, it enabled her to obtain a holy physique since birth, and she would be able to learn light attribute magic much easier. At the same time, this blessing magic also had the property of dispelling all evil. This meant that, the seniors of this girl, must be the priests of the Holy Church, as the people who can use the Light of God magic, should at least be at the level of an ivory-robed priest. Although magicians were revered in the continent, they are still incomparable to the Holy Church, in addition, with their same beliefs, all of the members of the Holy Church had strong bonds with one another. Giger did not want to offend the girl in front of him, and risk being persecuted by the Holy Church. He immediately smiled apologetically and said, “Since young lady is from the Holy Church, why not be a holy daughter? Why come to us and take some exam? If I am to let you take the exam, I won’t be able to shoulder the blame when your seniors come looking for me!”

The girl hmpf-ed in anger as she waved the wand in her hand, “I don’t care about being some holy daughter, all they do is to pray and cultivate the whole day, it’s so boring! Quickly let me take the exam, if not I’ll call my father to stop all your funding here.”

Listening to the girl’s words, Giger was extremely anxious, he had realised the severity of the current situation. It seemed that the father of this girl, was one of the influential people in the Holy Church, only they had the authority to control the Magicians’ Guild.

The original good impression that Ah Dai had of the girl, instantly disappeared after the few words between Giger and her. It was the

first time that he had seen such a willful and obstinate girl. Fearful of being dragged in, he quickly stepped to the side, and quietly watched Giger deal with the situation.

Giger hesitated for a long while, before he finally said, “Okay then, since you insist on taking the exam, then I shan’t stop you. However, if your seniors were to find out, it is none of my business.”

Impatiently, the girl said, “Okay, okay, just quickly start. How is the exam like?”

Giger secretly let out a bitter smile as he thought to himself, *Why did both of them come to take the test without knowing what the test was like.* He had no choice but to explain, “Just use your strongest magic to attack me.”

The girl hmpf-ed, “Okay, be careful then.” She raised the magic wand in her hand, and chanted, “May light banish all evil, may the divine power guide the confused, release, the elements freely floating in the air —— Divine Light.” While she was chanting, the magic wand in her hand released a circle of faint white light, and strong holy qi filled the whole back hall. The ring of light around her wand gradually increased, instantly enveloping the girl within. There was a trace of smile on her face as she lightly waved her wand, “Divine Light, listen to my command, and dispel the evil in this world.” A ray of holy light that was about half a metre long, surged towards Giger under her command.

Giger lamented to himself, since when did he become evil. The Divine Light spell that the girl used, was a high level light attribute magic. In all the different types of magic, apart from darkness

attribute magic, light attribute magic had a certain effect in boosting the magic of other attributes. This sort of high level magic, could only be used by advanced magicians who had undergone a baptism by the crimson-robed priests, and Giger had no confidence in taking on the attack. Not to mention, he also could not harm the girl before him. Helplessly, he could only increase his water protection to the maximum, and condense all of his magic force into waves, dispersing the divine light aside, with the principle of refraction. However, he had forgotten that, apart from the girl and himself, there was still Ah Dai in the room.

Ah Dai had long been mesmerised by the girl's dazzling magic, her divine light seemed so much stronger than his fire meteors. Furthermore, the girl seemed even younger than himself, but her magic standards were so much higher, and he could not help but be in awe. Actually, how could he know that, the reason why the girl was able to use the Divine Light magic, was really due to her holy physique, and mostly importantly, due to the magic wand in her hand.

The divine light suddenly shone onto the Giger's water protection, causing ripples to appear, and the water protection shook non-stop as sweat poured down Giger's forehead. There was a flash of light, and just before the divine light was about to hit Giger, he managed to refract it away. However, the exhausted him had not taken any notice of the angle of refraction, and the divine light instantly shot towards Ah Dai.

Ah Dai had already used up all of his magic force earlier during the exam, and he did not have any time to react as he watched it come

closer to him, enveloping him in a blinding flash of light.The immense impact forced Ah Dai against the wall, and the holy qi burst out, turning the items that Ah Dai was holding into ashes. Instantly he felt extreme pain, and at this crucial moment, the Hell's Sword near his chest released a layer of faint blue light, covering Ah Dai's body while preventing the divine light from getting close. The white jade ring on Ah Dai's index finger also suddenly lit up, and with a flash, the divine light started to be rapidly absorbed by the ring. Ah Dai's body fell limp as the Hell's Sword retracted its evil qi.

The girl let out a shout, she was shocked to discover, the magic force within her body seemed to be crazily absorbed by the ring on that silly looking boy. In just a few short moments, what is left of her little magic force and the divine light had totally disappeared. Devoid of energy, she collapsed onto the ground, while staring dumbfoundedly at Ah Dai.

The white jade ring returned to its original state, and Ah Dai did not know what had happened either, thus he simply stood there at a loss.

Giger was also stunned, he curiously took a few glances towards Ah Dai, while he used his remaining magic force to cast a water recovery spell on the girl.

With the help of the magic spell, a red flush appeared on the girl's face, and her complexion seemed much better. Slowly, she stood up and walked towards Ah Dai whilst glaring at him. Stretching out a finger and pointing at Ah Dai, she said angrily, "I am taking the magician exam, why did you interfere. You must compensate me, and return me my magic force!"

Although Ah Dai was not really injured, his back was still hurting from the initial impact. However, he had indeed seen the girl collapse before him, and he had no idea why the ring would absorb so much of her magic force. Feeling extremely apologetic, he quickly said, “I, I am sorry, young lady, I, I didn’t mean to. How do you want me to compensate?”

The girl rolled her eyes as she said, “Since your ring has stolen away my magic force, then, give it to me as compensation.”

Once he heard that the girl wanted his ring, Ah Dai immediately hid his left hand behind his back. It was a present from the strange fish and he could not bear to give it away, thus he stammered, “No! This, this ring is very important to me, I can’t give this to you, can you take something else?”

Stubbornly, the girl insisted, “No, I must have that ring.” Since young, she was pampered and no matter who it was, they had to be respectful towards her, thus she could have anything that she wanted.

Giger walked over, attempting to dissuade her, “Young lady, I think you shouldn’t do this, if not for the ring of this little fellow absorbing your divine light, he might have…”

Giving Giger an angry glare, the girl replied, “You still dare say, it’s all your fault, who asked you to reflect my divine light. I haven’t even settled things with you yet, don’t bother putting on a good person act.”

Giger secretly thought to himself, if he had not deflected the divine light, he might really have been cleansed into nothingness. He did

not dare to provoke this girl of unknown origins, and quietly stepped to the side. The silly kid really had back luck, but it was best for him to play it safe and not intervene.

Ah Dai glanced at Giger, then at the girl, “I really cannot give you the ring, how about… How about I give you some money?” Giving money was already Ah Dai’s limits, after all, to him, one gold coin was worth two hundred steamed buns! As he spoke, he took out the sack of money that Feng Ping had given him.

“Who wants your stinky money! Okay, it’s fine if you don’t give me the ring, but you must fulfil one condition of mine.” The girl hmpf-ed. Looking at the silly kid before her, if she did not bully him a little, she would not have been called ‘the little demoness’ within the Holy Church.

Ah Dai let out a sigh of relief, as long as it was not his ring, he did not care much about other stuff. Hurriedly, he asked, “What condition?”

There was a trace of cunningness in her eyes as the girl replied, “This young lady wants to have fun in the continent, but I’m currently lacking an attendant… From your appearance, perhaps you might have some skill. As long as you follow me, and be my attendant for one year, I’ll forgive you. This condition is very lenient right? For me to let you follow me should be considered your good fortune.”

Abruptly, Ah Dai exclaimed, “No, I can’t agree to this.” He still had to rush back to Teacher Gliss, so how could he tarry with the girl?

The girl stared at Ah Dai, and after a while, her beautiful big eyes

started to turn red as she sniffed a few times. Tears streamed down her cheeks as she sobbed, “You, you big bully, such a big man bullying a young lady, aren’t you shameless! Wu, wuwu… …” (555)

Looking at the girl crying, Ah Dai got a shock and instantly lost his composure. In his memories, only when he left Teacher Gliss and when Owen died, would he cry. Could it be that, him absorbing the girl’s magic force had made her so upset?

“Ah! Young miss, please stop crying. It’s all my fault, it’s all my fault, please stop crying.”

It would have been better if he did not try to console her, she immediately started crying even louder once he tried to console her. Perhaps she had gotten tired, as she simply sat on the floor, whilst crying even harder. Ah Dai glanced helplessly towards Giger but Giger only shrugged his shoulders, indicating that he had no idea too. This sort of problem, was not what he, as a grand magician, could solve. If others saw that there was a young lady crying to such an extent within the esteemed Magicians’ Guild, perhaps they might even suspect that there was something wrong under his leadership. He earnestly wished that the girl would quickly leave, but he had no other options but to wait.

Ah Dai squatted down by the girl, helplessly saying, “Okay, okay, stop crying first, let us discuss again, okay?”

Her tears disappeared just as fast as they appeared, once the girl heard Ah Dai’s words, she immediately stopped crying. Raising her pretty white face that glistened with tears, she sniffled, “Then you choose, either give the ring to me, or be my attendant for a year.”

There was a bitter expression on Ah Dai's face, "Can I be your attendant for a shorter period, one year is way too long, I've many things that I need to do!"

The girl's little nose twitched as tears started flowing down her cheeks once more. Ah Dai saw it and immediately used his sleeves, wiping away her tears, "I, I'll promise you then, please stop crying."

Seeing that Ah Dai had agreed, she instantly broke into smiles, "Okay, you've promised. Since you're a man, you must hold true to your words!"

Ah Dai lowered his head, and there was frown on his face as he muttered, "I'll be your attendant, but you must provide food for me."

Wiping away her tears, the girl agreed, "It's just food, isn't it? That's simple, but you must always listen to me in this one year, if not I'll cry."

Giger, who was standing by the side, sighed to himself, luckily the lass had not latched onto him, if not he would definitely suffer. However, he pitied the silly kid, to be an attendant for a year? He probably won't have a good time! Who knew what sort of crazy ideas that crafty lass would think of.

The girl stood up, looking towards Giger in annoyance, "What are you stoning there for? I just passed the magician exam, quickly bring us the stuff that we need."

Bashfully, Ah Dai said, "Sorry Grand Magician Giger, the items that you passed to me are gone."

How could Giger still be bothered about those items, all he wanted

now, was for the little demoness to live. Afraid that the girl would think up of other crazy requests, he quickly responded, “No problem, no problem, I’ll just take another set for you.” As he finished speaking, he rushed towards the door in the wall, disappearing from sight.

Seeing that Giger had left, the girl giggled and asked Ah Dai, “You haven’t told me, what is your name?”

Ah Dai replied honestly, “I, I am called Ah Dai.”

The girl was stunned, and she suddenly burst out laughing after a while. Her peals of laughter was pleasant to the ears, like ringing bells, “Ah, Ah Dai, hahahaha, it’s killing me, there’s actually such a name. Ah Dai, it actually doesn’t sound so bad, haha, ayy lmao!” Clutching at her stomach, she laughed till she could not even stand up straight.

“What’s wrong with being called Ah Dai? Is it really that funny?” Ah Dai muttered.

After a long time, the girl finally straightened her back, but once she saw Ah Dai, she could not help but let out another laugh, ridiculing, “You are indeed like what your name implies! Really seems so dumb.”

Ah Dai furrowed his brows, “It is very impolite to laugh at others.”

The girl seemed to be in a good mood as she laughed, “Okay, okay, I won’t laugh at you. Since I know your name now, I’ll tell you my name too. My name is Xuan Yue, but you can just call me Yue Yue.”

Ah Dai shook his head and said, “I’ll call you Xuan Yue then,

calling you Yue Yue feels weird.”

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed, “What’s weird about it? Don’t forget, you’re just my attendant, don’t have any weird ideas!”

[TN: weird ideas (͡° ͜ʖ ͡°)]

Ah Dai did not even dare to face Xuan Yue and simply wanted to avoid her, not to mention having any weird ideas. Thus, he pursed his lips and said, “I don’t have any weird ideas! Also, you’re still too small.”

Hearing this, anger filled Xuan Yue as she stuck out her barely developed chest and retorted, “Which part of me is small? Where? In 3 more months, I’ll be 15 already. I really hate people calling me small.”

How could Ah Dai argue against her, he immediately surrendered, “Okay, okay, you’re not small, not small.” He made up his mind, to talk less to this wilful young lady, and not cause trouble for himself..

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed in satisfaction, “This is more like it. Just now, which level of magician exam did you pass?”

Ah Dai lowered his head and replied honestly, “Grand Magician Giger said, I’ve already reached the level of an Intermediate Magician.”

“Only an intermediate magician! It looks like, your teacher isn’t that good either,” Xuan Yue remarked in disdain.

As he heard Xuan Yue slandering his teacher, his anger instantly rose as he raged, “Miss Xuan Yue, please do not insult my teacher.

My magician standard is low due to my poor aptitude, it has nothing to do with Teacher. If, if you continue to insult my teacher, I will, I will… …"

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed once more, "You, you, what will you do to me? Since you won't say, seeing that you still have some self-awareness, then I'll let the matter with your teacher pass. However, do you know that you have just committed a huge mistake?"

Shocked, Ah Dai lamented, "I, what did I do? I did not provoke you though?"

Xuan Yue replied in all righteousness, "Who said you didn't provoke me, what did you call me just now?"

"Miss Xuan Yue! Didn't you say that, you were called Xuan Yue?"

Xuan Yue coldly hmpf-ed, "But, what did I ask you to call me earlier? I asked you to call me Yue Yue, letting you call me Yue Yue is giving you face, others want to call me that but they don't even have the privilege. If you still call me Miss Xuan Yue, I'll just call you Dai Dai, or Little Dai Dai, which do you prefer?" While she spoke, she revealed an 'evil' expression.

Ah Dai bitterly smiled, "No, don't, I'll call you Yue Yue then, okay? I'm already dumb enough, if you add another 'Dai', I'll become even dumber."

Xuan Yue smiled and giggled, "This is much better."

At this moment, Giger had returned while carrying a large pile of items. He split the items into two piles and passed them to Ah Dai and Xuan Yue, instructing them, "Tell me your name and place of

origin, I'll record them down." He saw that Xuan Yue was looking at the items in her hands with a satisfied expression, and started fervently praying that the little demoness would be satisfied and quickly leave.

Xuan Yue muttered, while sifting through the items in her hands, "I'm called Xuan Yue, you should know where I'm from."

"And I am called Ah Dai, uhh, I am from Sweetrock Town in the Sipho Tribe."

Giger nodded and spoke, "Okay, Miss Xuan Yue, you have passed the advanced magician qualifications, and as the branch leader of the Magicians' Guild, I hereby bestow upon you, the title of an Advanced Light Attribute Magician. Ah Dai, you have passed the intermediate magician qualifications, and as the branch leader of the Magician's Guild, I hereby bestow upon you, the title of an Intermediate Fire Attribute Magician."

"Wait, wait a minute. Why am I only an advanced magician! Even if I haven't reached the Mage level, I should at least be a grand magician, how did you conduct the test!"

With a bitter expression on his face, Giger replied, "Young lady, it's not that I don't want to let you become a grand magician, but the titles of grand magician and above, can only be bestowed by the main branch of the Magicians' Guild, located in Bright Province, of the Prosperous Empire. I don't have enough authority to do that!"

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed in dissatisfaction, "Okay then, I'll let you off this time, since Bright Province is pretty close to our Holy Church, I'll go there when I have the time."

Giger knew that the two people before him had no idea of the matters regarding a magician's certification, so he continued to explain, "The items in your hands, one of them is a set of magician robes, and the other is a normal wooden magic staff, it can amplify your magic by 1%. There is an insignia on the magician robes, and it is proof of your identity as a magician. Apart from that, that sack with the hexagram embroidery, contains your monthly stipends; advanced magicians have a monthly stipend of 15 gold coins, while intermediate magicians have a monthly stipend of 12 gold coins. Keep the money away, while I'll go make two magician cards for both of you, it will contain your identity and name. Usually, you will need to use the card to receive your stipends, and if your magician robes are spoilt, you can use the card and get a new set at any Magicians' Guild nearby." After speaking, he did not wait for Xuan Yue to ask further questions, and immediately ran back into the room.

Xuan Yue was obviously much more interested in this items as compared to Giger, so she excitedly wore her magician robes. It was white in color, and when she wore it, the huge cloak seemed to engulf Xuan Yue's whole body within. If she lowered her head, others would not be able to see her appearance even when she walked towards them.

Ah Dai was also a child at heart, when he saw that Xuan Yue had put on the robes, he too, immediately put down the TianGang Sword behind his back and started to put on his magician robes, which were red in color. As Ah Dai had a larger stature, his magician robes were a bit tight, but he still managed to wear them. Wielding the magic

staff in his hand, he really seemed like a fire attribute magician.

Xuan Yue jumped in excitement as she giggled, “This time, they won’t be able to find me, it’s so great, haha. However, this wooden staff is too ugly! I don’t want it.” As she spoke, she threw the wooden staff aside, it could only amplify her magic by 1% and to her, it was basically useless. After throwing the staff aside, Xuan Yue’s gaze now landed on Ah Dai’s sword which he had placed on the floor. “You are a magician, why do you still have a sword, unless you know martial arts? Can you actually wield such a big sword?”

“This is my TianGang Sword, I know some sword techniques.”

Walking towards the TianGang Sword, Xuan Yue excitedly crouched down, and reached out her hand to grab the sword scabbard. However, with her strength, how could she lift such a heavy TianGang Sword. No matter how much she pulled, the scabbard remained motionless. In a fit of anger, she cursed, “What broken object is this! It’s so heavy, lift it up for me to see.”

[TN: broken as in ‘shitty’ i think, but since she’s a young lady, don’t think it’s appropriate for her to say ‘shitty’]

Ah Dai did not have any other choice, he was now afraid of this young lady before him, and only wished to quickly fulfil the one year’s promise and return to see his Teacher Gliss. Thus, he stretched his hands out and carried the TianGang Sword before Xuan Yue. With both of her hands grabbing hold of the sword hilt, Xuan Yue used all of her strength to tug at the sword, but no matter how hard she tried, she just simply could not move it at all.

Secretly laughing in his heart, Ah Dai informed her, “The TianGang

Sword is over 70 kilograms, you are a magician, so you can't carry it."

Placing both of her hands on her hips, Xuan Yue breathlessly grumbled, "Even a broken sword wants to bully me. I don't care, you must perform a few moves of your sword techniques."

"Forget it, the sword is used to protect, I can't simply use it for fun."

Xuan Yue flung back the hood of her cloak as she raged, "I don't care, you are my attendant now, if I tell you to show me, then show me you must, and you better do a good job! Quickly, quickly show me now! If not, I will, I will, I will cry for you to see!"

With a resigned look on his face, Ah Dai relented, "Okay, okay, I'll show you." Drawing out the TianGang Sword, he looked around him, and seeing that the walls of the back hall seemed quite sturdy, he walked over. He recalled that Giger had once said that, the walls had magic enchantments making them sturdier to attacks, therefore he wanted to cleave the walls to show Xuan Yue. He knew that the willful young miss would definitely not let things rest if she was not satisfied with the performance. However, how was he to know that, there were only magician exams taking place within the Magicians' Guild, and thus the enchantments on the walls were only targeted towards magic attacks.

Xuan Yue rushed to Ah Dai 's side in excitement, "What are you going to perform for me?"

Ah Dai glanced at her, stiffly saying, "I'll try cleaving the wall, it's best that you stand further away, in case you get injured by the rebound force."

A look of surprise flashed across Xuan Yue's eyes as she joked, "You know how to show concern for others?" But as she spoke, she took a few steps back.

Actually, Ah Dai was not really concerned for her, but for himself. He was afraid that, if Xuan Yue got injured again, he would be blamed and perhaps even be extorted into becoming her attendant for a few more years.

With both of his hands gripping the TianGang Sword, he raised it high above his head, and started circulating his Boundless true qi. A faint white light that contained a trace of holy aura started emanating from him, flashing constantly together with the light from the dou qi on top of his sword. Ah Dai suddenly stepped forward, and in the cleaving stance of the TianGang Sword Technique, he swung his sword against the wall.

"NOO——" A shocked voice shrieked, but Ah Dai had already swung his sword and it was impossible for him to stop. Amidst the loud bangs, a wide hole of around 3 metres wide instantly appeared on the wall.

Both Ah Dai and Giger, who had just finished making the magician cards, were stunned; Ah Dai was shocked, while Giger was bemoaning the fact that the wall was ruined. He had spent quite some time and effort on the enchantments, but it was simply destroyed like this, so how could he not be upset.

"Wah, so strong! Who knew that you actually have some skill, that's good, you can be my bodyguard as well as my attendant." Xuan Yue grabbed Ah Dai's hand while jumping in glee, totally oblivious to

the grim expressions of the two guys.

Ah Dai ignored Xuan Yue, and immediately bowed towards Giger, speaking in an apologetic tone, “Grand Magician Giger, I am really sorry, I didn’t know that the enchantment was not sturdy enough, I, I am willing to pay for the damages.”

Only now did Xuan Yue realise that Giger had walked in, “What’s there to pay, it was me who asked him to perform some sword techniques. If you want compensation fee, then look for my dad at the Holy Church. If you tell him that Xuan Yue had caused the damage, he will surely pay you.”

Giger was dejected as he replied, “Nevermind, nevermind, the new shall replace the old. This is your magician cards, take them and quickly leave.” If they stayed here any longer, the whole guild might be destroyed by them.

Xuan Yue giggled, taking the cards from Giger, she threw the red one towards Ah Dai while she tucked her white card into her robes. Pulling Ah Dai along, she laughed, “Come, let’s go out and play.”

Ah Dai still wanted to speak to Giger, but looking at Xuan Yue’s impatient expression, he could only leave the Magicians’ Guild with her.

Behind them, Giger was muttering to himself, “Why am I so unlucky today, ay! My poor wall! Old Huang, quickly assemble all of the magicians in the city, I need to repair the wall.”

Ah Dai and Yue Yue walked out of the Magicians’ Guild, and once they stepped outside, Yue Yue instantly let out a cheer, “Ah! I’m a

magician now!" Her shout had attracted the attentions of the passers-by, and as they saw the magician robes on Ah Dai and Xuan Yue, they could not help but reveal expressions of admiration and respect. On the continent, the rarity of magicians further exemplified their preciousness.

Xuan Yue scooted over to Ah Dai's side, and used her small magic wand to tap against Ah Dai's head, "Attendant Dai Dai, where do you say we should go and play?"

Ah Dai was unfamiliar with the continent and he was shocked upon hearing Xuan Yue's words, "Play? You asked me to follow you just to play?"

Xuan Yue replied, as though it was expected, "Of course! I finally managed to sneak out, so I must surely play to my heart's content. Eh, there seems to be a lot of people there, what are they doing? All of them seem to be carrying weapons like yours." She pointed to the Mercenary Guild nearby, curiously asking Ah Dai.

"That is the Mercenary Guild, I guess it's a place where mercenaries accept their missions."

Immediately, Xuan Yue's bright eyes widened as she exclaimed, "Let's go there and take a look, there must be fun stuff there." As she spoke, there was no hesitation as she grabbed Ah Dai's hand and ran towards the Mercenary Guild.

Her small hand felt soft and smooth in Ah Dai's coarse large hand, and a weird feeling coursed through Ah Dai's body. However, Xuan Yue's words gave Ah Dai a fright, he did not bother feeling that small gentle hand, and quickly stopped in his tracks, "No, no, let's

not go there." He had just left the Mercenary Guild not too long ago, and he did not wish to be pestered by the people there. Furthermore, if Feng Ping saw him together with a girl, he did not know what sort of expression Feng Ping would have.

Xuan Yue was only a little girl, when Ah Dai suddenly stopped, she was pulled along. Making an ouch sound, she bumped into Ah Dai's sturdy body, instantly shouting out.

"What are you doing? It hurts!"

Ah Dai rushed to apologize as he said, "Yue Yue, let's not go there. I, I still have some stuff to do."

"You've got stuff to do? I've got stuff to do too? Don't forget, you are now my attendant, and you must listen to me. If I ask you to walk East, you must walk to the East, let's go, I insist on going to the Mercenary Guild. I've long heard that the Red Hurricane Tribe was the gathering place of mercenaries, now that I'm here, I must go take a look, since I love adventures!"

With a bitter expression on his face, Ah Dai mumbled, "Yue Yue, then you go first, I have some stuff to do, I'll find you later."

Puzzled, Xuan Yue looked at Ah Dai with her big eyes blinking, "Are you trying to escape? But you better remember! Since you've already promised to be my attendant for a year, if you try to escape, don't blame me for being rough." As she spoke, she waved the magic wand in her hand as a threat.

Ah Dai had already experience her magic first-hand, thus he hurried explained, "No, I won't run. It's just that I owe the steamed bun

owner some money, so I need to repay him first."

"Okay then, I'll follow you. After you return the money, then let's go to the Mercenary Guild." Xuan Yue had finally found such a silly attendant, so she could not let Ah Dai escape so easily.

Ah Dai seemed to still have unspoken words, but looking at Xuan Yue's wand that was glowing with light, he could only let her do as she pleased. The two of them were extremely eye-catching on the streets, after all, this was not a very big city, and magicians were still quite rare.

In just a few moments, Ah Dai had brought Xuan Yue to the steamed bun stall. As it was already close to mid-afternoon, the stall's business was booming, and the fat stall owner was extremely busy attending to his customers.

Wafts of aroma drifted out from the steamed buns in the bamboo steamers, and Xuan Yue got a whiff of the delicious smell. "I didn't know steamed buns smelled so good! I want to try some too, Ah Dai, buy some for me."

"En." Ah Dai walked up, and started queuing behind the line of people waiting to buy steamed buns. He could wait, but Xuan Yue did not have the patience, so she walked up next to the fat stall owner, grabbed a steamed bun and took a bite. Chewing a few times, she wrinkled her brows and said, "This is just average, there's nothing special about it." As she spoke, she flung her hands, and under the watchful eye of the unnamed stall owner, she threw the half-bitten steamed bun on the floor.

All of this, had been seen by Ah Dai. An intense feeling of aversion and disgust surged forth in Ah Dai's chest, as he took big strides towards Xuan Yue.

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 017: By Death

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Enjoy the chapter! ~~

Chapter 17: By Death

Xuan Yue stared at Ah Dai walking towards her, asking, “What are you doing?”

Furiously giving her a glare, Ah Dai suppressed the anger in his chest, and spoke to the stall owner, “I am really sorry, I’ll give this to you, treat it as I bought that steamed bun earlier.” He grabbed a handful of gold coins from his monthly stipends, and stuffed them into the fat stall owner’s hands. The stall owner was stunned, and he got a further shock from looking at the handful of gold coins in his hands.

“Mister Magician, one steamed bun does not cost so much, and just treat it as free.” Although Ah Dai was still carrying the heavy TianGang Sword after he put on his magician robes, the stall owner did not recognize him. As a normal citizen, how could he dare offend a magician.

Lifting the hood of the cloak over his head, Ah Dai said, “Uncle, it’s me, just accept it.”

The fat stall owner got a fright as he sputtered, “Ah! You, Ah Dai, when did you become a magician.”

Ah Dai scratched his head, “I’m only an average magician, Uncle, go and handle the stall, I’ll get going first.” He bent down to pick up the steamed bun that Xuan Yue threw, then started walking away without a glance.

“Hey, hey.” Xuan Yue called out, but it seemed as though Ah Dai did not hear anything as he disappeared at the bend of the street. Xuan Yue’s action of throwing away the steamed bun, had thoroughly angered Ah Dai.

Xuan Yue had been pampered since young, and since when had anyone gotten so angry at her. Hmpf-ing angrily, she chased after him. In just a short while after Ah Dai had turned the corner, Xuan Yue blocked in front of him, “What are you doing, don’t forget, you’ve already promised to be my attendant.” At the Magicians’ Guild, the reason why Xuan Yue had insisted on Ah Dai to be her attendant, was mainly for fun. She felt that the silly kid in front of her was really too easy to trick, and she also felt lonely by herself, so she found an attendant in order to have someone to talk to. In her heart, she had always looked down on Ah Dai, like how the nobility treated commoners, however, this commoner that she had looked down upon, actually ignored her just because she threw away a steamed bun.

Ah Dai coldly replied, “Do you have any business with me? From now on, I will no longer follow you, and I’m not your attendant anymore.”

Xuan Yue glared at Ah Dai while she spoke, “You don’t hold true to your words, you promised to be my attendant. All because I threw a stupid steamed bun?”

Patting away the dust on the steamed bun, Ah Dai coldly looked at her, “In my heart, the steamed bun is much more important than you.”

Ah Dai’s words had deeply hurt Xuan Yue’s self-esteem, as she raged, “Do you want to die?” Waving her magic wand, five small light bullets instantly flew towards Ah Dai.

There was a glint in Ah Dai’s eyes as white colored Boundless dou qi covered his body, abruptly deflecting the five light bullets. Popping sounds rang out, but Ah Dai remained in his same spot. Under the repulsion from Ah Dai’s dou qi, Xuan Yue was forced a step back, causing her to be shocked. The two of them had just left the Magicians’ Guild not too long ago, their magic force was depleted and it would not have replenished in such a short time. Furthermore, at close distance, magicians would definitely not be able to defeat warriors of about the same rank.

Xuan Yue looked at the dou qi on Ah Dai’s body in astonishment, its holy aura made Ah Dai seem extremely heroic, and he no longer seemed like the silly kid back at the Magicians’ Guild, that was easily bullied. “You, you actually dared hit me, I, I’ll tell my father to kill you.”

Ah Dai revealed an expression of revulsion as he hmpf-ed, “Then go look for your father, and stop pestering me. What’s there to be proud of, only relying on your parents. Let me repeat myself, from now onward, I’m no longer your attendant and I will not follow you anymore.” As he finished speaking, he took big strides towards Xuan Yue, and flung his arms, pushing her aside, then walking away without looking back.

Dumbfounded, Xuan Yue stood rooted to the ground. Ever since she could remember, there was no one who had ever treated her in such a way. With her self-esteem stepped on, how could she simply back off, “YOU, stop there.”

Ah Dai stopped moving, but he did not turn around and simply raised the steamed bun in his hand, “Do you know, how important steamed buns are to me? If not for this bun, I would have never be able to live till now, without this bun, there would be no me today. In my heart, the steamed buns are equivalent to my life. But you, big missy from the Holy Church, just happened to insult my life, so we can call it quits now.” Ah Dai who was in a fit of rage, did not seem to realize that he was actually very clear-headed when he was angry, he was able to convey all his thoughts clearly.

“Okay then, you, you… If you leave, I’ll die for you to see!” Xuan Yue knew that, at this moment, she would not be able to defeat Ah Dai no matter what, so she could only use her trump card — threatening.

Ah Dai’s body convulsed in anger, as he turned to face the crying Xuan Yue, “ You are a young miss from the Holy Church, and your father is one of the holy priests, why do you have to continue pestering a nobody like me. I won’t fall for your tricks, I don’t believe that, with your distinguished identity, you would do anything to harm yourself for a commoner like me. Good bye, Miss Yue Yue.”

Ah Dai cold attitude towards Xuan Yue caused her to tremble, as she quavered, “Okay, you don’t believe me right, if I die, then it’ll be your fault!” As she finished speaking, she used both hands to grip her short magic wand, and suddenly thrust towards her lower

abdomen. The end of her magic wand was a sharp triangular prism, and under the sunlight, it flashed brightly.

Ah Dai was at a loss for words, he had never thought that Xuan Yue would be so stubborn, her actions were clearly for show. Instantly circulating his dou qi to his limits, and with a flash, he tried to reach out for Xuan Yue's hands. However, Ah Dai was still some distance away and it seemed that she had already set her mind to it. When he finally managed to grab hold of her hands, a small part of the magic wand was already in her lower abdomen. With a soft moan, Xuan Yue slowly collapsed.

Immediately, Ah Dai caught Xuan Yue's petite body within his arms, his clear-headedness disappeared as he gripped her hands tightly. Looking at the expression of pain on her face, he was at a loss of what to do.

Not too far away from the city, there was a luxurious carriage that was currently speeding towards the city, alongside ten over guards who were clad in silver armor. They were all exuding a powerful aura, and one could tell with a glance that they had profound martial arts. Within the carriage, a low voice suddenly sounded, "Ah! Not good, Yue Yue is injured. Quick, increase the speed, I can already feel her presence."

"Yes, Your Eminence."

Ah Dai snatched away the magic wand in Xuan Yue's hands, and once the magic wand was pulled out from her, her pure white clothes were instantly stained red with blood. Ah Dai's fury had long since dissipated when Xuan Yue stabbed her wand towards herself, and he

quickly circulated his Boundless true qi, quickly sealing Xuan Yue's blood vessels in order to prevent too much blood loss.

"Yue Yue, Yue Yue, please don't die! I, I will continue to be your follower, please don't die!"

It was the first time that Xuan Yue had experience pain in her lower abdomen, although it was very painful, she felt a tinge of pleasure at her revenge when she heard Ah Dai's desperate cries. How would she plan to die, the magic wand had not even pierced her internal organs, it was all skin deep wounds, even if Ah Dai had not stopped her, she would have been fine. After all, Xuan Yue was a "Holy Daughter", even though she had not learned much, she could still use light magic to heal this sort of small wounds. Slowly opening her eyes, she was greeted by Ah Dai's concerned gaze, "Ah Dai, am I more important or is the steamed bun more important?"

Hurriedly, Ah Dai answered, "You're more important, you're more important, don't speak anymore, I've already sealed your blood vessels. Let's quickly find a place to treat you." Due to her injuries, Xuan Yue's rosy pink face had become extremely pale, seeming delicate and frail. In Ah Dai's eyes, she was no longer some arrogant young missy.

Suddenly, a bright light flickered across Xuan Yue's eyes as she muttered, "Not good, I can feel my father's presence. Let's quickly leave, he must have discovered me when I stabbed myself with the magic wand just now. Quick, quickly go."

Ah Dai carried Xuan Yue, asking, "Then where do we go now? Your wound must be quickly inspected and bandaged first."

Thinking for a moment, Xuan Yue replied, “Let’s go to the Magicians’ Guild. It will be safer there.”

As Giger saw Ah Dai walking over, while carrying Xuan Yue, his face immediately became ashen, “You, why have you returned?” Old Huang, who was the custodian, had already left to gather the magicians, and there was only Giger left in the guild. He was just praying to never meet the little demoness, Xuan Yue, ever again, but before he could even finish his prayers, Xuan Yue and Ah Dai had once more appeared before him.

Rudely, Xuan Yue retorted, “What? Are we unwelcome? I’m injured, and wish to stay here for a few days, how about that?” Although she was asking a question, but her tone was indisputable.

Giger was shocked, he had just realised that Xuan Yue’s lower abdomen was dyed in red, “Young Lady, what happened to you, didn’t you just leave not too long ago? Perhaps, perhaps there was actually someone in this city who dared to disrespect magicians? Who was so daring, to actually challenge our magicians’ honor, I’ll help you both confront that person.”

Ah Dai’s face turned red, but just before he could explain, Xuan Yue intercepted, “Don’t worry about how I got injured, just give me a place to rest first. If I were to die, you will surely get in trouble as well.”

“Okay, okay, quickly follow me.” Giger led them through the back hall, and through the magic on the walls, they arrived at one of the rooms in the back. The room was not very grandly decorated, but it was still well-furnished. There was a large twin-sized bed, with a

three-people sofa by the side, and a table with some chairs, further in was the washroom.

Carefully placing Xuan Yue on the large bed, Ah Dai then turned to Giger and said, “Thank you very much, Grand Magician Giger.”

Giger thought to himself, There’s no need to thank me, I just wish that you will leave soon. With a bitter smile on his face, he replied, “Both of you can rest first, I’ll go get some food for you.” As he spoke, he turned and started to walk away.

“Wait,” Xuan Yue called out, “I will warn you first, there will be someone coming to the city to find me soon, do not reveal my whereabouts.”

Shocked, Giger asked, “Young lady, don’t tell me, you secretly ran out of your house?”

In a righteous tone, Xuan Yue retorted, “So what if I ran out secretly. I’m not afraid to say this now, my father is one of the four crimson-robed priests of the Holy Church, if he sees that I’m injured, he will surely be very angry, and when he becomes angry, there will usually be severe consequences. If he manages to find me here, I will surely tell him that, it was a water attribute magician named Giger that injured me. You should know what will happen next.” As she spoke, she shot Giger a smile.

Xuan Yue’s smile was pretty like a spring flower in bloom, but to Giger, it seemed so evil and cunning. Cold sweat had soaked through his clothes, he could not have understood better of what a crimson-robed priest represented. Going against a crimson-robed priest, it was something that couldn’t even be resolved by dying. WHY? Why

is this? The Almighty God! Haven't I said all my prayers usually, why must you torture me so! Giger's mind was filled with thoughts, there was only two methods to ensure his safety at this point. One was to immediately kill the two people before him, and destroy any traces of their bodies, however, even without considering about Ah Dai's martial arts, even his conscience would not allow him to do so. The other method, was to do according to Xuan Yue's words, and not let anyone know that she was here.

"Okay then, I admit defeat, I, Giger have never done any bad things in my life, how did I meet such a little demoness like you."

Xuan Yue pretended to be surprised as she asked, "Eh, how did you know my nickname in the Holy Church, do you know me?"

Giger let out a bitter laugh, "How could I know you, it would be much better if I never got to know you at all. You can rest first, I'll take my leave then." As he finished speaking, he immediately left the room. He did not want to stay there any longer, who knows what sort of trouble Xuan Yue would cause again. Giger knew, deep within his heart, helping to hide Xuan Yue, was like hiding a ticking time bomb.

When she saw the expression that Giger had just before he left, Xuan Yue could not help but laugh, she loved tormenting people. However, her laughter affected the wound in her lower abdomen, and she uncontrollably let out a cry of pain.

Ah Dai got a scare as he immediately asked, "Yue Yue, what happened to you, why did you really attempt to kill yourself just now?"

Xuan Yue coldly hmpf-ed, “Isn’t it all because of you! I’ve heard your words just now, you promised to not leave me and continue to be my attendant. Are you going to regret it again now.”

Ah Dai nodded, “En, I promise I won’t leave you, but you must also not waste food next time.”

Xuan Yue recalled Ah Dai’s words earlier, “Are steamed buns really so important to you?”

Sighing, Ah Dai nodded, “Let me help you bandage your wound first, it will be bad if the wound worsens.” As he spoke, he tried to undo Xuan Yue’s skirts. In Ah Dai’s heart, there was no such thing as the differences between man and woman, he only wanted to see how severe Xuan Yue’s wound was.

However, although Xuan Yue was only 15, girls tended to mature faster than boys, thus her face turned red as she pushed away Ah Dai’s hand, muttering, “What are you doing? Hateful! Get out first, I’ll do it myself.”

Concerned, Ah Dai questioned, “Are you really okay by yourself? Let me help you instead.”

Xuan Yue’s face instantly became as red as a tomato, “You, you, just go out! How can a girl simply let you look at her body, I can manage by myself.”

Ah Dai merely scratched his head, obviously not understanding her words, “When Xiao Mei was injured in the past, I also bandaged her! I saw her body everyday.”

Stunned, Xuan Yue asked, “Who is Xiao Mei?”

“Xiao Mei is Uncle Schiel’s dog! She is a girl too, she’s very mischievous, always getting injured.”

Xuan Yue was almost angered to death by Ah Dai’s words, he had actually compared her to a dog! Throwing a light bomb towards Ah Dai, she fumed, “Get out now!”

Ah Dai got a scare as he quickly used his Boundless dou qi to withstand the attack of the light bomb. Xuan Yue was already injured and he did not dare to provoke this young missy anymore, thus he quickly left the room.

Looking at Ah Dai closing the door, Xuan Yue could finally relax. Touching her red hot cheeks, she mumbled to herself, “No wonder he’s called Ah Dai, he is really so dumb.”

Xuan Yue was most aware of her own wound, and just as she had carefully removed the outermost layer of her skirts, Ah Dai suddenly stuck his head through the door, “If you can’t do it yourself, just call for me.”

Embarrassed, Xuan Yue rushed to cover herself, “Quickly go out, don’t look! If not, I’ll die again for you to see!”

Ah Dai was scared and hurriedly closed the door, he did not know why, but he felt that the red-faced Xuan Yue looked much prettier than when she was angry. Leaning against the wall, Ah Dai thought of Xuan Yue’s expression earlier when she was trying to kill herself, and could not help but feel a sliver of fear. He took out the steamed bun that Xuan Yue threw away, and started eating it.

Before he could even finish the steamed bun, Xuan Yue’s voice

suddenly sounded from the room, “Ah Dai, you can come in now.”

Ah Dai grunted in agreement as he opened the door, Xuan Yue’s complexion seemed much better than before. Her magician robes were placed on the side, while she was covered in blankets, her big eyes staring at him.

“Yue Yue, is your wound better? Is it very severe?” Ah Dai asked in concern.

“I won’t die from this, come over here.” Xuan Yue snapped.

Ah Dai walked over to Xuan Yue’s side, “Yue Yue, don’t be so rash in the future, it must be so painful being stabbed!” While he spoke, he grabbed Xuan Yue’s small hand. She struggled for a while, but was unable to shake his hand away. Just as she was about to throw a fit, a warm feeling suddenly came from Ah Dai’s palm, nourishing her meridians. Her face turned red as she realized Ah Dai had good intentions, and did not speak anymore.

Ah Dai circulated his Boundless true qi, checking Xuan Yue’s meridians, her wounds had already been healed by her recovery spells, causing Ah Dai not be able to find anything amiss. Sighing a breath of relief, Ah Dai asked, “It’s really all healed, Yue Yue, how did you recover so fast?”

Looking at Ah Dai’s concerned gaze, Xuan Yue felt warmth in her heart, and started to like this silly kid before her a little, “I won’t tell you, are you regretting now that I’m fine! Make a vow now.”

“I’m more than happy that you’re all better now, why will I regret! And vow? Make what vow?”

“Vow that you will be my attendant for a year! What if, what if you regret again next time?”

Ah Dai lowered his head, “I, but, I…” Mustering his courage, he raised his head and said, “Can you tell me, how do I make a vow?”

Xuan Yue could not help but laugh at Ah Dai’s silly look, “Just use your steamed buns to make a vow, aren’t they most important to you? Follow me, I, XX, vow that, from today onward, I will be Miss Xuan Yue’s attendant for a year, and I will not leave by myself, if I violate the vow, I will never be able to eat delicious steamed buns again.”

“Oh,” Ah Dai nodded, thinking for a while. “I, Ah Dai, vow that, from today onwards, I will be Miss Xuan Yue’s attendant for a year, and will not leave her side. If I violate the vow, I will never be able to eat delicious steamed buns again. Is this okay?”

‘Okay then, this is fine. Oh right, go out and take a look, if you see any knights, people who are dressed in silver armor, quickly come back and tell me.”

Curious, Ah Dai asked, “Yue Yue, your father has come to find you, but why don’t you want to return with him, does he not treat you well?”

Xuan Yue shook her head, and replied in a soft voice, “It’s not that he doesn’t treat me well, but life in the Holy Church is really too boring, it’s not fun at all, compared to the outside. After I recover, let’s go and be a mercenary for a few days, okay?”

Glancing at Xuan Yue, Ah Dai thought, If only I had a father who cared for me, wouldn’t that be great?! Thinking of a father, he could

not help but think of Owen who had passed away. His eyes became red and almost started crying.

“Ah Dai, what’s wrong?” Xuan Yue asked in astonishment, as she held Ah Dai’s hand of her own will.

Xuan Yue’s soft hand made Ah Dai feel very comfortable, and he felt much better as well. Shaking his head, he replied, “I’m fine. I’ll go out and see whether there are any silver armored knights that you mentioned.” As he spoke, he let go of Xuan Yue’s hand, and placed his bags on the table. Carrying his TianGang Sword, he left, while still thinking of the gentle feeling when Xuan Yue held his hand.

After Ah Dai had left the room, Xuan Yue muttered, “It looks like, this silly kid has quite some secrets! Hehe, I just love digging out others’ secrets.”

At the same time, just as Ah Dai stepped into the back hall, he felt some shivers run down his back. Circulating his Boundless true qi, he did not find anything abnormal and did not think too much of it.

Currently in the back hall, there were seven or eight magicians who were under Giger’s command, setting new enchantments on the wall, while some other workers were using bricks to repair the hole that Ah Dai had made in the wall.

Seeing that Ah Dai had come out, Giger rushed up and asked in a low voice, “How is that little demoness?”

Ah Dai shook his head and replied, “Grand Magician Giger, don’t worry, Yue Yue should be fine.”

Giger heaved a sigh of relief, “That’s good to hear, if something were

to happen to her here, I would be in deep trouble. Ah Dai, I can tell that you are a kind child, but, sometimes, being too kind will only result in you being taken advantage of, understand? I feel that, it's best if you stay away from that little demoness. You should know the crimson-robed priests right, the Holy Church is the most powerful force on the continent, if you happen to offend that little demoness in the future, I'm afraid, your days will not be pleasant."

Nodding, Ah Dai replied, "Thank you Grand Magician Giger, but Yue Yue's injured now, and I've already promised to be her attendant for a year, I cannot go back on my words."

Giger let out a sigh, "You have to look out for yourself then. You must not reveal that Miss Xuan Yue is here, although this is just a remote city in the Red Hurricane Tribe, the influence of the Holy Church is still evident, I do not wish for the crimson-robed priest to come here."

"I understand," Ah Dai agreed, and started walk outside. Just before he could reach the door, there was shout from outside, "Is Grand Magician Giger here?" The voice got closer with each word, and just as the person spoke the last word, the door to the back hall opened, and a man walked in. He was donned in ivory robes, an ivory-robed priest, and seemed around 50 years old. There was a faint holy aura emanating from him, and he seemed dignified and imposing.

There was a change in Giger's expression as he hurried to welcome the man, "I wondered who it was, it's actually High Priest Harry. Please, come in and take a seat."

Priest Harry sighed, "There's no time for me to sit and relax, Giger.

Ah! Do you know that something big has happened? An esteemed crimson-robed priest is actually coming to this small city."

Giger pretended to be shocked, "What? His Esteemed is actually coming? What happened?"

Harry shook his head, saying, "I'm not too sure of the exact details, once His Esteemed came, he ordered all of the clergy to find someone in the city, I think it was a little girl who was dressed in white, and her hair was tied in two braids. Giger, have you seen this person?"

Keeping an expressionless face, Giger replied, "I've seen her before."

Ah Dai got a scare when he heard Giger's words, thinking if Grand Magician Giger was really going to reveal Yue Yue's whereabouts.

"Old friend, quickly tell me, there will be great merit!" Harry burst out, with a smile.

"Not too long ago, there was a young lady dressed in white who came here, she wanted to take the magician exam, and left after attaining the title of an Advanced Magician."

Wrinkling his brows, Harry asked, "Then do you know where she went?"

Giger blankly shook his head, "I'm not too sure about that, I think maybe she went West." The Magicians' Guild was very close to the West gates of the city, by saying such words, he wanted to direct the crimson-robed priest's focus outside of the city.

“OK then, I’ll quickly report this to His Esteemed. Thank you, old pal Giger.” Then, he turned and left.

Just as Harry stepped out of the back hall, suddenly all of the magicians, including Ah Dai, felt a huge tremor through their bodies, a huge surge of energy instantly covered the entire Magicians’ Guild. Shivers ran down Ah Dai’s body, he had never felt this sort of oppressive feeling before, even when facing Owen. The strong holy aura was too overpowering. The workers who were nearby, were all gasping for breath as they crouched on the ground, unable to resist the oppressive aura.

The door opened, and Harry walked in once more. Giving Giger a glance, he immediately retreated to the side, and bent over, his face full of reverence as he announced, “His Esteemed has arrived.”

Giger was filled with shock as he gave Ah Dai a look, while the other magicians gathered behind Giger, unsure of what to do. These magicians were normally most respected in this small city, but when facing one of the four esteemed crimson-robed priests of the Holy Church, none of them dared to be presumptuous.

A line of silver colored silhouettes walked in, Ah Dai observed them and realised they were the silver armored knight that Xuan Yue had described earlier. Light reflected off of their armor as they walked in, their helmets were held in their left hands, and they had a look of indifference. Once they stepped in, they separated into two rows, there was a constant faint glow on their armor from their dou qi, and on their left chests, there was a golden sword-shaped insignia.

The silver armored knight had just positioned themselves, as two

streaks of white silhouettes floated in. Compared to priest Harry, the holy aura on their bodies were much denser. The two of them were completely shrouded in their ivory robes which were decorated with gold embroidery; the ivory-robed priest on the left seemed to be a female, judging by her graceful posture. They were both wielding a wooden staff in their hands, at the tip of the staff, there was a transparent round gem that exuded a milky white and gentle light, creating a sacred atmosphere that filled the back hall when they stepped in.

Under the envelopment of the holy aura, there was a chill near Ah Dai's chest, the evil qi from the Hell's Sword seemed to want to come out. Frightened, he immediately circulated his Boundless true qi in order to suppress the evil qi from the Hell's Sword. A faint white light emanated from Ah Dai, and that female ivory-robed priest turned to glance at Ah Dai. What he saw, was a pair of incomparably clear blue eyes, their gentle gaze made him feel abnormally comfortable, and his body unconsciously started to relax.

The towering red figure was the last to walk into the hall, he was wearing the same sort of robes, only it was fully crimson in color, and there was gold embroidery on his cloak, with a huge magic hexagram symbol near his chest. As the crimson-robed priest walked into the room, the holy aura from the two ivory-robed priests earlier instantly became stronger. The two of them stepped to the side, letting the crimson-robed priest slowly walk forward. His hands and fingers were tucked within his long flowing sleeves, and he slowly raised his head. Two fleeting flashes of cold glints came from under his robes, but in just that short moment, all of the magicians,

including Ah Dai, felt as though they were seen through, everything felt exposed and it was a truly uncomfortable feeling.

“Who is the person-in-charge here?” A deep, but charismatic voice, came out from under the robes.

Giger felt his whole body shiver as he took a few shaky steps forward, and respectfully said, “Greetings, Your Esteemed, I am the Branch Leader here.”

The crimson-robed priest slightly requited, “God bless you. Sir branch leader, I can feel that my daughter’s presence is nearby. If I’m not wrong, she should be here.”

Giger was totally unable to hide anything before this all-seeing crimson-robed priest, hesitating for a while, he nodded his head lightly.

Ah Dai was shocked, but after thinking for a little, he figured that these people would probably not harm Xuan Yue, it should be fine. The change within his heart seemed to have been found out by the crimson-robed priest, as he turned to face Ah Dai, “Authentic holy dou qi, not bad, having such achievements at a young age is not very simple. A fire attribute magician that has holy dou qi, very interesting… You should know where my daughter is, bring me to her.” Although the crimson-robed priest’s tone was very calm, there seemed to be an indisputable might behind his words.

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 018: The Crimson-Robed Priest

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

So we are finally back, hopefully we can get this going more regularly. There are a few changes that we might make to this translation soon, which would enable this translation to make a lot more sense in English. With that said, enjoy the new chapter~

Chapter 18: The Crimson-Robed Priest

Ah Dai had wanted to reject, but he was unable to move his body. It was not an uncomfortable feeling, but it was simply the huge pressure coming from the tremendous holy force. His mind was fuzzy as he subconsciously started walking towards Xuan Yue's room. The crimson-robed priest did not resume speaking and simply trailed after Ah Dai, along with the two ivory-robed priests, under the watchful gazes of the silver armored knights. He had totally ignored Giger, who was nearby trembling with fear. Only when Ah Dai had reached the room did he finally regain his senses, he immediately turned around to face the crimson-robed priest, exclaiming in shock, "You, what did you do to me?"

The crimson-robed priest merely spoke" It was the God's guidance. Go and open the door."

Ah Dai understood, at this point, Xuan Yue really could not hide

anymore and helplessly, he could only push open the door. To his surprise, there was no one in the room, there was only a blood-stained white magician robe on the messy bed.

The crimson-robed priest seemed to have expected this as he sighed, “This lass, she’s really becoming more naughty, ay——”

That female ivory-robed priest hastened her footsteps and walked up to the bed, picking up the blood-stained magician robe. Her voice was quavering as she muttered, “Ah! Yue Yue really got injured!” She had an abnormally gentle and melodious voice, it was like the voice of a fairy who had descended. Even amidst panic, her voice still remained bewitching/enchanting.

“Nasha, calm down, Yue Yue will be fine. Let’s go back to the hall first.”

Walking up, the female ivory-robed priest yanked off her hood, raging, “That is my daughter, how can I calm down? Aren’t you all-knowing, quickly find Yue Yue, if anything happens to her, I do not want to live either!”

Ah Dai stared dumbly at the ivory-robed priest, her long blue hair cascaded down her back after she took off her hood, and she revealed her white, rosy cheeks. She had the same brilliant blue eyes as Xuan Yue, but with a tinge of worry, and she seemed to be only about 28 or 29 years old. There was a trace of sadness on her beautiful face, her eyebrows also hinted at her worries. It was a familiar face, ah! Right, Xuan Yue seemed to look exactly like her.

The crimson-robed priest seemed to be slightly embarrassed as he coughed, while helping Nasha put on her hood, “I’ve already

calculated, nothing will happen to Yue Yue. We're outside now, do not go overboard."

Seeming to have realized that she had indeed went overboard, Nasha lowered her head and kept quiet, but her hands that were clutching the magician robes were still trembling.

Turning to Ah Dai, the crimson-robed priest said, "Little friend, let's go back to the hall, I've got questions to ask you."

Under the enormous pressure from the group of people, Ah Dai was simply unable to have any thoughts of resistance, and could only follow them back to the back hall. Currently, Giger was still standing at the same spot, and after seeing that there was no sign of Xuan Yue, his face instantly became paler.

The crimson-robed priest walked up to Giger, "Tell me, everything that happened after you met my daughter."

Giger lowered his head and replied respectfully, "Yes, Your Esteemed. Today afternoon……" He did not dare to hide anything, and revealed every single detail, from how Xuan Yue came here, to how she took the magician's exam. "… … Finally, your precious daughter (另千金) and this little fella left the guild together, when they came back, your daughter was already injured." As the crimson-robed priest heard that Ah Dai had used the ring to absorb Xuan Yue's magic force, he could not help but glanced at Ah Dai. Ah Dai shuddered, seeming to have been struck by a large force, it was the mental power of the crimson-robed priest.

Turning towards Ah Dai, he lightly spoke, "Tell me everything that happened outside, do not leave out a single detail."

Ah Dai was stunned for a moment, the pressure on his body seemed to have lessened as he slightly stretched his limbs, replying, “Uncle, don’t worry, Yue Yue’s injuries have already healed, she should be fine, perhaps she ran away because she didn’t want to see you.” Ah Dai did not know why, but he felt a sense of closeness to the beautiful ivory-robed priest, while he felt immense respect for the crimson-robed priest.

One of the silver armored knights suddenly shouted, “Audacious! Who allowed you to speak in such a manner to His Esteemed, is the young miss’ nickname for you to call?”

“Let him go on. Little friend, tell me everything that you know. This daughter of mine has already left home for several days, I wish to find her quickly.”

“En,” Ah Dai agreed and told him everything, how Xuan Yue made him her attendant, and how he went to the bun stall to return money, as well as how she got hurt afterwards.

“So, my daughter tried to kill herself because she was angry with you?” The crimson-robed priest’ tone became colder as he said this.

Ah Dai scratched his head, “I guess so.”

Letting out a sigh, the crimson-robed priest shook his head as he said, “This daughter of mine, is really too willful, and I’m really sorry that she has caused you trouble. Mister Giger, if you see her in the future, I hope that you can make her stay, and inform the Church in this town, is that possible?”

Giger quickly replied, “It would be an honor.”

Turning to Ah Dai, the crimson-robed priest continued, “My daughter was at fault, and as her father, I apologize on her behalf.”

“No no, you don’t have to apologize, I am at fault as well, if I hadn’t gotten angry at her, she would not have been hurt.”

The crimson-robed priest suddenly changed his tone as he said coldly, “Although my daughter was at fault, as her father, I will never allow her to suffer any grievances. Do you know? This is the first time that my daughter has gotten injured. To fulfill my duties as a father, I want to discuss with you a little.”

Giger got a huge shock, the crimson-robed priest wanted to “discuss” with Ah Dai? Does he want to take Ah Dai’s life? “Your Esteemed, Ah Dai is just a child, and his thinking is also a little slow, you… …”

The golden hexagram star on the crimson-robed priest’s chest suddenly lit up, and a huge golden barrier surrounded Ah Dai. “He is still not fit for me to personally instruct, for ten years, I had never acted against others. Yinsan (3rd silver knight), go and exchange three moves with him. Little friend, if you can handle three moves of his, I’ll let this matter pass.”

The tremendous holy force caused Ah Dai to be unable to move at all, and he struggled while shouting, “Uncle, I, I don’t want to fight with you.” He did not understand why, the amiable crimson-robed priest suddenly restricted his movements.

A silver light flashed, and a silver armored knight jumped into the barrier. He drew out his long sword and gave a knight’s salute, “God bless, please advise.”

Nasha pulled the crimson-robed priest' sleeve, and said in a low voice, "Forget it, this matter can't be blamed on this kid, I can tell that he is a kind child." She did not understand why her husband, who was always very reasonable, would go and make things difficult for a child who was only in his teens.

The crimson-robed priest's voice sounded in her mind, "I know that this child's character is not bad, I just wanted to test him, and see if he is qualified to become a member of the Preparatory Inquisitors."

Hearing the explanation, Nasha came to understand, and nodded slightly. The crimson-robed priest gently held her hand as he said, 'I've already sensed where Yue Yue is, however, this time I won't make her return so early. This lass, is really too naughty, we should let her undergo some hardships, if not, if she doesn't work hard to cultivate, how can she succeed me and my father's positions." In his heart, his wife and daughter were much more important than the matters in the Holy Church.

Feeling her husband's gentleness, Nasha leaned closer towards him, their gazes landing on the center of barrier.

Ah Dai's body felt lighter as all of the pressure disappeared. The silver armored knight had an expressionless look as he looked at Ah Dai, with his long sword gleaming in a shimmer of silver light. Drawing out the TianGang Sword on his back, Ah Dai thought, *I've already fought against Feng Ping for no reason, and now, I have to fight again? This society is really complicated, it was much better back in Sweetrock Town and the Illusionary Forest, I can live a peaceful life there. Yue Yue! You really have caused quite a lot of trouble…*

The crimson-robed priest was slightly shocked when he saw the five feet long TianGang Sword in Ah Dai's hands, "So he is actually a younger generation of the disciples under the TianGang Sword Saint. En, I can rest assured about his character."

"Please," the silver armored knight coldly said.

Ah Dai did not hold back either, as he let out a shout while quickly circulating the boundless true qi in his body. A faint layer of white light instantly appeared over his red magician robes. He raised the TianGang Sword high up, in his eyes, there was no longer any silver armored knight before him, but only the tempestuous rough waves. After all, cleaving was the move that he was most familiar with. The five feet long blade of TianGang Sword instantly emanated a radiance, and the dou qi became much more condensed, causing the silver armored knight to suddenly feel that the youth before him was becoming like a tall and straight mountain. However, with his status, he would not take the chance to attack while his opponent was still gathering his power, and he did not believe that the youth who was still in his teens would be able to be of any threat to him. He swung the silver sword in his hands, and a silver light burst out, he used his strong battle intent to contain Ah Dai's aura.

Ah Dai's eyes narrowed into slits, his power suddenly burst out, and the TianGang Sword shot forward together with him, as if wanting to split the heavens. Its aura was firmly locked onto the silver armored knight, preventing him from dodging. The knight could not help but be in praise, "Good stance and momentum." The silver sword in his hand was held up in the air, as it continuously struck the TianGang Sword twenty-seven times. Each strand of dou qi were like sharp

needles as they pierced through Ah Dai's boundless true qi.

Ah Dai's boundless dou qi was after all, one of the authentic superior dou qi on the continent, although Yinsan's sharp dou qi had extreme piercing power, it was still unable to reach Ah Dai's body, and was dissipated by the dou qi on the TianGang Sword. Of course, in order to dissipate his opponent's attack, Ah Dai's cleaving slowed down a little.

"Clang——" One long one short, one heavy one light, the two swords clashed in mid air. The TianGang Sword's weight, coupled with the rushing force and Ah Dai's dou qi, it created an astonishing effect. This was Ah Dai's full force strike under the threat of danger, and he had displayed 120% of his potential, one-third more than when he had fought against Feng Ping. The silver armored knight's body actually shook from the impact, while Ah Dai was sent back to his starting point.

The impact caused a surge of blood to rush through Ah Dai's body, his opponent was able to force him backwards even after such an impact. He knew that, compared to the silver armored knight, there was an insurmountable gap between them. Ah Dai was resolute, as he started murmuring the incantation for the flame spell, raising up his TianGang Sword once more.

Actually, the silver armored knight was not all unscathed either, although his martial arts were more profound than Ah Dai's, the strike from Ah Dai just now had exceeded his expectations, it was a heavy cleave of at least thousand kilograms of force! To a knight like him, who was not proficient at strength, forcefully taking on such a heavy attack was an extremely painful thing. He had finally

suppressed the surge of blood with much difficulty, but he was shocked to discover, Ah Dai's broadsword that was originally radiating with white holy light suddenly lit up in deep blue flames. Those flames, were gathered from the most authentic fire elements, and the deep blue color indicated high temperature of the flames.

Ah Dai was already at his limits, the magic force within his body was only sufficient for him to attack once, but in order to live on, he could only give his all.

The silver armored knight would not allow Ah Dai to have the chance to gather his energy for the final strike, thus, wielding his sword, he turned into a silver silhouette as he rushed towards Ah Dai.

There was an extreme temperature on TianGang Sword, as Ah Dai compressed all of the boundless true qi within his body onto his hands. To him, the silver flash shooting towards him was like a wave heading for the shore; although it had an imposing aura, its power was not concentrated. Without any hesitation, Ah Dai executed the same cleave, only this time, there was blue within the white radiance on TianGang Sword.

Once more, the silver armored knight miscalculated, he could clearly sense that, if he were to aim for Ah Dai's vital points, then he would surely be hit by Ah Dai's attack. That sort of ferocious attack, was not something that could simply be blocked with the fleshly body. Not to mention, the hall was already narrow, and there were so many people around, the crimson-robed priest's barrier was not very big, and Yinsan could not fully execute all of his skills to their fullest potential. In that instant, Yinsan made his decision, his life was still

more important. Out of desperation, he had to change move in mid air, and charge against Ah Dai's TianGang Sword head-on.

This time, the silver armored knight was at a great disadvantage, his body was in the air and there was nowhere for him to exert his power. Furthermore, he was in the midst of changing his move, and before he could even charge up his skill, he was instantly sent flying from Ah Dai's full force attack. The searing flames had even burnt most of his golden long hair, and he staggered all the way back to the edge of the barrier before he could regain his footing.

However, Ah Dai was not alright either, although he had not used the earth-shattering strike, he only had less than 2% of his power left, and he was unable to use the same attack once more.

Yinsan was furious, and his dou qi suddenly increased. He was about to use his full power, Ah Dai had burnt his hair, causing a trace of killing intent to appear in his eyes.

"Enough, stop now." Just as Yinsan was about to strike out, he was blocked by a layer of invisible barrier. With the crimson-robed priest level of power, how could he not see that Ah Dai had fully depleted his energy.

Ah Dai let out a breath of relief, as he used the TianGang Sword to support his body, while continuously panting. The boundless true qi within his body was circulating non-stop, but in order for him to recover to his prime condition, it would take quite some time. There was a flash of red, and the crimson-robed priest appeared before him. Pressing his palm against Ah Dai's shoulder, he chanted, "By the power of the great Heavenly God, please bestow upon your loyal

followers the powers of recovery. May light banish the darkness, and may God always bless you. Divine Blessing." A white glow appeared from the crimson-robed priest's hand, instantly enveloping Ah Dai within.

Ah Dai got a fright, and quickly mustered up his remaining true qi to fully cover the Hell's Sword near his chest. He did not dare to imagine what would happen if this crimson-robed priest before him found out that he was carrying the Hell's Sword.

The light that enveloped him was incredibly gentle and warm, and the boundless true qi in Ah Dai's body recovered at a rapid rate under the vast holy aura. In just a while, his boundless true qi had already surpassed the original amount. Ah Dai's body suddenly jerked as the vast amount true qi surged forth like a raging wave, breaking through the barrier of one of the meridians near his chest. Under his control, his dantian and the meridians near by were instantly filled with true qi. Ah Dai was full of delight, he had finally managed to breakthrough the bottleneck of the Fourth Stage of the Boundless Life Art, and reached the Fifth Stage. All of this, was only made possible with the help of the crimson-robed priest. The crimson-robed priest removed his hand, but the white light on Ah Dai's body did not seem to weaken at all. A voice sounded in Ah Dai's head, "Little friend, you are called Ah Dai right, since you have connections with the TianGang Sword School, I can be at ease now. You've said that, you have promised to be my daughter's attendant, so I hope that you can fulfill this promise. Your boundless true qi have already reached the Fifth Stage, and it should be enough for protecting yourself in normal circumstances. My daughter is very

mischievous, but I hope that you can put up with her. Temporarily, I won't bring her home, it is good to let her experience some hardships of the outside world. Let's set a year as the limit, if the both of you face some danger in the future, just open the scroll in your hand. At the same time, the ring on your left index finger seems very familiar, I'll go back and ask the Supreme Pontiff about it, it should be some kind of godly instrument, protect it well. If my daughter can become more sensible a year later, I will recommend you to the Church Inquisitor branch. At the moment, you mustn't move, you need to circulate the boundless true qi in your body for 49 cycles, before you can fully reach the Fifth Stage."

Of course, Ah Dai did not dare to move at all, the boundless true qi surging in his body seemed to almost burst him apart. Fortunately, he had remembered the mnemonic for the Fifth Stage and quickly started circulating his qi. The crimson-robed priest's words were etched in his heart as he felt warmth all over, soon entering the state of cultivation.

The crimson-robed priest let out a sigh as he turned to Giger, "From now onward, no one is to disturb him. After a period of time, he will awake by himself. If my daughter comes back, you need not inform the Church either. Let's go." As he finished speaking, he floated out of the room, along with the ivory-robed priests and the silver armored knights, and left the Magicians' Guild.

Just as the crimson-robed priest had left with his followers, Giger instantly fell limp onto the floor. The immense pressure from the vast holy aura was really too strong, his inner clothes and magician robes were already thoroughly soaked with sweat. Now, he was finally able

to understand why the forces of the Holy Church were so powerful, if he did not guess wrong, the crimson-robed priest just now should definitely have the power of a Mage.

Returning to the carriage, Nasha could not help but ask, “Ye, are you really not going to bring our daughter back?”

The crimson-robed priest Xuan Ye let out a smile, “Nasha, our daughter will be safe, the amount of magic treasures that she has is even more than mine. She is already 15 years old, it is time for her to experience the world. That child earlier has a kind nature, and he has some basic skills and foundation. Furthermore his life force is extremely bountiful, and he definitely has the potential to become a sword saint. You should know, in the TianGang Sword School, reaching the Fifth Stage of the Boundless Life Art before 20 years old is exceedingly rare. Under the help of my Divine Blessing, the little kid just now has already reached the Fifth Stage. He has great potential, and I can be at ease to let my daughter follow such a person.”

Nasha thought of Ah Dai’s innocent gaze and could not help but smile, “Indeed, he is a silly kid. However, I am still worried.”

“A loving mother will only spoil her children, that lass has been too pampered,” the crimson-robed priest sighed.

Furrowing her brows, Nasha retorted, “Then do you have any methods? Don’t you and father pamper her too? Blaming me, you still blame me!” She raised her voice, and the silver armored knights outside could almost hear her.

The other ivory-robed priest turned his head to the window,

pretending that he had seen nothing.

The crimson-robed priest immediately pulled Nasha into his embrace, smiling apologetically, “It’s my fault, it’s my fault, I have pampered Yue Yue too much, don’t be angry anymore. I’ve given that kid a summoning scroll, if they are in danger, I will know immediately.”

Nasha let out a hmpf, but her body subconsciously leaned into the embrace, “I don’t care anymore, letting Yue Yue experience the outside world is okay, but, if anything were to happen to her, I will find you.” Reaching over to the crimson-robed priest’s ear, she whispered, “I’ll punish you to sleep on the sofa for your whole life.”

The crimson-robed priest stiffened as he let out a bitter laugh, “Ay, I will do as you say and send some people to protect them.”

Nasha looked at her husband who had given in, and there was a look of satisfaction in her eyes as she said in a gentle voice, “Hubby, you are the best.”

Hugging his wife tightly, the crimson-robed priest caught a whiff of the scent from her hair, “I wonder if the other cardinals have found any trace of the savior, it has been 5 years and yet we haven’t gotten any information!”

There was a slight change in Nasha’s expression as she sighed, “It’s hard to predict Heaven’s will, how can the thousand-year calamity be so easily passed, we can only take a step at a time.”

Not too long after the crimson-robed priest had left, a white silhouette quietly sneaked back into the Magicians’ Guild. It was

precisely Xuan Yue. There was a weak mental connection between her and her father, thus when the crimson-robed priest had come close, she knew something was amiss and quickly escaped through the window. She hid in a spot not too far after she ran out, and secretly observed the luxurious carriage, all the way till her parents had left, before she finally walked out and sneaked back into the guild.

Once she entered the hall, Xuan Yue saw Ah Dai, who was emanating a bright radiance from his whole body. Just as she was about to jump over, she was stopped by Giger. “Young miss, you’ve finally returned, you’ve almost got me killed! Your father had just left.”

Xuan Yue let out a giggle, “Giger, Grand——Magician, aren’t you a little too cowardly, my father is a priest, not a mass murderer, rest assured, he will not randomly kill people. What’s happening to Ah Dai, why is he glowing with light and sitting there like a vegetable?”

Suddenly, her face became paler as she gasped, “Did my father find out that I got injured because of him?”

Giger had a bitter smile on his face as he said, “Your father has indeed found out, under his powerful holy force, who will be able to lie? Little ancestor, I really am afraid of you.”

Worried, Xuan Yue anxiously asked, “My, my father couldn’t have possibly done anything to Ah Dai right, I didn’t mean to harm Ah Dai!” Although she was very willful, she still had a kind nature. Despite not having spent a long time together with Ah Dai, she did not wish to harm Ah Dai.

Giger grabbed hold of Xuan Yue, who was about to rush over, "You've already said it, your father is not a mass murderer, he did not specifically blame Ah Dai, but only let him exchange two moves with the silver armored knight from the Inquisitor branch. It was an eye-opener, a magician could actually go hold his own against a silver armored knight for two moves. However, Ah Dai seemed to have thoroughly exhausted himself, and your father gave him a Divine Blessing, then told us not to disturb him. After a while, he will awake by himself."

Xuan Yue let out a sigh of relief as she clutched at her heaving chest, "Divine Blessing, then it should be alright. Grand—— Magician Giger, I'm hungry, I want to eat."

Sighing, Giger relented, "Just call me Giger will do, after seeing your father, how can I still dare to be called some Grand—— Magician. I'll go get some food for you, but you mustn't disturb Ah Dai. He seems to be cultivating some dou qi art, and if there are any disturbances, it is very easy for him to fall into deprivation."

"Okay, okay, I got it, don't worry." The faint connection to her father has totally disappeared, implying that they were already quite far away. Without the threat of 'capture', Xuan Yue felt much more at ease. She crouched down near Ah Dai, staring at the silly youth in front of her. She could not help but recall Ah Dai's worried look when she got injured, and thought to herself, "*This silly kid, is really so kind, he had even wanted to undo my skirts.. Aiya, it's so embarrassing!"* Thinking of this, Xuan Yue's pretty face suddenly started turning red.

At the same time while Xuan Yue was mulling over her thoughts, Ah

Dai had reached a critical juncture in his cultivation. Due to his strong mental force, it was much easier for him to control the boundless true qi in his body. However, the Fifth Stage of the Boundless Life Art was an important threshold, only after reaching the Fifth Stage, can one continue to gradually progress. Cultivation become more difficult with each stage, but comparatively, after the Fifth Stage, which each new stage of advancement, there would be a greater rise in power.

The dou qi in Ah Dai was undergoing a restructuring process and was gradually compressed. Finally, when he had circulated the dou qi for 36 cycles, the first drop of dou qi in liquid state appeared in his body. The swelling dou qi instantly converged a little, allowing Ah Dai to feel more comfortable. With each cycle, there would be more drops of this liquid dou qi, and when the 49th cycle was completed, a small lump of liquid boundless true qi had appeared within Ah Dai's dantian, glowing with holy light. What Ah Dai did not know was that, when the true qi had become liquid, it had absorbed a small part of the energy that the Fruit of Rebirth had scattered through his meridians. This caused his true qi to contain even more life force and a relentless energy.

Letting out a long breath, the white radiance covering Ah Dai's body started to dim. As he finally awoke from cultivation, he was shocked to discover that Xuan Yue was sitting before him. She had fallen asleep against the chair, and next to her, there was a small basket on the floor, with some steamed buns and a plate of marinated meat.

Looking at Xuan Yue once more, there was a strange feeling in Ah Dai's heart. Xuan Yue's long eyelashes were fluttering, and her rosy

little cheeks moved as she dreamed, she was obviously in an uncomfortable position. Lightly stroking Xuan Yue's braid, Ah Dai hurriedly ate the remaining food, before carefully lifting her up and walking towards the room.

Xuan Yue was very light, and she seemed to be even lighter than the TianGang Sword. Warmth seeped through the layers of clothing from her soft flesh into Ah Dai's palms, and suddenly Ah Dai's face felt hot.

"En." Xuan Yue's arm loped across Ah Dai's neck as she burrowed her head into his shoulders. Having found a more comfortable position, she fell asleep once more.

Ah Dai used his legs to gently kick open the door as he carried Xuan Yue into the room. He closed the door and wanted to place Xuan Yue onto the bed. However, her grip around his neck was very tight, and she would not let go no matter what. Ah Dai was afraid of waking her up, so he did not struggle further, and he had no choice but to lie down next to her, while covering her up with a blanket.

In just a day, Ah Dai had experienced two challenges, and both of his opponents were stronger to him. In addition, he had expended quite some mental force during the magician exam. Waves of fatigue crashed upon him as he could not help but drift into sleep. His arms naturally curled around Xuan Yue's slim waist, while she snuggled closer to him with her arms still around his neck. Perhaps it was more comfortable, as she slept even more soundly.

At dawn.

“AH——” A sharp cry aroused Ah Dai from his sweet dreams, he was dreaming about helping Teacher Gliss with his magic experiments. Rubbing his eyes, he saw the sight before him. Xuan Yue had her mouth open while staring dumbfounded at him, her body was still in his embrace. It was a soft feeling, of indescribable comfort.

Xuan Yue had just awoken as well, in her dreams, she thought that she was sleeping within her mother’s embrace. After running out for so many days, this was the best sleep that she had. However, when she woke up, she was shocked to discover that she was not sleeping in her mother’s arms, but rather, in the arms of that silly kid. Letting out a scream, her brain suddenly blanked out, unable to process anything.

Ah Dai did not seem to sense anything amiss as he smiled, “You’re awake, did you have a good sleep last night?”

Xuan Yue’s voice was trembling as she asked, “You, you.. What did you do to me yesterday?”

Stunned, Ah Dai replied, “I didn’t do anything! I saw that you fell asleep on the chair, and didn’t seem comfortable, so I carried you back to the room. But you were holding on tightly to my neck, you wouldn’t let go no matter what. I was afraid of waking you up, so I had to sleep like this. What’s wrong?”

Xuan Yue’s face instantly became pale as she fiercely kicked Ah Dai down the bed, crying, “You still dare to ask me what’s wrong? What have you done! You, you’ve ruined my innocence, I’m going to kill you!” As she shouted, she picked up her magic wand and started to

use magic.

For no reason, Ah Dai was kicked out of the bed. Seeing that Xuan Yue was about to use magic, he quickly grabbed hold of her hand, “Yue Yue, why are you doing this? What has happened exactly?”

The door suddenly opened as Giger stuck his head through the door, “Miss Xuan Yue, is anything wrong?”

Her whole body was trembling as she pointed towards Ah Dai, “He, he has ruined my innocence, I am going to kill him.”

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 019: The Mercenary Guild

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Enjoy the chapter guys~

Chapter 19: The Mercenary Guild

Giger got a scare as he croaked out, "… What?" If the daughter of the crimson-robed priest were to be sullied here, he would face a consequence that would be worse than death. He did not have time to think and immediately executed an ice awl magic, shooting it towards Ah Dai.

Just as Ah Dai was about to explain, the huge ice awl had already arrived before him. He could not dodge it, because Xuan Yue was right behind him. Clenching his teeth, his boundless dou qi burst forth as he landed a huge punch onto the ice awl.

With a loud bang, the ice awl shattered into pieces, however, one of the ice shards pierced through Ah Dai's arm. Fresh blood instantly stained the whole bed red.

"Grand magician Giger, listen to me, I've really done nothing at all!"

After letting out at ice awl, Giger regretted, no matter how he saw it, Ah Dai did not seem like that kind of person. Furthermore, it was still unsure if a silly kid like him would actually do such a thing.

Also, both Xuan Yue and Ah Dai's clothes were very neat, and Xuan Yue was still wrapped within the blankets, … …

"What exactly happened here?" Giger asked, furrowing his brows.

Ah Dai sealed the blood vessels on his arms while replying, "I don't know what happened either. Early in the morning when I woke up, she suddenly started screaming about killing me, … …" He quickly recounted everything that happened yesterday night.

After hearing Ah Dai's recount, Giger finally heaved a sigh of relief. Walking over to the bed, he scolded Ah Dai, "You silly kid, don't you know anything about male and female relations? How can you sleep together with a girl!" Turning to Xuan Yue, he then continued in a gentle voice, "Miss Xuan Yue, if what Ah Dai said is true, then he should not have done anything. Look, his arm is already pierced by my ice awl, don't blame him anymore."

Actually, Xuan Yue only knew a little about the stuff between males and females, so when she heard Giger's words, she sniffled, "Really? But, but he slept together with me, will I get pregnant? I don't want to have kids! What if, he turns out to be as dumb as him, I… …, I don't want to live anymore."

Xuan Yue's words had thoroughly hurt Ah Dai's feelings, he thought, *So it seems that, in Xuan Yue's eyes, I'm just a dumb and silly idiot… Yes, I am indeed dumb!* Taking two steps back, Ah Dai stood in a corner, a faint layer of frost gradually appearing in his eyes.

Listening to Xuan Yue's words, Giger let out an embarrassing laugh, "How can this be, Miss Xuan Yue, if they do not do "that", there

will be no child. Ah Dai is definitely not that type of person. Furthermore, doesn't your body feel fine? Ah Dai, quickly apologize to Miss Xuan Yue."

Ah Dai let out a grunt of acknowledgement and walked over to the front of the bed, with his head bowed, "I am sorry Miss Xuan Yue, I am just a country bumpkin, I've only just entered the continent, and I don't know anything, sorry for making you feel wronged. I promise, in the future, I will never ever touch a single hair on you, and only be your attendant." After he finished speaking, he retreated once more, into his original position. As for why he was still willing to remain, was firstly because he had already made a vow, and he could not bear to give up the delicious steamed buns. Secondly, he felt that he that he had owed the crimson-robed priest a favor, without the help from the Divine Blessing, it would take quite some time before he could reach the Fifth Stage of the Boundless Life Art.

Giger did not sense the change in Ah Dai's attitude, as he continued to console Xuan Yue, "Miss Xuan Yue, don't be angry anymore. I believe, Ah Dai will not do anything inappropriate to you in the future."

Hmpf-ing, Xuan Yue wiped away her tears and retorted, "My clothes were all dirtied by blood yesterday, go get me another set, I want the exact same ones. Also, I want another set of magician robes, I'll leave later."

Giger could not help but wish that she would leave faster, and quickly agreed, rushing out to find new clothes.

After Giger left, there was only Ah Dai and Xuan Yue left in the room, and the atmosphere was still awkward. Xuan Yue had already stopped crying and only after Giger had left, did she see the large pool of blood on the bed. Although Ah Dai had already sealed the blood vessels on his arm, the wound was too large, causing some blood to still flow out constantly. She did not know why, but she suddenly felt a tinge of sadness and guilt. She knew that Ah Dai would not have done anything to her, and the fuss earlier, was just for her to vent her disatisfaction. Deep within her heart, she always felt that Ah Dai was not of the same class as her, and she had a sense of superiority.

“Ah Dai, come, let me help you treat your wounds.”

Ah Dai looked at his own arm, the icy feeling from the shard had already disappeared, and waves of pain surged forth. The attack from Giger was too sudden, thus his protective dou qi simply had no time to fully protect himself. Fortunately, the ice shard had not pierced through his bones, but the loss of blood made him feel extremely fatigued.

“No, it’s fine, I can manage.” Ah Dai tore a strip of his clothes, using his teeth to clench one end, while he used his right hand to bandage his wound. The extreme pain caused his forehead to be filled with sweat.

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed, “Okay then, do you really think I was willing to waste my magic force on you?” Although this was what she said, her gaze still did not leave Ah Dai’s wound.

“Yeah! How can I bother you with such a small wound,” Ah Dai merely remarked, as he spoke, he grabbed his bags and walked out.

“Where are you going?”

Opening the door, Ah Dai replied, “I’ll go wash and change my clothes, in case I dirty your eyes.” He closed the door and walked out.

Once Ah Dai had gone, Xuan Yue was completely stunned. When Ah Dai was taking his bags, she caught a look of coldness in his his eyes, and she did not know why Ah Dai seemed to have become a totally different person, even his way of speech has changed, he no longer seemed to have his silly demeanor. *Could it, could it be that he is like this because I didn’t let him sleep together with me? But, I am a girl after all, how can I be so close with him. Hmpf, I shan’t care about him, he’s only my attendant, as long as he follows me, who cares what he’s thinking about!*

In just a while, Ah Dai returned to the room. However, his face seemed much paler than before, as he carried a tray with breakfast in his right hand, while his injured left arm fell limp at his side.

Placing the tray in front of Xuan Yue, Ah Dai said, “Miss Xuan Yue, please eat breakfast.”

Xuan Yue gave him a glance and asked, “Aren’t you eating? Why is there so little food.”

Ah Dai shook his head, “I am your attendant, how can I eat together with you, I’ll go out to eat. If there’s anything just call for me.” When he finished speaking, he turned and left.

Walking out of the room, Ah Dai let out the deep breath that he was holding. He held back the sadness within his heart as he let out a self-deprecating smile, muttering to himself, “That’s right! I am a thief at birth, while she is the young miss of the Holy Church, of course she will look down on me. One year, one year more? Teacher Gliss, I will have to delay another year before I can return to see you.”

“What’s wrong, Ah Dai? You don’t seem very happy!” Giger’s voice sounded.

Ah Dai raised his head and looked at Giger, there was a faint smile on the old magician’s face. “I’m fine. Thank you for your concern.”

Giger sighed, “Child, I was really too rash just now, and caused you to suffer such a heavy injury. Come, I’ll use my water attribute healing magic to treat you. The wound is so big, if you do not treat it now, there may be negative consequences in the future.”

Ah Dai lightly nodded, towards Giger, he was still very respectful.

Under Giger’s treatment, Ah Dai could now move his left arm, and his complexion seemed much better after eating breakfast.

“Little lad, when you follow that ‘little ancestor’ in the future, you must be careful. Her backing is really too powerful, no matter you or me, we both can’t offend her, or you might suffer in the future days.”

Ah Dai lowered his head and remained silent.

Giger continued, “Try your best to keep a distance from her, you must never go too close.” Suddenly, Giger seemed more serious as he said this, “Especially, you must never fall in love with her! Or else

you will suffer for life, there is an insurmountable gap between the both of you!"

With the same self-deprecating smile, Ah Dai replied, "Grand magician Giger, you're thinking too much, how can anything happen between me and Miss Xuan Yue? We are simply worlds apart."

"Don't belittle yourself too much, to have such accomplishments at such a young age isn't easy at all. Okay, go and rest a while first, I'll go deliver the items that that little demoness wants. Oh right, your clothes are dirty as well, I've prepared a set of new magician robes for you, go and change into them."

Wearing the new magician robes, Ah Dai stretched his body. Although the wound on his arm was much better, waves of pain still came from it. The boundless true qi within Ah Dai continuously circulated, healing the injured blood vessels on his arm. Yesterday night, he had slept very comfortably, and his original impression of Xuan Yue had improved considerably. However, after the chaos this morning, Ah Dai's heart had become cold. He had completely closed off his heart, and would never open his heart so easily again.

Touching the Hell's Sword near his chest, Ah Dai suddenly remembered, his boundless true qi had reached the Fifth Stage, this meant that, he could start practicing the first move of the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques. As he thought of this, his heart could not help but start trembling. That strong power was long imprinted within his mind. At the same time, that sense of evil lingered around him, after all, the Hell's Sword was an extreme evil! He did not want to recklessly kill innocents, but Owen's words before his death continuously struck a chord within Ah Dai, "There are no absolutes

in life. If you use it with kind intentions, then you will be kind; if you use it with evil intentions, then you will be evil" Clenching his teeth, Ah Dai made his decision, to follow Owen's instructions, and find opportunities to practice the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques.

It was at this time, that Giger and Xuan Yue both walked out. Xuan Yue had changed into a new set of clothes, and her long blue hair was still tied into two small braids. She seemed a lot better, but her eyes were still a bit swollen from all her crying. Ah Dai stood up and said, "Miss, you've woken up."

Wrinkling her brows, Xuan Yue asked in irritation, "Didn't I tell you to call me Yue Yue? Do you really want me to call you Dai Dai?"

Ah Dai merely replied, "I am your attendant now, no matter what you call me, it's fine."

Feeling the awkward atmosphere, Giger let out a cough, "Miss Xuan Yue, where are you going?"

Xuan Yue gave him a glare, "Aren't you hoping that I'll quickly leave, hmpf! I will be coming back next time, Ah Dai, let's go." As she spoke, she walked towards the entrance of the Magicians' Guild.

When Giger heard that Xuan Yue still wanted to return, he almost collapsed onto the ground. Helplessly shaking his head, he gave Ah Dai a look.

Ah Dai bowed towards Giger, then followed Xuan Yue and left the Magicians' Guild.

Once they stepped out, Xuan Yue ran towards the Mercenary Guild without hesitation. Ah Dai kept his head lowered, and under the

cover of the big fire-red hood, there was no way to see his face at all.

The Mercenary Guild was just as busy the day before, and countless chatting sounds were heard. The arrival of Xuan Yue and Ah Dai, had instantly grabbed the attentions of many, especially due to that golden badge near Xuan Yue's chest, it was a sign of an advanced magician! Of the many mercenaries, there were extremely few magicians. Once a magician joined a mercenary group, there will surely be great benefits for the mercenary group. Just imagine, as the warriors charged to the front, the magicians behind could execute protection and healing magic, it would be such a wonderful sight. Before coming to the Mercenary Guild, Ah Dai had specially left his TianGang Sword at the Magicians' Guild, in case he was recognized by Feng Ping.

"Great sir magician, would you like to join a mercenary group? Our Skywind Mercenary Group is already very strong, if you are willing to join, our strength will surely increase further, why not consider?"

"Sir magician, don't listen to his boasting, come and join our Iron War Mercenary Group, we can definitely assure your safety. Even if we face danger, we will surely use our lives to protect you."

"Sir magician, our Dragon Phoenix Mercenary Group has many beautiful female members, come and join us."

……

It seemed that there were people from almost all of the mercenary groups with decent reputation. In just a short while, there were endless invitations, surrounding Xuan Yue and Ah Dai.

Xuan Yue had never expected that she would be so popular, and she could help but secretly feel pleased. However, her intention was not to join a mercenary group, thus she declared in a loud voice, “Don’t shout, don’t shout, I’m not here to join any mercenary groups. Quickly move away, I want to create my own mercenary group.”

The representatives from the various mercenary groups were instantly stunned. A magician creating a mercenary group alone? What sort of concept is that? Furthermore, from the voice, it seemed that this advanced magician was a female, and a young one at that.

Taking advantage of all their stunned reactions, Xuan Yue turned to Ah Dai and instructed, “Quick, stand in front and make a path, let us go towards that counter inside.”

The great hall within the Mercenary Guild was extremely spacious, and could fit a few hundreds of people. At the innermost part of the hall, there were three counters, the Registration Counter, the Mission Counter and the Remuneration Counter. Passing through the crowds, Xuan Yue pulled Ah Dai quickly towards the Registration Counter, and shouted towards the staff inside, “I want to register a mercenary group.”

There was a young girl standing behind the counter, and she was shocked upon seeing the advanced magician badge on Xuan Yue’s chest. Speaking in a polite voice, she asked, “Miss, are you sure?” She had worked here for a few years, and she had never heard of any magicians wanting to create a mercenary group. With the status of magicians on the continent, they simply did not have to run around doing missions for a living. Although being a mercenary was a profitable job, in comparison, the danger was also much greater.

According to her knowledge, only the Red Hurricane Mercenary Group had some magicians, and as for an ordinary small mercenary group, there was no need to even mention magicians, even people who understood the essence of magic were rare and few.

Xuan Yue replied impatiently, “Of course I know, hurry up, don’t you see so many flies surrounding us?”

The young girl pursed her lips, and looking at Ah Dai who remained silent by Xuan Yue’s side, she smiled, “May I ask, how many members are there in your mercenary group, and what are the names of the leader and vice-leader?”

Without hesitation, Xuan Yue said, “There are two members, the leader is yours truly, Xuan Yue, and the vice-leader is him, Ah Dai.” As she spoke, she pointed towards Ah Dai’s tall stature.

“Ah Dai?” The young girl was slightly shocked, but she did not comment further, and quickly used her pen to record. At this time, those mercenaries had come to their senses, and quickly surrounded them from behind, in a desperate last attempt. Xuan Yue hmpf-ed and quietly muttered some incantations, a ball of light instantly appearing from her short magic wand. The glow suddenly increased , and the holy energy surrounded her and Ah Dai. “Whoever dares to bother me, don’t blame me for using my magic.” Although she had only used a simple illumination light attribute spell, under the boost from her holy aura, the illumination spell would produce certain energy fluctuations, and it would contain an effect of eliminating evil. It seemed extremely powerful, but actually, it did not possess any attack power, and was only useful against some low level darkness attribute monsters. However, to the people who did not

know magic, it was enough to scare them.

The dense holy aura instantly caused the mercenaries to take a few steps back. Apart from some mercenaries with profound martial skills, the others had all stepped aside, rushing to do their own stuff.

The young girl asked, “May I know what are your professions, and what do you specialize in?”

Xuan Yue replied, “Of course we are magicians, and I specialize in Light Attribute magic, while he specializes in Fire Attribute magic. Is registration so troublesome?”

The young girl let out a smile, “The registration is indeed troublesome, because we must record everything clearly! Miss magician, are you sure your mercenary group only has two people? This should be, the smallest mercenary group that I’ve seen. I feel that, you should recruit some warriors, so that your mercenary group will be stronger.”

Glancing at Ah Dai, Xuan Yue shook her head, “No it’s fine, just the two of us is enough. Are there other things to record, please hurry up.”

The young girl smiled, “There’s still one last thing, please think of a name for your mercenary group.”

Xuan Yue was stunned, “A name?” She had never considered this, in the morning, she was still angry at Ah Dai, thus, she only wanted to create a mercenary for fun and did not think too much into it. *Name? What name will be good?* Turning towards Ah Dai, she asked, “Ah Dai, what do you think our mercenary group shall be called?”

Ah Dai shook his head, “I am too dumb, it’s better if Miss thinks of a name.” After coming here, he was always on the lookout for Feng Ping and the members from his Red Lion Mercenary Group. However, he did not see any mercenaries with a lion badge and he felt much more at ease. It turned out that, after Feng Ping had left, the members of the Red Lion Mercenary Group had left after accepting a new mission. Even if they were here, it would perhaps be very difficult for them to recognize Ah Dai, who was dressed totally differently.

Xuan Yue let out a dissatisfied hmpf as she told the young girl, “Then let us be called the Angel Mercenary Group, it’s a nice name right.”

The young girl lowered her head to check, “I’m sorry Miss, this name has been taken already, please think of another one.”

Stunned, Xuan Yue hmpf-ed and muttered, “Even the name I thought of is taken, I’m so angry! It’s all your fault, causing me to get angry so early in the morning. Look, now everything is going wrong.” Xuan Yue vented her anger on Ah Dai, and pounded on Ah Dai’s arm. Unfortunately, she had just happened to hit against Ah Dai’s wound.

Ah Dai’s whole body shook, the immense pain caused him to involuntarily let out a grunt. Xuan Yue got a fright, only just noticing that there was a wound on Ah Dai’s arm. Glancing at Ah Dai who was trembling, she told the young girl, “Then let’s call us the Angel Devil Mercenary Group, with the meaning of angel and devil.” Turning around to give Ah Dai a glare, she commented, “Being so cold everyday, the title of a devil suits you.”

[TN: In Chinese, the words angel 天使 and devil 恶魔 have two characters, so she took a character from each word and merged them 天恶, thus the extra elaboration for what the two characters meant.]

Ah Dai clenches his teeth while enduring the pain from his arm, thinking to himself, *Who is the actual devil here?*

The young girl smiled, “Miss magician, please wait a moment, I’ll help you to make your mercenary cards. I’ll be back soon, you can first go to the Missions Counter to take a look at the missions there.”

Nodding in acknowledgement, Xuan Yue dragged Ah Dai along, towards that huge blackboard behind the Missions Counter.

Just at this time, a voice suddenly sounded from behind them, “Miss magician, may I know if we can discuss something?” A middle-aged man wearing a red leather coat appeared behind them. His head full of long red hair was combed neatly, and he was carrying a broadsword on his back. Although it was not as big as Ah Dai’s TianGang Sword, it could still be considered to be a heavy sword.

Xuan Yue swept her gaze across him. “Discuss? What’s there to discuss?”

The middle-aged man broke into a smile as he pointed towards the badge with a red colored hurricane design near his chest, “I the caption of First Warrior Brigade of the Red Hurricane Mercenary Group, I’d like to invite both of you, on behalf of our leader, to join our mercenary group’s Magician Brigade. There will be favorable treatment.”

Both Xuan Yue and Ah Dai were shocked, even if they did not pay attention to news, they would have heard of the reputation of the Red Hurricane Mercenary Group. That was a large mercenary group with tens and thousands of mercenaries, they were the top mercenary group on the continent. Such a strong power, was simply beyond the reach of other mercenary groups. The appearance of that middle-aged man, had also caused the people from other smaller mercenary groups to retreat. No one was willing to offend the Red Hurricane Mercenary Group, within the mercenary world, it possessed an influence like the Holy Church had over the continent.

Xuan Yue did not really care about how strong his mercenary group was, and replied in a cold voice, “Didn’t you see that we’ve just created our own mercenary group?”

The middle-aged man smiled, “This is easy to solve, there are two solutions; first is that you immediately disband your mercenary group, or second, you can merge under our Red Hurricane Mercenary Group at a favorable price.”

Seeing that the man was crude in his words and action, Xuan Yue was extremely dissatisfied as she hmpf-ed, “Both of us will never join your mercenary group, stop bothering us. Discussing money with magicians, are you crazy? Do you think we became mercenaries for the money?”

The middle-aged man was stunned, and asked, “Then why did both of you become mercenaries?”

Xuan Yue revealed a smug smile as she replied, “We became mercenaries, to experience the fun of adventuring, to think you are

from the top mercenary group, do you not even understand such a simple reason?"

Listening to Xuan Yue's words, the man smiled, "This is much easier then, there are so many difficult and arduous missions on the continent, which cannot be accomplished just by one person or even a few people, and the danger is extremely high. But if you have the support of our Red Hurricane Mercenary Group, you will be able to take on those difficult missions, wouldn't that be a better way to experience the fun of adventuring?"

Xuan Yue was slightly moved as she heard his words, however she quickly dispelled any thoughts of joining. *If Father were to find out that I've actually joined a mercenary group, I don't know how he might react. Although he pampers me a lot, if he knew that I've done such a thing to tarnish the reputation of the Holy Church, I'm afraid I won't be able to escape the fate of being confined. Creating my own mercenary group is a different case, I hope Father won't blame me too much.* Thinking about this, Xuan Yue immediately shook her head, "I'm sorry, we still prefer to adventure on our own."

Until now, Ah Dai still had not spoken anything. He had already made up his mind in the morning, to interact less with Xuan Yue in the future, in case she would hurt him further. Now what he was looking forward to the most, was that this one year would quickly pass.

"Miss magician, your cards are ready." The young girl had returned, holding two white colored magic cards in her hand.

Xuan Yue ignored the middle-aged man, and walked up to the

Registration Counter with Ah Dai. Taking the cards, she asked, “What use does it have?”

The young girl explained, “As you are the leader of the Angel Devil Mercenary Group, there will be details of you as well as your mercenary group on the card. Your mercenary group is currently of the lowest rank, the Fourth Rank. The rank will increase according to the mission difficulty and the number of missions that you complete. As you are a magician, your mercenary rank is of the Third Rank, it will also increase according to the mission difficulty and the number of missions that you complete. This magic card is representative of your identity, so keep it well, if you lose it, you must quickly come back to the guild to make a replacement. When accepting missions, you need to present your cards. Also, here are 2 Third Ranked mercenary badges.”

Accepting the two bronze badges, Xuan Yue grumbled, “Why am I only a Third Ranked mercenary, this is such a low rank.”

“It is very difficult for mercenaries to raise their ranks; the higher up you go, the harder it gets. If you rely on only completing ordinary missions, perhaps you need to take at least a year before you rise from the Fourth Rank to the Third Rank. Because of the fact that you are magicians, the Mercenary Guild has already given you favorable treatment. Look at me, I’ve been a mercenary for 20 years, yet I’m still a First Ranked mercenary now.” The person who spoke up, was the captain of the First Warrior Brigade of the Red Hurricane Mercenary Group, Carl.

Xuan Yue gave him a glare as she said, “Why haven’t you left, didn’t I tell you that, we will not be joining your mercenary group?”

The middle-age man smiled, “Even though the deal wasn’t successful, I am still very sincere in improving our relations. If there is anything that you need help with in the future, feel free to find me. If there are any difficult missions, we will be glad to co-operate with you.”

Co-operation? This does seem like a good idea, Xuan Yue’s tone softened as she said, “Okay then, may I know what is the name of this uncle?”

The middle-aged man rubbed his slightly unshaven face and replied in embarrassment, “Am I that old? Just call me big brother, I am Carl.”

Xuan Yue giggled, “Compared to us, of course you are old. Uncle Carl, if there are any missions that require co-operation in the future, we will surely find you. Okay then, we will be going to accept missions.” As she spoke, she pulled Ah Dai by his sleeves and ran towards the Missions Counter, looking at the missions blackboard with great urgency. Earlier, they were interrupted by that middle-aged man before they could see anything.

The blackboard was divided into 4 sections; at the bottom, was the Ordinary Missions, mostly escorting some merchants and goods, the remuneration was not high either. A section above, was the Rank 2 Missions, there were all sorts of missions within, and the difficulty was slightly higher. Surprisingly, a mission such as finding the Fragrant Grass, that Ah Dai knew about, was included within. Further up, was the Rank 1 Missions, the difficulty was even higher, but most of them were about finding some precious and rare items. For example, the remuneration of a mission to find a Nine Dragon

Porcelain Artifact was almost ten thousand gold coins. At the highest section, was the Special Rank Missions. There was currently only one mission and its description was: At the border between the Heaven's Origin Tribe and the Prosperous Empire, are the Death Mountains. It is rumored that there are high-purity top-grade magic crystals within the caves of the Death Mountains. The objective of this mission is to obtain such magic crystals and bring them back. The remuneration: According to the quality and the attributes of the magic crystals, there is a guaranteed remuneration of 10,000 amethyst coins.

Ah Dai knew about magic crystals, it was written in Gliss's notes that, magic crystals contain different elements in accordance to their various attributes. They have the power to absorb and store the energies of the magic elements, it would be like having an additional source of magic force for magicians, and it was exceedingly precious, one of the best materials in creating magic artifacts. If using top-grade magic crystals to create magic artifacts, although it was still not as good as godly artifacts, they could still greatly increase the powers of magicians. Under its boost, magic might even rise by one level. Gliss had kept some large magic crystals among his various materials, but those were only normal magic crystals. This mission could not help but move Ah Dai's heart. He did not want to do it for the money, but rather he was thinking that, if he could get a piece of top-grade magic crystal for Teacher Gliss, he would surely be very happy.

Xuan Yue had noticed the same mission, and she muttered to herself, "To think that top-grade magic crystals were worth so much!"

Carl suddenly spoke up, “Of course top-grade magic crystals are costly, magic crystals are quite rare in the continent, and magic staves created from normal magic crystals could already fetch a hefty price of tens and thousands of gold coins. Top-grade magic crystals are the treasures of the treasures, and using them to create magic artifacts, the price is almost impossible to imagine. This mission has been here for a long time, I think it was a Grand master Level Alchemist who posted that mission. However, until now, no one has been able to complete it.”

“The remuneration of this mission is so high, then why don’t your Red Hurricane Mercenary Group go and complete it, aren’t y’all the top mercenary group on the continent? Could it be that you don’t need the money?” Xuan Yue wondered.

Carl let out a bitter laugh, “How can we not need it? To maintain such a large mercenary group of tens and thousands of people, the funds needed are astronomical. However, the difficulty of this mission is really too high, and too dangerous. Our leader forbade us from attempting this mission out of concern for our safety.”

Xuan Yue was mystified, “Are the top-grade magic crystals really that hard to find? There are so many people in your Red Hurricane Mercenary Group, why not do an all-out search, 10,000 amethyst coins is not a small sum.”

Carl sighed, “The problem does not lie in the difficulty of finding it, but rather, the danger behind. Haven’t you seen where the top-grade magic crystals are from? That is the Death Mountains!”

This caused even Ah Dai to be intrigued, and he spoke for the first

time after entering the Mercenary Guild, “Is the Death Mountains really so dangerous?”

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 020: Special Ranked Mission

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Chapter 20: Special Rank Mission

Carl glanced at Ah Dai, revealing a confused look on his face, seemingly shocked at how ignorant Ah Dai was. However, he still explained, “The Death Mountains is the most terrifying place on the continent, it spans a vast area, almost the same as the area of the Sipho Tribe. A small part of it lies within the region of the Heaven’s Origin Tribe, while majority lies in the Prosperous Empire. It has practically become the natural border between the Prosperous Empire and our United Regions Commonwealth. Currently, if any of our citizens want to enter the Prosperous Empire, we can only pass through the TianGang Mountains nearby or through the territory of the Holy Church, otherwise we will have to take a roundabout route. In the legends, it is said that a thousand years ago, that was where the first Supreme Pontiff and countless great Mages sealed the Ancient Devil. There are all sorts of dangerous and terrifying monsters in there, and almost no one comes back from the Death Mountains. There were quite a few mid-sized mercenary groups that went to explore, but none of them returned. Even if we are to mobilize our whole group, I doubt we will be able to obtain the top-grade magic crystal. I have seen quite a few similar missions to find extremely precious items at the main headquarters in Red Hurricane

City, and most of these items all originate from the Death Mountains. It's rumored that the closer you get to the heart of the Death Mountains, the more fearsome the monsters are. The reason why the mission of finding top-grade magic crystals is not the highest rank mission – super rank, is mainly because they originate from the edges of the Death Mountains, and not deep within."

"This sounds like a very interesting place, the Death Mountains? It's my first time hearing of it, you said that few people return from there, but then how did the news of the top-grade magic crystals come about? I think, there must be some exaggerated parts, I don't believe there are actually such strong monsters," Xuan Yue commented. Actually, the reputation of the Death Mountains was known by almost everyone in the Holy Church, just that Xuan Yue's father had prohibited anyone from telling his daughter. No one understands Xuan Yue better than him, and he knew that, if Xuan Yue were to know about such a place, her curiosity to adventure would surely be aroused. However, it seemed like it was Heaven's Will, and his efforts were in vain.

Xuan Yue ignored Carl, who was rendered speechless by her questions, and turned to Ah Dai, "I've decided, let's just accept this top-grade magic crystals mission, okay? If you are afraid, then you can choose not to go."

Ah Dai shook his head, and replied without hesitation, "I'll go, however, Miss, if we obtain the top-grade magic crystal, I hope that I can have one piece, is that alright?" To him, Gliss was way more important than his fears of the Death Mountains.

"Sure, let's go then, to accept this mission." Xuan Yue readily

agreed.

Carl was dumbfounded as he watched Xuan Yue and Ah Dai run towards the Missions Counter to accept this quest, the quest that even their Red Hurricane Mercenary Group did not dare to accept. Listening from their speech, it was as though they would for sure obtain the top-grade magic crystals. He quickly ran over to the counter, “Miss magician, you mustn’t go to that place! You don’t even have any warriors, aren’t you just walking to your doom with two magicians?”

Xuan Yue had already given her mercenary card to the staff behind the counter, “Don’t worry, how can there be high rewards without risks? I won’t change my mind after I’ve made my decision, after all, less people means better mobility. If we can’t defeat the monsters, can’t we run away? Woi, hurry up! I want to accept that special rank mission, quickly help us register, we want to set off.” The last sentence was directed towards the staff behind the counter.

The staff behind the counter thought that he had heard wrongly at first, and only now did he realize that Xuan Yue was serious. His voice wavered as he asked, “Miss magician, are you sure?”

Xuan Yue giggled, “Of course I’m sure, quickly, oh right, call me the leader of the Angel Devil Group next time.”

Looking at the staff who was noting down the details, Carl was trying to dissuade Xuan Yue for the last time, “Miss magician, that place is really too dangerous, I think it’s better if you don’t go.”

Xuan Yue retrieved her card from the staff, and shot Carl a smile, “Un——cle—— Carl, you’re too old, old to the point you don’t even have the guts, aren’t they just some monsters? Let’s just go and take a look for ourselves, Ah Dai, let’s go.” As she finished speaking, she quickly ran out of the Mercenary Guild.

After Ah Dai and Xuan Yue was gone, all that was left were sounds of lament. No one was optimistic about their choice of mission.

Carl had been in the society for many years, and of course he would not change his decision just because Xuan Yue had called him a coward, thus he only shook his head, muttering, “It’s really ‘newborn calves are not afraid of tigers’, it’s such a pity, those are two magicians! The Death Mountains? Is that a place where people can enter?”

[TN: A Chinese idiom to describe that young people are more fearless; foolish to an extent that they don’t recognize danger]

In a dim corner outside of the Mercenary Guild, two silhouettes were quietly discussing.

“Yin Er (Silver 2), quickly go back and report to His Esteemed, young miss is going to the Death Mountains, I shall follow her.”

“Yin Yi (Silver 1), why don’t we just directly stop the young miss, we mustn’t let her go to the Death Mountains! That is the prohibited place of the Holy Church.”

“Ay——, I know that, but, do you really think we can stop the young miss? You should have remembered her temper, have you forgotten how she tormented you with her Holy Baptism spell? Quickly go

and report this, only His Esteemed can stop young miss, I will do my best to protect them. If His Esteemed still has not reached by the time we reach the Death Mountains, I will try and stop them."

"Okay, Yin Yi, I'll go first, you must protect the young miss! Otherwise, both of us will be in deep trouble. Although her temper is bad, her heart is still kind!"

"You don't have to remind me, I've seen the young miss grow up, ever since she was born, the Director gave this task to me. I didn't dare believe it at first, after all, our positions in the Inquisitors don't amount to much! Go quickly, time is precious."

One of the two black silhouettes suddenly disappeared with a flash, while the other, secretly followed behind Ah Dai and Xuan Yue.

As Xuan Yue walked, she chattered excitedly, "Ah Dai, do you think, after we finish this mission, our mercenary ranks will rise by a lot? Perhaps we might even become Special Ranked mercenaries! It's so interesting, hehe." She seemed to have forgotten the conflict in the morning, and her heart was filled with anticipation of her future adventures.

They had went back to the Magicians' Guild to retrieve Ah Dai's TianGang Sword, and Ah Dai did not have any complaints about Xuan Yue taking on this mission, he was only focused on the thought of obtaining the top-grade magic crystals. "Miss, I want to ask you a question."

Xuan Yue was in a good mood as she replied, "Ask away."

“Miss, do you know how does the top-grade magic crystal look like? If we do not even know how it looks like, how are we going to search for it?”

Xuan Yue let out a mysterious smile, as she walked closer to Ah Dai, and surveyed the surroundings before replying in a low voice, “Who knew that you would even think of this. Of course I know how it looks like, otherwise I wouldn’t have accepted this mission.”

Ah Dai was shocked, “You know?”

“Of course, don’t forget, my father is the crimson-robed priest of the Holy Church, there’s not much that I haven’t seen,” Xuan Yue replied with pride. As she spoke, she stretched out her short magic wand in front of Ah Dai, and pointed at that transparent gem on top of it, whispering, “This is a top-grade magic crystal.”

Ah Dai had never paid attention to Xuan Yue’s magic wand, but once he heard her words, he could not help but carefully inspect it. That one-foot long magic wand did not seem special from the surface, its white body was smooth and shiny, faintly emanating a holy aura, while its end was tapered into a sharp point. At the top of the wand, there was a pair of white wings with the same texture angling out, curving to form an arc, like a pair of angel wings. In the middle of the wings, at the very top of the wand, was a transparent gem the size of a chicken egg, there seemed to be liquid flowing inside the gem, and under the bright sunlight, it constantly emitted faint flashes of light. Pointing at that gem, Ah Dai asked, “Are you saying, that this is the top-grade magic crystal?”

Xuan Yue nodded, “Yes! This is what father told me. He surely won’t tell lies, do you not believe?”

Ah Dai carefully looked at the transparent gem in the middle of the magic wand, but could not find anything strange about it. Xuan Yue explained, “Top-grade magic crystals will produce a special energy fluctuation, as long as I see it, I will be able to recognize it. Just now, they said that we don’t have any warriors, how would they know, that you are already a warrior! Hehe, let’s go and prepare some food, then set out.”

Ah Dai followed Xuan Yue, and soon arrived in front of the fat owner’s steamed bun stall. Xuan Yue gave Ah Dai a look and said, “Don’t you like to eat steamed buns? Let’s prepare more of them, so we can eat them on the way.” As she spoke, she walked towards the owner. Ah Dai was stunned, and there was some hesitation in his mind, but he did not speak and merely trailed behind.

As he saw Ah Dai and Xuan Yue, the fat stall owner exclaimed excitedly, “Ah Dai, you’ve returned, I had just wanted to return you the remaining money. You’ve really given me too much yesterday, those steamed buns of mine aren’t even worth a single gold coin!”

Ah Dai lifted his hood, as he foolishly smiled, “Uncle, just accept it, it is what I ought to give you.”

“Owner, I want to buy steamed buns, how much for one?” Xuan Yue suddenly interceded.

The fat owner replied, “One copper coin for two. Miss, you’re together with Ah Dai right, just feel free to take, Ah Dai had given me too much money yesterday.”

Xuan Yue giggled, “I will be taking a lot then, you know how much he can eat.”

The fat owner let out a laugh as he said, “Just take however many you want.”

Glancing at Ah Dai, Xuan Yue thought to herself, *After seeing the fat owner, it looks like he is back to his silly self. It seems that he is still angry at me! Ah, so petty, that icy cold stare of his is really unbearable, I guess, I’ll have to bribe him well in order for him to be a good attendant.*

Thinking about this, Xuan Yue suddenly stuck out a finger towards the fat owner. “I want a thousand steamed buns.”

Ah Dai and the fat owner were both shocked as they stared at Xuan Yue. The fat owner’s legs felt weak as he almost collapsed onto the floor. “What? A thousand steamed buns?”

Xuan Yue looked at their astonished expressions and giggled, “Yes! I want a thousand, and I want it by tonight. This way, even if he eats 10 a day, it will still be able to last him 3 months.”

The fat owner stuttered due to his shock, “But, but, a thousand, a thousand steamed buns, how are you going to carry them!”

Letting out a mysterious smile, Xuan Yue stated, “You don’t have to bother about that, just prepare a thousand steamed buns for us, I will give you the money. Ah Dai, let’s go and buy other stuff.” As she finished speaking, she gave an amethyst coin to the owner, and dragged Ah Dai away.

Ah Dai was curious as well, a thousand steamed buns should be at least 100 or 150 kilograms, although he did not mind that much weight, he did not want to always be carrying a large sack of steamed buns while adventuring. However, he did not question, because he knew that even if he asked, Xuan Yue might not answer him, and he would know the answer eventually.

Behind them, the fat owner had a bitter smile on his face as he muttered to himself, “A thousand steamed buns… Even if I gave my all, I can’t finish it by tonight!”

After leaving the steamed bun stall, Xuan Yue started to go on a shopping spree. Apart from food as the main priority, she also bought some sets of clothes for Ah Dai and herself. Of course, all of these stuff that she bought naturally ended up in Ah Dai’s hands. Xuan Yue was intrigued by everything that she saw, and although she might not buy it, she surely had to take a look. She had browsed through almost all of the shops in the small city, and only stopped till it was evening. By this time, there were all sorts of items hanging from Ah Dai. However, just as they were about to return to the steamed bun stall, they were suddenly stopped by a group of people on the narrow and empty street, where few people passed by.

It was a group full of light-armored warriors, they did not seem very old, around 20 or so. There were over ten of them, dressed in the same attire, and all of them had mercenary badges on their chests, three of them even had silver mercenary badges, indicating that they were Second Ranked mercenaries. The most eye-catching out of them, was a female mercenary. She was wearing a brown light armor,

with her dazzling red hair flowing behind her, she looked extremely beautiful and her brows were emitting a heroic spirit. She carried a light-colored longbow that flashed with a silver metallic fluster, appearing to be an archer. Her mesmerizing gaze suddenly landed upon Ah Dai.

Being blocked by the group of people, Xuan Yue did not seem surprised but merely hid behind Ah Dai, whispering, “They do not seem to bear good intentions, it’ll be up to you.”

Ah Dai nodded as he walked forward, and said in a polite manner, “May I ask, what business do you have with us?”

One of the Second Ranked mercenaries stepped forth, out of this group of mercenaries, only he was wearing silver colored light armor, clearly indicating that he was the leader. Smiling, he replied, “Mister magician, hello, we are the members of the Moon Scar Mercenary Group, and I am the leader, Yue Hen, and these are my good brothers. We do not bear any ill intentions in blocking your path, but we’d like to seek co-operation.”

[TN: Yes, the leader’s name (Yue Hen) is the name of their mercenary group (Moon Scar; Yue = moon, Hen = scar) but it feels weird calling a person “moon scar” so i left his name in Hanyu Pinyin]

“Seek co-operation?” Ah Dai was baffled.

Yue Hen nodded, “Yes, I’ve seen how you accepted the mission at the Mercenary Guild, and we are also very interested in that top-

grade magic crystal. I wonder if we can co-operate, and go into the Death Mountain together?"

Once she heard that they were not out to rob them, Xuan Yue immediately ran in front of Ah Dai, asking, "Wanting to work together with us? What do you want to obtain?"

Yue Hen smiled, "Miss magician, as you can see, we're just a bunch of youngsters, we've heard what you said back in the guild, we do not want riches, but merely wish to adventure. Only places like the Death Mountains, are worthy of a good adventure. If there are many top-grade magic crystals, we just want a small portion of them, after all, the mission was accepted by you. If not for your words, we would not have been able to muster up the courage."

Xuan Yue blinked a few times, thinking, *Carl said that the Death Mountains were extremely dangerous, and it doesn't seem to be a lie. If this bunch of people were to come, we will have higher chances of success, and the more the merrier, after all, they are young as well.* Thinking of this, she nodded, "Okay then, we can work together, however, you must always follow my orders on the journey."

The red-haired girl walked up to Yue Hen's side and argued, "No way, there's only two of you, while we have so many people, and we aren't from the same mercenary group, why must we listen to you?"

Xuan Yue let out a hmpf, "I don't care, you must follow my orders, don't forget, I am a magician, a light attribute magician. Furthermore, only I am able to identify a top-grade magic crystal."

Yue Hen was surprised, and delight flashed across his eyes, the important aspect about light attribute magicians was not their attack power, but rather, their recovery and support magic, this way, injuries and deaths could be lessened. Yue Hen immediately nodded, “If that’s the case, then we agree. Little sister, don’t argue anymore.”

The red-haired girl hmpf-ed in discontent, “From her voice, she doesn’t seem to be any older than us. For her to order us around, I’m against it! Unless she can win against me.”

Since when was Xuan Yue ever afraid of a challenge, she quickly responded, “You’re against it? Okay then! I’ll accept your challenge! So what if I’m not as old as you, does being older mean that your abilities are better?” As she spoke, she lifted her hood. When the group of mercenaries saw her peerless looks, some of them could not help but cry out in astonishment, the looks of the red-haired girl instantly paled in comparison.

Ah Dai put down the items that he was carrying, and spoke to Xuan Yue with his head lowered, “Miss, let me do it instead.” No matter how dumb Ah Dai was, he knew that an archer was the nemesis of magicians, and since he had promised the crimson-robed priest, he must definitely not let Xuan Yue get hurt again.

Xuan Yue did not respond to Ah Dai’s offer, but gave the red-haired girl a look of disdain, while raising her magic wand in the air. “No need, I alone am enough to deal with her.”

Yue Hen also wanted to take a look at how this young girl, who seemed to be in her teens, managed to obtain an advanced magician qualification, so he told his sister in a low voice, “Don’t injure her.”

The red-haired girl grunted in response, as she took off her longbow, and like magic, a silver colored arrow appeared across the bow. The other mercenaries all took many steps back, giving them more space. The red-haired girl drew her bowstring as she said, “Little sister, don’t say that I’m bullying you, but my Wind Destroyer arrows have the property of breaking through magic. Remember my name, I am Yue Ji.” Once she spoke her last word, the silver arrow shot forth towards Xuan Yue who was about 30 steps away, like a streak of lightning. Yue Ji’s shooting skills were quite renowned among the mercenaries, and her accuracy with the arrow was on point. The purpose of this shot, was to tear off a piece of Xuan Yue’s clothing, to make this little girl who was prettier than her, feel embarrassed.

At such a close distance, it was simply unfair for magicians to fight against archers. After all, magicians needed time to chant their incantations, and this sudden arrow that was flying towards Xuan Yue did not give her any time to prepare.

Xuan Yue pushed Ah Dai, who was just about to intervene, away and slightly waved the magic wand in her hands. Just as the silver arrow was about to hit her, a strong flash of light suddenly appeared. When everyone regained their visions, they were surprised to discover that Yue Ji was completely enveloped in a layer of light, apart from Ah Dai, no one saw what had actually happened.

Even though Ah Dai saw, he was unable to comprehend it. Earlier, just as the silver arrow was about to reach Xuan Yue, she seemed to have quietly muttered a word, and instantly, she was covered with a barrier of light. That silver arrow, which Yue Ji claimed to have the

ability to pierce through magic, was immediately blocked by that light, and was unable to pierce through. Xuan Yue took that chance to cast a low-level magic, trapping Yue Ji within. What had shocked Ah Dai was that, when both defending and attacking, he did not see Xuan Yue chant any incantations.

Xuan Yue smiled pridefully, “Who said that archers were the nemesis of magicians? How was that? Do you still want to continue?” The faint streams of light circled around her, enhancing her beautiful features, and she seemed just like a fairy that descended from the heavens. All of the members of the Moon Scar Mercenary Group were entranced by her beauty.

After a long while, it was Yue Hen who first came back to his senses, as he walked over to his sister’s side. Glancing at the bewildered Yue Ji, he told Xuan Yue, “Miss magician, your abilities have greatly exceeded our expectations. When journeying to the Death Mountains, I’ve decided that the Moon Scar Mercenary Group shall wholly listen to your orders.”

Xuan Yue nodded in satisfaction, “Okay then, you can return first. Tomorrow at dawn, let’s meet at the West Gate, do not be late or we will not wait. Ah Dai, let’s go.”

On the way back to the steamed bun stall, Ah Dai really could not suppress his curiosity and asked, “Miss Xuan Yue, what did you do just now to block her arrow?” Ah Dai knew that, when facing such an arrow, he could only rely on his instincts and use the TianGang Sword to block, but as for whether he was able to block it, it was an entirely different case. As for using magic, he did not dare think of trying.

Xuan Yue pouted in reply, “Are you finally speaking to me? But that’s my secret, I can’t tell you.”

After being denied, Ah Dai awkwardly kept quiet once more.

Arriving at the steamed bun stall, they were instantly stunned by the sight before them. The tables were all filled with steamed buns, and the fat owner was sweating profusely as he took out more bamboo steamers. Ah Dai immediately rushed over to help.

Putting down the steamers, the fat owner panted, “Okay, there should be at least a thousand steamed buns now! All of this was only possible with the help of neighbors, we have toiled for a full afternoon! What I want to know now, is how are you going to carry them, all of these should be around 150 kilograms.”

Xuan Yue giggled, “Wait and see, I’ll show you how.” She closed the door to the stall, and stretched out her fair hand. She took out the necklace around her neck, it was a silvery white colored necklace that was not radiating light, and it seemed extremely normal. The only thing that caught Ah Dai’s eye was the red colored gem at the bottom of the necklace, it was continuously flashing a faint red light. At this time, the sky had darkened, and most of the commoners had went home for dinner. In order to make the thousand steamed buns, the fat owner had specially closed his stall for a day.

Xuan Yue closed her big eyes, and started chanting, “By the blood of the phoenix, open up, the gates of time and space.” Following her chanting, the red gem on the necklace suddenly started glowing, a ball of red light enveloped Xuan Yue, and she suddenly opened her

eyes, softly saying, “Keep——”

The steamed buns on the tables seemed to have listened to the summon, as one by one, they flew into the air and shot towards Xuan Yue, causing both Ah Dai and the fat owner to be astonished. The even stranger thing was that, once the steamed buns came into contact with the red light around Xuan Yue’s body, they instantly disappeared. Xuan Yue was like a bottomless hole, and in just a while, all of the steamed buns on the tables were gone.

The fat owner widened his mouth in shock, as he stammered, “This, is this the might of magic? It’s too incredible, too amazing!”

After storing the steamed buns, Xuan Yue did not stop, and also kept all of the stuff that she bought in the afternoon. But just as she wanted to keep Ah Dai’s bag, Ah Dai firmly refused to let go of his bag. Inside his bag, contained Owen’s ashes!

Xuan Yue immediately retracted the red light, “It’s not as if I want to take your stuff, why are you clutching it so tightly? Isn’t it tiring to carry it, why not let me keep in within my Phoenix’s Blood, and save you the trouble.”

Ah Dai stared at her for a few moments before replying, “No, this bag is very important to me, I must always keep it by my side. Miss Xuan Yue, I didn’t know that your magic was so powerful!”

“So petty! Is my magic really that powerful? My father’s is much more powerful than mine, when I grow up and reach the level of a grand magician, I’ll be able to open up my own spatial storage, then I won’t need to use this troublesome Phoenix’s Blood. Those steamed buns of yours are all in my necklace, if you get hungry, remember to

take some from me.”

Although Ah Dai had learnt some alchemy from Gliss, the sight before him had surpassed what he was able to comprehend. However, how could he know that the most precious item on Xuan Yue, was actually that Phoenix’s Blood necklace, using it to store steamed buns was a little too unfitting. That, was a precious item that the Supreme Pontiff had given to Xuan Yue, and it was one of the few godly artifacts in the Holy Church. If not for this Phoenix’s Blood protecting Xuan Yue, how could the crimson-robed priest Xuan Ye, let his daughter go adventuring by herself.

Xuan Yue muttered, “1 copper coin for 2 steamed buns, 100 copper coins is 200 steamed buns, 500 copper coins is a thousand steamed buns, the amethyst coin that I gave you should be enough right.”

The fat owner was awed by that shocking “magic” earlier, and he quickly nodded, “It’s enough, it’s more than enough, I’ll return you the rest.”

“Seeing that you’ve worked so hard, you don’t have to return me, I’m not so petty unlike some people. Let’s go, I’m tired, and we need to find a place to sleep.” As she spoke, Xuan Yue walked out of the stall.

After Ah Dai bade farewell to the fat owner, he quickly chased after Xuan Yue. She had not gone far, and was walking idly upfront. He rushed up to her and asked, “Miss, where are we going now?”

“I’ve already thought of it, just follow me.”

At first, Ah Dai had thought that Xuan Yue would surely find a luxurious hotel to stay in, after all she was the daughter of a crimson-robed priest, and she led a pampered life. However, unexpectedly, Xuan Yue only led him to an affordable and normal-looking inn near the West Gate. Although it was not very grand, it was very clean inside. Once he stepped into the inn, Ah Dai felt a comfortable feeling.

Xuan Yue noticed Ah Dai's confusion and explained, "We don't have a lot of money now, and there's still a long journey to the Death Mountains, it's better to save a little. If not for the fact that I didn't have money, I would not have gone to take the magician exam. What's so good about being a magician. Let's grab something to eat, I'm hungry."

After paying for two rooms, Ah Dai and Xuan Yue went to eat. Xuan Yue ate very little, only around one third of what Ah Dai ate. After that, she did not say anything and went back to her room to rest.

Ah Dai used his monthly stipend to pay for the food, and entered the room next door. Closing the door, he put down his bag and the TianGang Sword. Immediately, he felt his body become lighter and he let out a deep breath, while stretching his body. The vast energy from his boundless true qi had already healed most of the blood vessels on his arms, and Giger's water attribute magic was quite effective, not even leaving behind a scar. As long as he did not exert pressure, it no longer hurt.

Although he had only just entered the city for two short days, so much had already happened, and Ah Dai felt as though he was living in a dream. Towards Xuan Yue, even he did not know what sort of

feeling he felt. That sweet sleep yesterday night, as well as what happened in the morning, both incidents were deeply etched into his mind. Fatigue slowly invaded Ah Dai's body, and he suddenly realized that it was time for him to cultivate. Sitting cross-legged on the bed, he circulated his boundless true qi that had just reached the Fifth Stage, and started reciting the mnemonic. In just a while, he had entered the state of cultivation.

In the room next door, Xuan Yue was turning around in her bed, unable to fall asleep. She was obviously very sleepy, but once she closed her eyes, she would think of the events that happened in the past two days, and she simply could not fall asleep. She suddenly sat up, hmpf-ing in anger, "It's all that mean Ah Dai, always bothering me for no reason, hmpf, and causing me to be unable to sleep well! I'll make sure to teach him a lesson!" As she spoke, she suddenly thought of the feeling when she woke up within Ah Dai's arms that morning. It was an extremely comfortable and magical feeling, she had never slept so soundly in a long time, and she felt extremely safe within Ah Dai's arms. *If only I could make Ah Dai into a bed.* This thought suddenly flitted across her mind, causing her face to turn red. Laying down once more in bed, her sleepiness finally won over her random thoughts, and she finally fell asleep.

It was already late at night as Ah Dai drew out a long breath, and the white glow that enveloped his body gradually dimmed. After 49 cycles, his whole body felt rejuvenated, it was as though he had regained all of the blood that he lost earlier in the morning. The liquefied boundless true qi within his body seemed to have increased

slightly, and the fullness of his dantian made him filled with energy.

Glancing outside at the sky, it seemed that he still had quite some time before daybreak. There was indeed a difference when his Boundless Life Art reached the Fifth Stage, when he circulated 49 cycles in the past, it would almost be dawn when he finished. While right now, it was much faster when his Boundless Life Art had reached a new level.

The sky was very dark, and Ah Dai did not know how much time he had left. In his dim room, even with his eyesight, he could only see a few meters before him. *To sleep? But I've just finished cultivation, and I don't feel sleepy, should I meditate?* After seeing Xuan Yue's magic skills yesterday, Ah Dai felt demoralized over his own Flame spell and Fireball spell, and could not muster any efforts to meditate.

Suddenly, Ah Dai recalled the Hell's Sword near his chest. His whole body trembled as he thought, *Yes! I've already reached the Fifth Stage of the Boundless Life Art, and I can start practicing the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques.*

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 021: The Evil Hell's Sword

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Chapter 21: The Evil Hell's Sword

Ah Dai thought, he was going to go to the Death Mountains soon, and he had no idea what kind of monsters there were. In order to successfully return to see his Teacher Gliss, he decided to just learn it. Uncle Owen was right, it is fine as long as I have kind intentions, I'll just use the sword when facing evil monsters, using evil to fight evil. As he thought about this, Ah Dai undid his robes, revealing the leather sack underneath.

The black jewel on the hilt of the Hell's Sword faintly emitted a chilling feeling, Ah Dai clenched his teeth and took out the whole unsheathed sword. In order to prevent the evil qi from escaping, he circulated his boundless true qi in order to fully cover the Hell's Sword. A white light flashed, and the room instantly brightened, while a faint layer of black qi came out from the ancient sword scabbard, a stark contrast to the white colored boundless dou qi.

Even though it was covered by the boundless dou qi, the temperature of the room still dropped when the Hell's Sword was taken out of the leather sack. The waves of cold air, caused Ah Dai to shiver uncontrollably.

With one hand wielding the Hell's Sword, Ah Dai carefully took out the sheepskin with the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques from the leather sack.

Placing the Hell's Sword back into its original position, the evil qi dissipated and Ah Dai heaved a sigh of relief. His hands that were holding the sheepskin were trembling, until now, he was unsure of the changes that might befall him after he learnt the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques. However, he knew that Uncle Owen would definitely not harm him, and since he had told him to learn it, there ought to be no complications. Therefore, he decided not to hesitate further, and unraveled the sheepskin.

At first, Ah Dai was worried that there would be many difficult words that he might not be able to comprehend, but when he opened the sheepskin, he was instantly mesmerized by all of the pictures within. There was not a single word on the sheepskin, but only an extremely complicated diagram with all sorts of odd lines and strange symbols. In the middle of the pattern, there seemed to be two weird giant eyes, staring at him.

Within Ah Dai's consciousness, there seemed to be someone talking to him. He was unable to avert his gaze from the diagram, and the voice gradually became clearer.

"The Hell's Sword, the evillest sword on the continent, it was once the top godly artifact of the Underworld. For unknown reasons, it had landed in the mortal's' realm, and an Alchemist Feng Yuan chanced upon it, obtaining the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques as

well. The evil qi of the sword was too rampant, after all, it was an extreme evil qi that originated from the Heavens and Earth, people who do not have a resolute mind, or profound martial arts, must never use the sword, it not, great catastrophe would befall them. There are nine mnemonics of the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques, accompanied by their corresponding nine sword moves. After obtaining this sword, I've only recorded the cultivation method, but never practiced it myself, and thus, I'm unsure of its actual might. However, the last three moves seemed to possess a power that is not of this world, you must never carelessly attempt them, if not you will surely perish from the backlash. Even experts with a profound level of martial arts may get influenced by the evil of the sword, and turn into demonic beings. After drawing the Hell's Sword from its sheath, it must absorb someone's soul before it can return, if no enemies are killed, you will die instead. When using the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques, you must cover yourself with life force to prevent the evil qi from harming yourself. Only practice the Techniques that are within your means, the moves can be learnt, but not to be carelessly executed. Remember, most importantly, once you incite the evil powers of the sword, it is not easily withdrawn…"

By the time the voice stopped, Ah Dai was already covered in cold sweat. Although he did not know who the alchemist Feng Yuan was, he could guess that it was someone from at least thousands of years ago. The moves can be learnt, but never to be carelessly executed. However, where are the moves? Just as this question surfaced in his mind, the diagram on the sheepskin started moving, and a image of a shadow flickered across his consciousness. The shadow continuously moved, demonstrating one move after another, it did

not require any effort of memorization, and the nine moves were etched firmly into Ah Dai's mind.

When the shadow finally faded away, there was a flash of bright light before Ah Dai's eyes and the sheepskin returned to its original state, as though nothing had happened. However, those nine moves were already engraved into his mind. Ah Dai panted non-stop, in just a short period of time, his clothes were totally drenched from his sweat, and waves of fatigue washed over him, he had fully expended his mental strength.The sky outside was gradually becoming brighter, signifying that dawn had broken. it felt as though everything had happened in a flash, yet it actuality, quite some time had passed.

Of the nine moves, each one was more complicated than the previous one. The moves seemed very simple, but each was accompanied by a mnemonic. For example, for the First Move, the body of the shadow had one arm extended out, as he pulled out the sword from his chest area. The sword tip was aimed towards the middle between the brows of another shadow before him, and the first shadow flashed across the latter. This move was called Hell's Flash, and the mnemonic was only 11 words long —— King of Hell's First Flash, Hell's Sword Heaven Splitting Earth Crasher.

[TN: in Chinese, there are 7 words in the mnemonic 冥王一闪天地动 , but due to English translation, I've changed it to 11 (update the name in chapter 12.2)]

Ah Dai stood up, and went to the bathroom to wash away the sweat

on his body, while changing into a set of clean clothes. This made him feel much more comfortable and he did not feel tired even though his mental strength had yet to recover. Hell's Flash? Hell's Sword Heaven Splitting Earth Crasher? Do I just chant this while using the sword to stab towards the enemy? He used his hand to stab towards the air, while chanting, "King of Hell's First Flash, Heaven Splitting Earth Crasher."

Immediately after chanting his mnemonic, he felt the Hell's Sword near his chest tremble. A gust of icy cold air instantly flowed across his body from his chest, and his body suddenly flashed across a certain distance according to his thoughts. The Hell's Sword started emitting a low buzzing noise, seeming as though it wanted to escape from its sheath.

Ah Dai got a big fright, if the Hell's Sword was to be unsheathed, it will immediately release great amounts of evil qi. It would be beyond his control, once the evil qi spreads out, perhaps no one within a hundred meters would survive from its evil powers. Thinking of this, Ah Dai quickly jumped back into bed, and took a deep breath, circulating the liquid boundless true qi in his dantian towards his chest. A while later, an intense white light emanated from his chest area, the white light released faint waves of silver glow, barely managing to suppress the trembling of the Hell's Sword.

When the Hell's Sword had completely ceased moving, Ah Dai finally let out the breath he was holding. He panted for a while, his right hand tightly pressed against his chest. It's too scary, really too frightening. The icy cold feeling of that extreme evil qi released even when unsheathed was already so frightening, no wonder Uncle Owen

was able to become the top assassin of the continent with it.

After a long time, Ah Dai finally calmed his emotions, but he was shocked to discover, that more than half of his boundless true qi was depleted. It was probably depleted when he was suppressing the evil qi.

The sky gradually brightened, and Ah Dai had no more time to cultivate and recover. Thus, he packed his bags and waited for Xuan Yue to wake up. The first time he tried practicing the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques, he had already expended all of his mental strength and a half of his boundless true qi. This caused Ah Dai to be fearful, and he no longer dared to carelessly recite the mnemonic. He tried executing just the moves of the Hell's Flash, but he did not get the desired effect, it was simply like a normal sword technique. Perhaps I'll wait till my strength recovers before practicing, this Hell's Sword is really dangerous, carrying it is like a ticking time bomb, that may explode anytime.

Walking over and opening the window, the early morning breeze carried a trace of coldness. The sun had already risen, hanging high up in the east, looking like a huge red gem that was embedded within the azure blue sky. The rays of the morning sun, were not glaring to the eye, it seemed extremely gentle, but gave people a feeling of vitality and life.

Inhaling a deep breath of fresh air, Ah Dai's spirit was lifted. A new day had arrived, and the faraway Death Mountains are awaiting me!

"Ah Dai, Ah Dai." Xuan Yue's voice came from beyond the door. She had woke up really early!

Opening the door, Ah Dai saw that Xuan Yue's complexion did not seem very good, she was still wearing the white magician robes, and her eyes were slightly red, as if she did not have a good sleep.

"Miss Xuan Yue, did you not sleep well yesterday?"

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed in reply, "Isn't it all your fault! I've finally fallen asleep after tossing around, but only to be woken up from the cold in the middle of the night." Yesterday, she had slept much poorer compared to the day before, she could not help but miss Ah Dai's warm arms.

Ah Dai got a scare, thinking that Xuan Yue had found out that he was practicing the Hell's Sword Nine Techniques. Immediately he apologized, "I'm sorry, I won't do it in the future."

Xuan Yue pouted, "It's good that you know your wrongs, how can you touch a girl's body so easily? We are about to set off soon, you better listen to me on the journey. If not, I won't give you a piece of that top-grade magic crystal."

"Yes, I am Miss' attendant, I will listen to your orders," Ah Dai nodded in reply.

Facing Ah Dai's humble attitude, Xuan Yue felt immense displeasure, and she remarked snidely, "You really are suited to be a slave, in just two days, you've already learnt how to be a servant?"

Ah Dai's whole body trembled as grievances and anger filled his body, he clenched his teeth and glared at Xuan Yue, his eyes almost seemed to be spitting fire.

After she spoke those words, Xuan Yue was dumbfounded, and just

stood there in a daze. She did not understand why she would speak such hurtful words either, it was not her intention!

The two of them just stood there silently, not speaking for a long time.

“I’m hungry, let’s go eat and head out directly.” It was Xuan Yue who first broke the silence. Her voice was monotonous, without any trace of emotions. Xuan Yue turned and walked in the direction of the dining hall, while Ah Dai did not move. He continued to stand there, until he saw Xuan Yue’s back disappear. Letting out a faint sigh, he put on his red magician robes, and hid his body underneath the giant cloak. Carrying his TianGang Sword and bag, he then walked towards the dining hall.

Under such an awkward atmosphere, both Xuan Yue and Ah Dai ate very little. Throughout their whole breakfast, none of them spoke.

After leaving the inn, the two of them arrived at the West Gate. Yue Hen and Yue Ji were already waiting there, but of the dozen mercenaries yesterday, only two remained, and in total, there were only four of them.

Spotting Ah Dai and Xuan Yue, Yue Hen immediately rushed over to greet them, “Miss magician, you’ve arrived.”

Xuan Yue looked at Yue Hen, and asked, “Why are there only four of you, where are the others of your Moon Scar Mercenary Group? Don’t tell me they’re not joining?”

Yue Hen gave a bitter smile, “I’ve no choice either, after all we are all good brothers, and this mission is so dangerous, I can’t force them!

Many of them still have families to care about, and there were only the four of us in the end, me, my sister, and these two brothers. These two brothers are both orphans, so they don't have any lingering attachments, and they were very interested in this adventure."

[TN: In Chinese, 兄弟 doesn't mean blood siblings, it just means a very close friend, a good buddy, or in this case, a good brother. Only Yue Hen and Yue Ji are siblings, while the others are just referred to as brothers, not actually blood brothers!]

Xuan Yue replied in annoyance, "Hmpf! I hope that you won't back out when we reach the Death Mountains. If not, let's just disband right now."

"You can rest assured about this, us siblings will definitely not change our minds once we decide on something. Let me introduce you, this brother here is Wan Li, he's proficient in the heavy sword; and that brother is Miao Fei, he's proficient in quick-sword and body techniques." Wan Li had a tall and large stature, around the same as Ah Dai, the heavy sword that he was carrying seemed to be even broader than Ah Dai's TianGang Sword, but just slightly shorter. His hair was pretty messy, and he seemed very rugged, he looked to be around 24 or 25 years old. On the other hand, Miao Fei was much thinner and shorter, even shorter than Yue Ji by half a head. His limbs were very long, almost reaching his knees. He had a perceptive look, and seemed a little timid, he was currently appraising Xuan Yue and Ah Dai. Xuan Yue did not notice his sword, but looking at him, who looked like a monkey, she could not help bursting into laughter.

Delight flashed across Miao Fei's eyes as he smiled, "Hello Miss, I am Miao Fei, 18 this year, handsome and charming, suave and romantic. I don't have any girlfriend currently,… …"

Yue Hen coughed, and told Xuan Yue, "Miss magician, why not introduce yourself as well, we don't know your name yet."

Xuan Yue glave Miao Fei a side glance, "I am Xuan Yue, this is my friend Ah Dai, he is proficient in fire attribute magic."

Friend? Ah Dai was stunned, he never would have imagined that Xuan Yue would introduce him as such. Stepping forward, he said, "Hello."

Hearing Ah Dai's name, Yue Ji let out a grin, "Your name is so strange! Ah Dai, right?" Yue Hen saw the sword hilt peeking out from behind Ah Dai's shoulder, and a trace of astonishment flashed across his eyes.

Ah Dai nodded his head slightly, he did not dare face Yue Ji's overbearing gaze, and only lowered his head to look towards Xuan Yue.

Xuan Yue gave Yue Ji a dissatisfied glare, before continuing, "Let's go." As she spoke, she grabbed Ah Dai's sleeve, and led them out of the city.

After exiting the city, Yue Hen took out a map. "The Death Mountains are located in the South-West side, in order to get there, we must pass through the territories of the Puyan Tribe and the Heaven's Origin Tribe. If we are fast, we can reach in about half a month. Miss Xuan Yue, do you have any suggestions?"

“Eh, can’t we just go there directly, what suggestion do you need?”

Yue Hen explained, “I’ve never been to the Heaven’s Origin Tribe, so I’m not too sure. However, the Puyan Tribe is a very strange tribe. Even within the Commonwealth, they very rarely interact with people from other tribes, and only live within their own territory. Also, they seem to be very hostile towards strangers, the Puyan tribesmen have very cold temperaments, I’ve been there once… Ay ——, it was a horrible experience! At there, even if you wanted to buy stuff, no one would sell it to you.”

Yue Hen’s words ignited Xuan Yue’s interest. “That means, the Puyan Tribe must be hiding some secret? If not, they won’t be so hostile.”

Nodding, Yue Hen continued, “Perhaps so, we just need to pass through their territory. As long as we try not to get into any conflicts with them, it should be fine. As for the Heaven’s Origin Tribe, it’s even more complicated, there are many different races there, and each race has their own characteristics, the journey might not be very smooth! It’s better to be cautious on the way.”

“What’s there to be afraid of, the cart will find its way around the hill when it gets there, let’s just get there first. If we don’t provoke them, what can they do to us? And this way by walking is too slow, why don’t we hire a horse carriage? It will be faster and less tiring,” Xuan Yue replied nonchalantly.

Yue Hen laughed, “What? Hire a horse carriage? I’ve never heard of mercenaries taking a horse carriage, even mercenaries who ride a horse are quite rare, only those big mercenary groups like the Red

Hurricane Mercenary Group, would have their own cavalry unit. I guess let's forget about the horse carriage, at the most, let's wait till we arrive at the next city, and buy some horses."

Xuan Yue grumbled, "Why are there so many restrictions! Why can't we sit on a horse carriage, hmpf!"

While Xuan Yue and Yue Hen were talking, Yue Ji scooted over to Ah Dai's side. Looking at Ah Dai who was half a head taller than her, she smiled and said, "Hello Ah Dai, I am Yue Ji"

Ah Dai was shocked, and was at a loss of what to do. After all, Yue Ji was the second girl that he had come across ever since he stepped into the continent, and she seemed much more mature than Xuan Yue. "Ah.. He- hello, Miss Yue Ji."

Yue Ji thought to herself, No wonder he's called Ah Dai, he really is a little dumb, "Ah Dai, why are you carrying such a big sword! It must be at least 5 feet long?"

Just as Ah Dai was about to respond, Xuan Yue spoke up, ""That sword of his is for decoration, or to open up the route or something, just decoration only, he's not as powerful as the warriors of your mercenary group."

"I think so too, however brother Ah Dai's sword is even longer than mine, and it seems quite heavy! Brother Ah Dai, amongst the magicians, I think your strength should be considered pretty good," Wan Li voiced his agreement.

Ah Dai glanced at Xuan Yue, he did not understand why, even

though they were working together, he still had to hide the fact that he knew martial arts. However, he did not speak anymore, and merely nodded at Wan Li.

Due to Xuan Yue's poor stamina, after walking for a while, she would clamor to take a rest. Even after walking for a full day, they still had not reached the next city. It was soon evening, and the pearl-like moon gradually replaced the setting sun, the light suddenly dimmed.

Yue Hen looked at the sky, telling Xuan Yue, "Miss Xuan Yue, it seems that we will have to camp in the wild today, we are currently still in the territory of our Red Hurricane Tribe. However, our speed is too slow and when we arrive at the next city tomorrow, it looks like we really need to get some horses."

Once she heard that they were going to be camping in the wild, Xuan Yue's big eyes instantly brightened, she lifted the hood off her head and smiled, "Great! Then let's first set up our tents, where shall we set them up?"

Looking at Xuan Yue's ethereal smile, Yue Hen was rendered speechless for quite a while. In order to cover his embarrassment, he quickly replied, "To set up a tent, it's to better a place without wind, and then all that needs to be done is to clear out an open space."

Yue Ji pointed towards the forest by the roadside, "Big brother, how about there, there shouldn't be much wind tonight."

Yue Hen nodded, bringing the rest into the forest. Under the bright moonlight, the forest was filled with various flitting shadows, and the occasional breeze cause the leaves to rustle, making the silence

of the forest even more mysterious. The Yue siblings, along with Wan Li and Miao Fei, put down their bags and took out tents made with soft leather. In just a short moment, four tents were already skillfully set up and tightly secured with nails. The four tents formed a circle, while there was around a dozen square meters of space in the middle.

Ah Dai had wanted to help, but he was stopped by Xuan Yue, the reason being that he did not know anything, and he would only cause more trouble instead of helping.

After setting up the tents, Yue Hen walked over with a smile, “Miss Xuan Yue, you might need to bear with it for tonight, and share a tent with my younger sister. Although it may be a little tight, but it can at least shelter you against the wind and rain. Brother Ah Dai, you can share a tent with me, although we are both not small-sized, just bear with it for tonight.”

Xuan Yue pouted, and complained, “No, who wants to share a tent with her, I’m used to sleeping by myself, free up a tent for me.” As she talked about sleeping by herself, she secretly glanced at Ah Dai, and could not help but recall the comfort of sleeping in Ah Dai’s arms. A tinge of blush slowly appeared across her cheeks.

Yue Hen was stunned, and awkwardly replied, “But there are only four tents, how do we share?”

“Isn’t that simple, you sleep with that bulky Wan Li, and give your tent to me, while Ah Dai sleeps with your sister,” Xuan Yue answered nonchalantly. She had wanted to embarrass Yue Ji intentionally, as she still held a grudge against Yue Ji for the

challenge yesterday. Furthermore, Yue Ji also looked pretty decent, and her figure was… … As women, she could not help but feel a little jealous.

Yue Hen stammered, “What? No way, my sister is a girl!”

Ah Dai also got a fright, quickly shouting, “No, no, I, I’ll just sleep outside, I don’t need a tent.”

Pouting, Xuan Yue retorted, “To think you’re so timid, that day, didn’t you still… …” She wanted to say, ‘that day, didn’t you still sleep with me’, but she suddenly caught herself and quickly stopped. However, her face was already blushing, and her heartbeats quickened as she glanced at Ah Dai, muttering, “Whatever, I don’t care anymore, I just want to sleep by myself.”

Yue Ji just happened to walk out at this moment, but unexpectedly, she only glared at Xuan Yue, then walked over to Ah Dai’s side with a smile on her face, “Am I that scary? What’s wrong with sleeping together with me?”

Instantly, Ah Dai was dumbfounded as he stammered, “No, no, grand magician Giger said that, boys and girls who are not married, must not sleep together.”

Hearing Ah Dai’s words, Yue Ji could not help but laugh, her laughter was melodious like ringing bells. “What’s wrong, little brother, have you just stepped into society?! It seems that this elder sister will have you educate you.”

Yue Hen furrowed his brows, “Yue Ji, stop teasing brother Ah Dai, tonight I’ll share a tent with brother Ah Dai, while brother Wan Li

can share a tent with Miao Fei, this will be fine."

Yue Ji ignored her brothers chiding, as she scurried over, whispering in Ah Dai's ear, "Do you really not want to sleep with me at all?"

Ah Dai felt her warm breath against his magician robes and he could clearly catch the sweet scent of her breath, which was like orchids. His body seemed to have frozen as he tried to dodge to the side, "No, no, I.. I'll go relieve myself." As he finished speaking, he quickly turned and ran towards the forest.

Looking at the frightened Ah Dai, Yue Ji could not help but burst into laughter. The reason why she teased Ah Dai, was not because she felt any special attraction towards him, but only because she had originally thought that there was some special relationship between him and Xuan Yue. Since she was unable to offend Xuan Yue with her fearsome magic, she could only tease Ah Dai, in hopes of angering Xuan Yue. However, who knew that, after teasing Ah Dai for so long, there was unexpectedly no reaction from Xuan Yue, and she only stared excitedly at Yue Hen's tent. Yue Ji wondered about their exact relationship, could it be, that they were only just friends?

Glancing towards his sister, Yue Hen was full of disapproval as he chided, "You better behave yourself, brother Ah Dai is so honest (naive in a good way), don't bully him."

Yue Ji put on a look of innocence as she said, "When did I bully him, I only saw that he was a little boy, so I was just trying to educate him."

Helplessly, Yue Hen sighed, "You… just don't cause too much trouble. I'll go raise the fire, and cook some dry rations. After eating,

we need to get a good rest, we have to set off early in the morning.

After a long time, Ah Dai finally came out of the forest. There was already a pile of firewood in the middle of the four tents, that the others had just gathered. Yue Hen and Miao Fei were crouching there, trying to start the fire with a stone. However, perhaps the air was too moist, they did not have any success. Wan Li was sitting by the side polishing his heavy sword, while Yue Ji was fiddling with her bow, only Xuan Yue was nowhere to be seen.

Seeing that Xuan Yue was not there, Ah Dai felt worried and quickly walked over to Yue Hen, asking, “Big brother Yue Hen, where’s Xuan Yue?”

Yue Hen did not have the time to reply before Xuan Yue’s voice sounded, “So you’ve finally thought of finding me! I’m preparing food for y’all, don’t you want to eat steamed buns? Come over, I have stuff to speak to you.”

Ah Dai looked in the direction of her voice, only to see Xuan Yue peeking out from Yue Hen’s tent, while waving a steamed bun in her hand. Catching sight of Xuan Yue, Ah Dai was finally able to relax. He hastened over towards the tent, and squatted, “Miss Xuan Yue, what did you want to talk about?”

Xuan Yue glared at him in displeasure, “Just a little scolding and you’ve become so cold, here, I’ll give you this steamed bun, is that okay?” To Xuan Yue, this was a sort of apology.

Ah Dai accepted the steamed bun, muttering, “I am a stupid person, I wasn’t cold, just that I’m afraid that if I spoke too much I’ll offend you again. If there’s nothing else, then I’ll leave first.”

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed, “You are indeed dumb, oh right, don’t tell them about my Phoenix’s Blood, that is my secret. Look.” As she spoke, she lifted up the tent cover, and there were about a dozen steamed buns inside, “This is our dinner for today.”

Ah Dai carried the steamed buns as he asked, “Since we have decided to work together with them, why can’t we be honest with them, isn’t it bad to hide secrets from them?”

Rolling her eyes, Xuan Yue spoke in a soft voice, “Do you understand? My father has taught me, ‘One should not have the heart to harm others, but must be vigilant so as not to be harmed.’ It’s better to be more careful, especially of that Yue Jie, she doesn’t seem to be a good person. You mustn’t interact with her too much, understood?”

Ah Dai nodded, “Okay.” But in his heart, he was thinking, Why do I feel that she is much better than you, at least she doesn’t have a temper like yours.

Xuan Yue came out of the tent and ran over to Yue Hen, “Why is the fire not started after such a long time?”

“It is summer now, and the air is more moist. Although the temperature is high, it is too humid here and the firewood is not dry enough. I’m afraid we will have to eat cold dry rations today.”

Xuan Yue giggled, “Y’all are really dumb! Have y’all forgotten, there’s a fire attribute magician with us! Quickly, Ah Dai, help us light the fire.”

Ah Dai nodded as he walked over to the pile of firewood, but just as he was about to chant the incantation, Miao Fei sounded, “Brother Ah Dai, you are at wrong here, as a fire attribute magician, how can you watch us toil around and not come to help us out.”

Ah Dai wanted to explain, but Xuan Yue interceded, “Ah Dai’s may be slow at thinking, but since when are you allowed to speak badly about him.”

Miao Fei’s expression slight changed, but as he looked at Xuan Yue, his anger instantly dissipated.

“Okay, okay, brother Ah Dai, let us have a look at your magic,” Yue Hen tried to smooth things over.

Hearing that Xuan Yue had spoken up for him, Ah Dai felt moved. He voiced his agreement and chanted, “Fire elements filling the heavens and earth! Please bestow upon me your blazing strength, in my name, by thy power, searing flame appear.” With a whoosh, a deep blue flam instantly appeared in Ah Dai’s palms. To mercenaries like Yue Hen and the others, they had never seen the power of magic, and this sudden flame that appeared had gave them a fright. The surrounding temperature steadily rose, and apart from Xuan Yue, all of the others uncontrollably stepped back.

“Woah, such a pretty blue flame! Bother Ah Dai, you are awesome!” The person who spoke up, was Yue Ji. After she had saw the flame spell that Ah Dai executed, she could not even be bothered about her own bow, as she jumped up and sat beside Ah Dai. Ah Dai stretched out his hand in front of him, and blew gently at the flame while circulating his boundless true qi. A small blue flame instantly flew

out, landing on the pile of firewood.

The blue flame had an extremely high temperature, thus it was able to dry up the moisture within the firewood, and light it up, creating a bonfire. Along with the cackling of the fire, their surroundings brightened up, and under the reddish glow of the flames, Xuan Yue seemed even more enchanting. Miao Fei's pupils were already dilated, while even Yue Hen seemed to be in a daze.

Under the roasting fire, everyone ate the steamed buns that Ah Dai took out, no one had raised any suspicions, as they thought that the steamed buns were from Ah Dai's bag.

After eating, Xuan Yue called Ah Dai into her tent. Just as he was about to ask her the reason, something appeared within Xuan Yue's hands, it was precisely the marinated meat that they had bought yesterday in the city.

"Here, for you, quickly eat it."

Stunned, Ah Dai asked, "Why didn't you take it out just now?"

Xuan Yue glared at him, "I'm not so dumb like you! This is our food, why should we let them eat it, giving them steamed buns is already good enough. They have no relations with me, but you are my attendant, if you do not maintain a healthy body, how are you going to protect me. Quickly, eat this and go to sleep."

Although Ah Dai was slightly confused, he still at the marinated meat. The meat was way more savory than the steamed buns, and furthermore, the three steamed buns earlier were simply not enough to fill his stomach.

“Miss, I’ll return first then.”

“Hmpf, I’ve already given you the meat, why are you still calling me ‘Miss’, can’t you change it? I order to to call me Yue Yue.”

Ah Dai hesitated for a moment, “But, but, I’m still your attendant! It’s better if I called you Miss.”

Angrily, Xuan Yue pouted, “Miss, miss, HMPF. Get out now, hateful!”

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 022: The Puyan Warrior

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Chapter 22: The Puyan Warrior

Ah Dai quietly exited the tent, and inhaled a deep breath of the refreshing air. However, even so, he was unable to clear the confusion in his mind, he simply could not figure out what sort of person Xuan Yue was. Sometimes hot and sometimes cold, throwing a tantrum at him, then suddenly showing care for him.

“Brother Ah Dai, quickly come in and sleep, we need to set off early tomorrow.” It was Yue Hen who spoke, and he was currently smiling at Ah Dai.

The tent was very small, and with Yue Hen and Ah Dai’s figures, it was indeed quite cramped inside. Yue Hen sat crossed-legged by the side and asked, “Brother Ah Dai, how old are you this year?”

Ah Dai lifted the hood from his head as he replied, “I’m 17 this year, how about you, brother Yue Hen?”

“I’m older than you by 2 years, I’m 19 this year, while my sister is 18, we can be considered to be of the same generation. How do you feel about going on this journey to the Death Mountains?”

Ah Dai was stunned, and shook his head, “I just want to obtain a piece of magic crystal for my Teacher.”

“I see, then how did you meet Miss Xuan Yue? Your relationship seems to be very weird.”

Ah Dai sighed in response, “Brother Yue Hen, don’t ask anymore, it’s complicated! You can start cultivating, I’ll start to meditate too.” As he finished speaking, he sat cross-legged, and closed his eyes.

Seeing that he refuse to speak, Yue Hen shook his head helplessly, and started cultivating his dou qi.

After meditating for a while, Ah Dai saw that Yue Hen had already entered the state of cultivation. Thus, only then did he start circulating his boundless true qi. Since Xuan Yue did not want to let the others know about his ability to use martial arts, he could only follow along.

The night remained silent, and the next morning, everyone continued on their journey, advancing in the direction towards the territory of the Puyan Tribe. After a whole afternoon of walking, they finally arrived at the next city in the Red Hurricane Tribe at noon. This city was obviously much bigger, and most of the citizens were Red Hurricane tribesmen. Under Xuan Yue’s insistent demands, they eventually bought a spacious carriage and two fine steeds to pull the carriage. When paying the money, Xuan Yue was only willing to pay 50 gold coins, while simply the carriage costed at least 100 gold coins. Yue Hen seemed to be quite affluent as he did not argue, and even paid for the others. The most pitiful was Ah Dai, Xuan Yue used the excuse that he was not going to buy anything with his money, and took all of his money instead. Of course, all of it went into her own purse. After lunch, Wan Li drove the carriage, and continued on their journey.

With the horse carriage, their speed was much faster, and after two days, they finally crossed the borders of the Puyan Tribe.

Although riding on the carriage was quite bumpy, it was much more relaxing as compared to walking. However, also due to the bumpiness, Yue Hen did not dare to cultivate and when he got bored, he started chatting. After a few days of being together, they came to know one another better. Ah Dai and Xuan Yue found out that, Yue Hen and Yue Ji were actually children of a noble family in the Red Hurricane Tribe, and it was very strict at home. Like Xuan Yue, they had also run away from home, and only returned home once or twice a year. Even though they were not very old, they already had 3 years of experience as mercenaries, and the Moon Scar Mercenary Tribe was just created last year. Due to the fact that being a mercenary was quite a popular profession in the Red Hurricane Tribe, their parents no longer restricted their activities after seeing that they had gained quite a bit of fame. Yue Hen's Moon Shadow Sword Techniques were imparted down their family, while Yue Ji's archery skills were learnt from their mother, the two of them possessed pretty decent strength.

What made Ah Dai surprised was that, Xuan Yue did not boast of her own identity, but merely said that she had learnt light attribute magic from a nameless magician. In these few days, Xuan Yue kept a low profile, apart from questioning Yue Hen about some interesting stuff in the continent, she never mentioned her background.

"Xuan Yue, it seems that riding a horse carriage is actually so relaxing, you've really done a good thing this time!" Yue Jie remarked with a tinge of sarcasm. Even after being together for the

past few days, the relationship between Yue Ji and Xuan Yue did not change, they continued to bicker and argue, as though there was some sort of deep-rooted hatred between them.

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed, “So you realized that now! Ah Dai, why are you keeping such a far distance away from me, I’m sleepy, lend me your shoulder to sleep on for a while.”

Ah Dai got a fright and immediately tried to hide to the side, “Miss, boys and girls should not get close, this doesn’t seem good.”

Miao Fei interjected with glee, “Miss Xuan Yue, if he isn’t willing, why not I lend you my shoulder?”

Xuan Yue gave him a glare as she said, “You’re too skinny, I don’t want your shoulder! Ah Dai, quickly come over!” As she spoke, she moved over next to Ah Dai.

The horse carriage only had so much space, thus Ah Dai had no choice but to let Xuan Yue lean on him. Under Miao Fei and Yue Hen’s envious looks, Xuan Yue leaned against Ah Dai’s arms and closed her eyes. She did not know why, but once she leaned against Ah Dai’s sturdy arms, her fatigue felt more intense, and she fell asleep almost immediately.

However, while Xuan Yue slept peacefully, Ah Dai was suffering. He did not dare move an inch, and not only did he need to endure Yue Ji’s curious gaze, he had to try and maintain his balance.

Xuan Yue gradually entered a deep sleep and her hands were tightly clutching Ah Dai’s arms, with a satisfied look on her face. Looking at Xuan Yue’s serene sleeping face, and feeling the soft warmth

radiating from her body, a tinge of gentleness appeared in Ah Dai's eyes.

As it was already afternoon, the hot weather caused everyone to feel a little drowsy, and they were all in a muddled state.

Suddenly, the carriage jolted, and screeched to a stop, it seemed that Wan Li had forcefully stopped the horses. Everyone woke up from the intense shaking, and Xuan Yue's body had unknowingly ended up within Ah Dai's embrace from the shaking. In a daze, Xuan Yue asked in confusion, "What's wrong?"

Ah Dai was afraid that Xuan Yue would misunderstand and think that he was taking advantage of her, so he quickly righted up her body. "I don't know what's happening either, the horse carriage seemed to have suddenly stopped."

Miao Fei had already stepped out, while Yue Hen and Yue Ji soon followed, leaving only Ah Dai and Xuan Yue in the carriage. Ah Dai suggested, "Miss, I'll go take a look as well."

Xuan Yue let out a yawn as she replied, "I'm so tired, I still want to sleep, your shoulder is so comfortable. You don't have to go, they can probably resolve the problem." As she finished speaking, she grabbed hold of Ah Dai's arm, and closed her eyes once more.

Ah Dai had no choice but to comply, and could only strain his ears to listen to what was happening outside. There seemed to many people outside, and a stranger's voice suddenly sounded, "Who are you people, what are you doing here in the territory of our Puyan Tribe?"

“Greetings fellow warriors, we are members of the Moon Scar Mercenary Group, and we are on our way to the Heaven’s Origin Tribe. We are just passing by the territory of your esteemed tribe.” Yue Hen responded calmly.

The stranger’s voice sounded once more, but this time in a more aggressive tone, “I don’t care whether you are mercenaries or not, if you wish to go to the Heaven’s Origin Tribe, take a different path, and go around, you are not allowed to pass through our territory.”

Ah Dai was shocked, the people of the Puyan Tribe were a little too unreasonable, not even allowing them to pass through their territory.

Yue Hen did not get angry, but continued with his calm voice, “Elder brothers, please accommodate us a little, if we are to change our routes now, it will at least take ten more days of travelling. We are all people of the Commonwealth, just be a little understanding, and let us pass for the sake of convenience, we promise not to stay too long within your esteemed tribe, is that okay?”

“Hmpf, I’ve seen too many people like you. Don’t pretend to be close to me, I’m not your elder brother, quickly leave this place now. If not, we will have to use force.”

“You are really too unreasonable! Why should we listen to you, we insist on passing, let’s see what you can do.” Yue Ji retorted in anger.

Clanging sounds rang out, it seemed that the opponents had drawn their weapons. Ah Dai quickly shook Xuan Yue awake, “Miss, I think they’re about to fight, you can continue to rest while I’ll go out to take a look.”

Xuan Yue let out a grunt in discontent, but she lied down on the bench in the carriage to continue her sweet dreams.

Ah Dai floated down from the horse carriage, and hid in a corner to observe the situation. It was a big path lined with trees, the ground was very even, while towering trees stood by the roadside with their dense canopy, allowing only the tiniest bits of sunlight to pass through. Before the carriage, the Yue siblings, Miao Fei and Wan Li were standing in a row. Opposite of them, were a group with twenty over young light cavalrymen. They had just drawn their sabers that were hanging from their waists, and were currently glaring menacingly at the four people before them.

Yue Hen said in a loud voice, “Fellow warriors, we are genuine mercenaries, aren’t there any mercenaries in your Puyan Tribe? We just wish to pass through yet you treat us in such a way, our Red Hurricane Tribe isn’t so easily bullied either.”

The warrior at the front let out a cold hmpf, “Red Hurricane Tribe? Apart from some measly mercenaries, what else does your Red Hurricane Tribe have? Let me take a look at your strength, if any of you can defeat the saber with my hand, I’ll let you all pass.”

His words had thoroughly infuriated Yue Hen, as he replied coldly as well, “Okay, then let me see what’s so great about the Puyan Tribe! Little sister, y’all step back.” As he spoke, he drew his long sword, gazing at the warrior on the horse.

The Puyan warrior jumped of his horse, and Ah Dai was shocked to discover, that the warrior was even taller than him by half a head. Once he got off his horse, he immediately exuded a domineering

aura. He stepped towards Yue Hen, with his large saber that was almost four feet long resting against his shoulder. With each step that he took, his aura grew stronger, and was firmly locked onto Yue Hen's body.

Yue Hen kept his sword close to him, while revealing a grim expression. He did not think he would actually meet such a strong expert in such a place.

"Yan Shi (english translation is Rock) of the Puyan Tribe. Engarde!" With his loud shout, a yellow colored dou qi instantly burst forth from Yan Shi's body. His hands were clutching the saber as he charged towards Yue Hen with a terrifying momentum.

[TN: So what Yan Shi said were some formal greetings before a spar, idk how to translate that into english, but it's a bit like fencing, where opponents will greet each other and stuff.]

Ah Dai got a shock, the move that Yan Shi used, was extremely similar to his cleaving move from the TianGang Sword Techniques.

Yue Hen did not shrink back in the face of his opponent's strike, and with his silver sword slanted in his hand, he aimed it towards Yan Shi's saber. With a slight cling, Yue Hen's silver sword accurately landed 5 inches away from the tip of the saber. The silver light flashed across, forcefully directing the opponent's saber away. However, due to the force behind Yan Shi's strike, Yue Hen was still sent stumbling back two steps.

Yan Shi did not retreat, and continuously sent out 3 strikes, cleaving

towards Yue Hen rapidly. His dou qi surged out, and even Ah Dai, who was standing beside the horse carriage, could clearly feel the huge fluctuations. Yue Hen was significantly weaker as his body shook, he executed his Moon Shadow Sword Technique, and starting circling around his opponent. For a short while, the two silhouettes, one yellow and the other silver, constantly struck against each other, causing the wind to be in a flurry. In terms of agility, Yue Hen had the upper hand, however, he lost against Yan Shi in terms of dou qi. Under the pressure of Yan Shi's domineering aura, he found it very hard to hold on, every time the silver sword clashed with the saber, his body would tremble from the impact.

With a loud clang, Yue Hen staggered backwards, a piece of his silver armor near his shoulder had been cleaved apart, and he was clearly at a disadvantage.

Wielding his saber, Yan Shi said with disdain, "I've already told you that you can't get past me, yet you didn't believe me. Quickly leave our Puyan Tribe's territory, if not, don't blame me for not holding back."

Yue Hen knew that he was the strongest of his mercenary group, since even he could not defeat the opponent, there was no other solution.

Miao Fei and Wan Li both drew their weapons, protecting Yue Hen on both sides. Yue Ji's silver arrow was already prepared on her bow, while the warriors on the horses jumped down from their horses. From their experienced actions, it seemed that they were not weak either, and in terms of forces, Yue Hen's group was still at a disadvantage.

“Annoying, waking me up from my sleep! Ah Dai, what are you standing there for? Let’s go and take a look, who is actually so impudent.” It turned out that it was Xuan Yue who had squirmed out of the horse carriage. It was so noisy outside, causing her to be unable to sleep. She had long been observing the situation through the gap in the carriage, but she only chose to step out now that Yue Hen was at a disadvantage.

Ah Dai helped Xuan Yue down the carriage as she rubbed her sleepy eyes and shouted, “Yue Hen, what’s wrong, who is so ignorant to try and block our path!”

Hearing Xuan Yue’s voice, the warriors instantly turned their gazes over. There was a slight shock in Yan Shi’s eyes, “A magician?”

Ah Dai and Xuan Yue walked over to Yue Hen’s side, while Xuan Yue looked towards Yan Shi and said in a sickly sweet voice, “What are you so tall for? Do you need me to raise my head and look at you?”

Yan Shi lowered his head, just happening to see Xuan Yue’s exquisite features. Even with his strong will, he could not but be dazed for a moment, and muttered, “Why does me being tall concern you.”

Xuan Yue hmpf-ed, “I’ve heard all your previous words, and saw how you tried to stop us. So, if we can defeat you, you will let us pass right, Ah Dai, go and teach him a leeson.”

Stunned, Ah Dai stammered, “Me?” Looking at Yan Shi’s performance earlier, he had no confidence of winning at all.

“Of course it’s you, if not me? Quickly, defeat them then we can be on our way.”

Ah Dai grunted a reply as he stepped forward, in front of Yan Shi.

Yan Shi was not really confident either, he had never fought against a magician before, he had only heard that magicians were very powerful, thus, he did not know if he could defeat one. With great caution, he agreed, “Come at me then.”

Behind Ah Dai, Xuan Yue was instructing, “Use the skill that day when you cleaved the wall, let him have a good look.”

Although Ah Dai was confused to why Xuan Yue no longer wanted him to conceal his martial arts, he still obediently drew the TianGang Sword on his back. Observing the sight before him, Yue Hen did not step out to stop him, he had long developed suspicions of Ah Dai’s heavy sword, and this was the perfect opportunity for him to have a look.

Looking at Ah Dai draw his TianGang Sword, Yan Shi revealed a surprised expression, there was slight hesitation in his eyes, but he still lifted up his saber.

Suddenly, Ah Dai felt warmth flow through his body, and a burst of energy filled him, causing his spirits to be instantly lifted. A faint layer of white light enveloped his body, but it was not his boundless dou qi, since he had not circulated his qi yet. He turned to glance at Xuan Yue, only to see her shoot him a wry smile, while twirling the wand in her hand. Obviously, the white light was her doing, and it

was probably a support magic.

Solemnly, Yan Shi said, “Please.” He was still wielding the saber with both hands, and cleaved towards Ah Dai.

Ah Dai could not be bothered about that move, although he did not have a very vast battle experience, he could not be anymore familiar with that cleave. With a loud shout, he raised his TianGang Sword with both hands, and cleaved towards his opponent as well. The white colored glow of the dou qi instantly expanded, and surged forth as well. Amidst the loud clashes, Yan Shi’s saber and the TianGang Sword struck against each other, and both of their dou qi instantly caused small cyclones to form from the dust on the ground.

Ah Dai felt that his dou qi seemed to be much stronger than before, this was not purely because his Boundless Life Art had reached the Fifth Stage, but a large of it was rather, due to the white light that first appeared.

Yan Shi felt a strong force surging from his opponent’s sword, and could not help but take a step back. As someone who was always known for his strength, he had never been forced to step back by his opponents, but now, he had actually lost out to a magician! With a loud howl of rage, he swung his saber once more, this time, he had used all of his strength.

Back at Sweetrock Town, Ah Dai had faced the waves every day, and he had practiced the cleaving move for countless times. He circulated his boundless true qi into his arm, and cleaved out once more. Clang, clang, clang, the sounds continuously rang out. Ah Dai and Yan Shi both seemed to remain in their positions as they cleaved

towards each other, it was a pure battle of strength.

After more than ten clashes, Ah Dai gradually gained the upper hand. After all, his boundless true qi provided him with an endless supply of force. In terms of weaponry, Ah Dai was also at an advantage, his TianGang Sword was much heavier than his opponent's saber. Finally, at the 18th clash, Yan Shi's saber was cleaved apart by Ah Dai, his TianGang Sword was covered with a threatening aura from his dou qi as it cleaved towards Yan Shi. Ah Dai got a fright, he did not want to kill anyone, and after the numerous clashes, he developed respect for Yan Shi. He knew that, if not for Xuan Yue's magic, he might not have been able to gain the upper hand in terms of strength, and not to mention, Yan Shi had already fought against Yue Hen previously, expending some of his energy. Forcefully, he twisted his wrist and his right leg stepped out to to the right, and barely managed to swing the TianGang Sword sideways. With a loud bang, it sank into the ground. Suddenly changing his attack when he had already swung out, put a huge burden on Ah Dai's body, and his chest felt as if it was hammered by a giant hammer. Feeling something in his throat, he instantly spat out a mouthful of fresh blood.

Yan Shi was long petrified, he had never experienced such a close brush with death, and seeing the TianGang Sword which was buried deep into the ground, he clearly knew the consequences if that had landed on his body. His hand fell limp, and his broken saber dropped onto the floor.

Xuan Yue ran over to Ah Dai's side and asked anxiously, "How are you feeling?"

Coughing a few times, Ah Dai used the TianGang Sword to support himself, “I’m fine.”

Xuan Yue immediately chanted in a low voice, “By the power of the great Heavenly God! Please bestow upon me your benevolent powers of recovery, and heal the injuries in sight. God’s Healing.” Following her incantation, a ball of white light appeared from her magic wand, and with a flash, it entered Ah Dai’s body, a warm feeling instantly surged throughout Ah Dai’s meridians. Since his boundless true qi already contained a slight holy attribute, Xuan Yue’s light attribute magic instantly stimulated the bountiful life force in his body, and his chest felt much better.

Drawing out a long breath, Ah Dai nodded towards Xuan Yue, “Thank you, Miss.”

The Puyan warriors that were behind Yan Shi instantly jumped down from their horses, and formed a protective barrier around Yan Shi. Their sabers were raised, and they had a aggressive expression on their faces, as if wanting to strike out anytime.

Ah Dai raised his head and looked towards Yan Shi. Yan Shi was still in a sluggish state, as if he could not believe that he had lost. “This big brother, I wonder if you will keep your words, and let us pass now.” Ah Dai’s words were very polite, and he had a smile on his face. The strike just now had given him quite a scare, and now that Yan Shi was unharmed, he felt great relief and happiness from his heart.

Yan Shi snapped out of his stupor from Ah Dai’s voice, and there was a look of embarrassment on his face as he told Ah Dai,

“Brother, you really have good skills, thank you for your mercy, I, Yan Shi, admit defeat. Can I ask you, is your weapon the TianGang Sword?”

Ah Dai nodded, “Yes, it’s the TianGang Sword.”

There was a flash of delight in Yan Shi’s eyes as he started walking towards Ah Dai. Wan Li immediately stepped forwards, blocking in front of Ah Dai. Cautiously looking at Yan Shi, he asked, “What do you want?”

Yan Shi spread out his arms, and the previous arrogant and domineering aura was gone. He spoke in a polite tone, “I’ve no bad intentions, I just want to have a few words with this little brother.”

Xuan Yue stuck to Ah Dai and retorted, “What’s there to talk about, Ah Dai had already won, you should let us pass now, our time is tight.”

Yan Shi glanced at Xuan Yue, then looked towards Ah Dai, saying, “Brother, I am called Yan Shi, when I was young, I was once given some pointers by the eldest disciple of the TianGang Sword Saint, Teacher Xi Wen, for a few days. I guess, we can be considered to be from the same school. I really don’t have any bad intentions, since you are related to the TianGang School, I guess you’re not an evil person either, you can pass through our territory.”

Ah Dai was stunned for a few moments, before replying, “So it turns out that big brother Yan Shi is from the TianGang Sword School! My uncle is too, I’m called Ah Dai, and my TianGang Sword was imparted to me by my uncle. Big brother Yan Shi, we’ll get going first then.”

Yan Shi chuckled, “Outsiders will find it hard to travel through our Puyan Tribe’s territory, how about this, I’ll escort y’all through some distance.”

The sudden change in Yan Shi’s attitude caused Yue Hen and Yue Ji to feel uneasy, and Yue Ji let out a cold hmpf, “Who knows what you are scheming, entering your territory and getting slaughtered?”

Yan Shi raged, “I swear on my reputation as the son of the Puyan Tribe leader, I, Yan Shi, will definitely stay true to my words.”

Apart from Ah Dai and Xuan Yue, the other four members were instantly shocked. They had never imagined that, the burly man in front of them was actually the son of the leader of the Puyan Tribe, one of the six great tribes in the Commonwealth.

Xuan Yue played with the magic wand in her hand, and said nonchalantly, “Who cares whose son you are, if you want to travel together, then quickly do it. Big brother Yue Hen, let’s get into the carriage.” As she finished speaking, she turned and walked towards the carriage.

“Brother Ah Dai,” Yan Shi called out to Ah Dai, who was just about to follow Xuan Yue, “Let’s ride a horse on our way, I’ve some stuff to ask you.”

Ah Dai turned to look at Xuan Yue. She shot a glance at Yan Shi, “Go then, but if your injuries worsen, I won’t care anymore. Hmpf.”

Yan Shi chuckled, and ordered one of his men to give his horse to Ah Dai. With a loud shout, “Brothers, let’s go”, they started off.

This was Ah Dai’s first time riding a horse, and he could help but be

nervous. When he had first gotten on the horse, the big horse could not help but wobble a little, after all, with over 50kg of body weight, as well as the weight of the TianGang Sword, it was indeed a little heavy. Ah Dai gripped the reins and his legs held on tight to the horse, while his face was full of embarrassment. This was because, his horse remained at its original spot, not moving forwards.

Seeing Ah Dai's posture, Yan Shi knew that Ah Dai did not know how to ride a horse, and he laughed, "What's wrong? Brother Ah Dai, is this your first time riding a horse?"

Red-faced, Ah Dai nodded.

Yan Shi let out a smile, "It's okay, actually riding a horse is simple, let me teach you some tricks. Don't be so nervous and relax a little, angle your body forwards, and gently tap its side, yes, yes, that's right. Don't hold the reins too tight, loosen it a little or else the horse will be uncomfortable. See, aren't you doing great? When turning, angle your body in the same direction, and lightly pull the rein with the corresponding hand, and the horse will follow your instructions. When you want it to stop, just lean back, and use both hands to pull the rein."

Ah Dai followed Yan Shi's methods, and the horse really started to move. As it slowly increased speed, Ah Dai found the experience wonderful.

At this moment, Yue Hen and the others had got back into the carriage, and once inside, Miao Fei could not wait and asked Xuan Yue, "Miss Xuan Yue, why didn't you tell us that Ah Dai knew martial arts!"

Xuan Yue gave him a glare, “Must I tell you everything? And who said Ah Dai knows martial arts, it’s just that he has quite some strength.”

The others had all practiced years of martial arts, and the force and skill that Ah Dai displayed, was definitely not simply just because he had more strength, especially that white colored dou qi of his, was more of a symbol of a martial arts expert. Yue Hen pulled aside Yue Ji, who was just about to ask more questions, and lightly shook his head at her. Miao Fei got uninterested, and did not ask further, while Xuan Yue leaned against one of the seats at the side and fell asleep once more. After a while, the carriage returned to silence, and there were only the sound of rumbling wheels and the crisp sound of the horse’s hooves.

In just a short while, Ah Dai had already got used to some of the simpler horse riding techniques, and with Yan Shi’s help, he was able to keep up.

Yan Shi brought Ah Dai to the very front, and instructed his men to not follow too closely. Turning to Ah Dai, he said, “Brother Ah Dai, I really must thank your for your mercy just now, if not, ay… …”

Ah Dai scratched his head, “Big brother Yan Shi, don’t say it like this, there are no hatred between us anyway, why would I hurt you, we really just wish to pass through your esteemed tribe’s territory.”

Yan Shi nodded, “It was all my fault for being too rash. However, our Puyan Tribe has some enmity with some other tribes on the continent, hence the previous situation. However since you’re from the TianGang Sword School, there are naturally no problems, the

TianGang Sword School stands on the side of justice! Oh, right, brother, this is for you." As he spoke, Yan Shi took out a medicinal pill around the size of a dragon's eye and handed it to Ah Dai.

Ah Dai stretched out his hand to receive it and asked, "Big brother Yan Shi, what is this?"

Yan Shi laughed, "Brother, quickly eat it, this is our Puyan Tribe's secret holy recovery pill, the Eliminate Injuries Pill (灭伤丹). It is extremely effective. Just now, in order to not harm me, you suddenly directed your attack away, and spat out blood, I'm sure your internal injuries aren't light. Quickly eat it, and you don't need to worry too much, in less than half a day's time, you'll be alright."

Ah Dai brought the Eliminate Injuries Pill close to his nose and took a whiff. Thinking for a while, he replied, "Big brother Yan Shi, this pill is very precious! It contains Star Grass, Tendon Fruit and Blue Sky Flower, these are all very precious medicinal herbs, are you really going to give it to me?" After staying together with Gliss for a year, Ah Dai was long able to recognize different medicinal herbs by their smell.

Yan Shi was stunned, "Brother, I didn't know you even know medicinal herbs! Only the elders of the tribe know the accurate recipe of the Eliminate Injuries Pill, however, the herbs that you just mentioned, seem to be correct. Since you've gotten injured because of me, just eat it, it will have great effects for your injuries."

Ah Dai nodded, "Thank you big brother Yan Shi." As he finished speaking, he peeled off the layer of wax surrounding the pill and ate it.

Yan Shi chuckled, “Bother, you don’t have to be so polite. To be honest, I am really in awe of your skills, ever since I was young, most of the people around my age were unable to defeat me. Today, you are the first one, I was really too arrogant in the past, it really is ‘there will always be people better than you’! Recalling that final strike of yours, I’m still afraid even now.”

After eating the Eliminate Injuries Pill, warmth flowed towards Ah Dai’s dantian, and spread all across his body. The warm feeling was indescribably comfortable, and all of the pain in his chest totally disappeared. Under the stimulation from the medicinal effects, the boundless true qi in his body grew denser, and Ah Dai replied after some slight cultivation, “The Eliminate Injuries Pill is indeed very effective, most of my injuries have healed. Big brother Yan Shi, actually, my strength can’t be compared to yours, it’s only that my TianGang Sword was heavier than your saber. Furthermore, I guess that Miss Xuan Yue had cast some support magic on me, so this was how I was able to win.”

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 023: Panic within the Clan

Translator: Kuroneko

Editor: Samskor

Edit: fixed some things to make it flow better -darklord5555

Have a great weekend you guys!

Chapter 23: Panic within the clan

Stunned, Yan Shi said: “Brother, you are really honest. The Miss Xuan Yue that you mentioned, should be that little girl in magician robes right. You are really fortunate! To find such a beautiful girlfriend.”

Ah Dai laughed bitterly, “She’s not my girlfriend, I’m merely her attendant.”

Yan Shi was shocked, “How can this be? Brother, with your martial arts, how could you become someone’s attendant?”

Ah Dai recalled all the events that happened after he met Xuan Yue, shook his head helplessly and changed the topic: “Big brother Yan Shi, why is your Puyan Tribe hostile to outsiders?”

A look of hatred flashed across Yan Shi’s eyes, and after a long time, he sighed: “Because, our Puyan Tribe had suffered too much damage. I can’t tell you now because it’s considered to be one of our

tribe's greatest secrets. If there's a chance in the future, you will know. Let's hasten our speed. one of our small clans is not too far ahead. It is also my home and your aunt's cooking is really good. Today, let big brother drink merrily with you." With a whistle, Yan Shi hurried his battle horse, and sped forth.

Ah Dai's riding skills were not that good, but the battle horse that he was riding seemed to very prideful, as it immediately chased after Yan Shi as well. Amidst the panic, Ah Dai could only lay low and try to maintain his balance.

At the same time that Ah Dai and Yan Shi were heading towards a clan within the Puyan Tribe, Feng Ping had arrived at the TianGang Mountain. In the past few days, he had hastened his pace, and passed through the borders of the Yajin Tribe and the Yalian Tribe, finally arriving back at his school after much effort. Just as he had ascended the mountain, he came across a white-robed elder who seemed to be around 60 years old.

"Little Ping, why have you returned? I heard from your Master that you've become a vice-leader of some mercenary group?"

Feng Ping looked at the white-robed elder, and quickly bowed in respect, "Greetings, uncle-master Lu Wen. Is senior Grandmaster here? I've urgent matters to report."

Lu Wen was the fourth disciple of the TianGang Sword Saint, and was already 69 years old this year. He was very loyal, honest, polite, and was deeply respected by all the different generations of disciples in the school. After hearing Feng Ping's words, he revealed a surprised expression and asked, "What exactly happened that you

must alarm Master, he is currently in closed door training."

Feng Ping wiped away the sweat on his head, and briefly recounted his encounter with Ah Dai. Listening to his recount, Lu Wen furrowed his brows, "Which apprentice-nephew has such remarkable abilities to actually train his disciple who is not yet 20, to such standards? Ping' Er, I've never heard that you had such an outstanding senior or junior brother! Come, let's quickly go up the mountain, I need to discuss this matter with your other uncle-masters first."

Feng Ping followed Lu Wen to the summit of the TianGang Mountain, the summit was pretty flat and the TianGang Sword School had already many decades of history after being established on this mountain. The TianGang Sword School had an extremely prestigious position within the Prosperous Empire, and the current commander-in-chief of the Prosperous Empire's army was the TianGang Sword Saint's second disciple, Feng Wen. It was around forty years ago, when the monarch of the Prosperous Empire had declared the TianGang Sword School to be the nation's representative. The requirements of entering the school were extremely strict, and one could only enter after many rounds of careful selection, this was because talent was not what the school had placed most emphasis on, but rather the characters of their disciples. After 70 years, the various generation disciples only amounted to over a hundred people, however their achievements had attracted attention from all over the continent. Even though their martial strength may not be incredibly powerful, after so many decades of establishment, no matter which generation the disciples

were from, all of them were absolute representatives of justice.

Once they returned to the school, Lu Wen immediately ordered the disciples to invite his senior and junior brothers who were currently on the mountain over, this included Feng Ping's master, the fifth disciple of the 2nd generation disciples, Shi Wen. In the face of all his uncle-masters, Feng Ping once more recounted his encounter with Ah Dai. Listening to his recount, the 2nd generation disciples could not help but look among one another, even after much pondering, they could not figure out who Ah Dai's master was.

"The information of all of the 3rd generation disciples is pretty accurate, and there were no news of any of them dying! Ping' Er, are you sure that child is really using the TianGang Sword Techniques?" Lu Wen asked.

Feng Ping nodded, "Fourth uncle-master, there is really no doubt, even though the TianGang Sword Techniques can be imitated, there is no way to fake the boundless dou qi that Ah Dai used. Although he has not reached the Fifth Stage of the Boundless Life Art, he is definitely not too far from that stage. It's all my fault, I didn't manage to stop him there. When I bring him back, everything would be clear.

Xi Wen, who was sitting at head seat, suddenly opened his eyes, and his gaze immediately landed on Feng Ping. Xi Wen was the first and eldest disciple of the TianGang Sword Saint. Among his various junior brothers, he had the highest level of martial arts, reaching the Eighth Stage of the Boundless Life Art. Although he was already over 80 years old, just from his appearance, he seemed slightly younger than Lu Wen.

“Eldest senior brother, do you know whose disciple he is? Could it be a disciple of second senior brother’s disciple?” Lu Wen asked.

Xi Wen shook his head, “It’s not very probable, although second junior brother’s martial arts is not weaker than mine, he spends most of his time in the army and has no time to instruct his disciples. His two disciples are only at the Fifth Stage of the Boundless Life Art and they can’t possibly nurture such an outstanding disciple. Furthermore, they are always by second brother’s side When second brother returned, he had brought them along to pay their respects to Master.” Suddenly, Xi Wen emitted a glow from his eyes as he turned to Feng Ping, “Ping’ Er, do you still remember if there are any special aspects about the TianGang Sword that the child used?”

Feng Ping thought for a while, before replying, “From the surface, I didn’t notice any difference between our TianGang Swords but his sword seemed to be a little heavier than mine. Even though his martial strength was not comparable to mine, he was not at a great disadvantage when we sparred.”

Xi Wen nodded, “This might be right, there is a high chance that the child is not a 4th generation disciple but a 3rd generation disciple. Furthermore, the TianGang Sword that he is using should not be the 56 kg TianGang Sword of the 3rd generation disciples, but rather 72 kg one that us 2nd generation disciples are using: the TianGang Heavy Sword that incorporates darksteel.”

Lu Wen got a shock, and stammered, “Eldest senior brother, you are saying… …”

Xi Wen nodded and sighed, “Only him, only he has the ability to

nurture such an outstanding disciple! It's been 30 years and we finally have news of him. Quickly, fellow brothers, let's go and request Master to come out of his closed door training. Now that there are news of him, master will surely be pleased." As he spoke, he revealed a sorrowful expression.

As Feng Ping listened to their conversation, he only got more confused and did not know who eldest uncle-master was talking about. However, all of people seated before him were his elders and he did not dare to ask too much. He simply continued waiting there.

Xi Wen and the other 2nd generation disciples came to a grotto behind the back mountains, this cave that seemed ordinary. it was precisely where the famed TianGang Sword Saint was undergoing his closed door training. The mountain winds blew at the white clouds in the sky, causing them to continuously strike the mountain summit where they were at. however they were all experts of the continent, after using a faint layer of white light from their boundless dou qi, they prevented the damp mist from touching them.

At the entrance of the cave, the seven of them formed a line with Xi Wen at the front and shouted respectfully together "We humbly request Master to exit from closed door training." Their voices were not loud but with their boundless dou qi wrapping around the sound. Their voices soon reached deep within the cave.

In just a while, a clear voice sounded out from within the cave "What has happened to make you come and disturb my training?"

Xi Wen bowed in the direction of the cave "Greetings Master, we may have received news of youngest brother. Fifth brother's disciple

Feng Ping had discovered a child at the Red Hurricane Tribe. He is not yet 20 but his Boundless Life Art is already at the Fourth Stage. According to that child, his master has already passed away. I think only youngest brother would have been capable of nurturing such an outstanding disciple."

There was silence within the cave and the seven of them could only wait quietly for the TianGang Sword Saint's instructions. In the hearts of these disciples, the TianGang Sword Saint was akin to a legend.

After a long while, the clear voice sounded once more but this time it carried a trace of melancholy, "Old nine has already left for so many years but who knew that he would have died outside… Hais——, humans are fortune's fool! Pass on my order, all the disciples of the TianGang Sword School must give their all to search and find out that disciple's whereabouts, then bring him to see me. Xi Wen, I have aged, from now on I won't ask about the matters within the school. From this day forth, you will be the 2nd generation Head of the school."

Xi Wen got a big shock, and immediately knelt down on the floor, saying in a trembling voice, "Ma-master, your disciple is fearful, please retract your order."

"I'm already very old and I will finish this life very soon, I should have long passed this title on to you. This is my order, you mustn't disobey."

After hearing that the Sword Saint was about to pass away, Lu Wen and the other disciples knelt down as well, exclaiming in a loud

voice, “Master——”

The TianGang Sword Saint’s voice became gentler as he continued, “I’ve already lived for 101 years. Of the four sword saints, I am the oldest. There is a limit to one’s longevity. In the future, the TianGang Sword School will be in your hands. The advent of the blood sun indicates that the thousand-year great tribulation is about to arrive. It is not something the Holy Church can defend against by themselves. The dark forces on the continent have already started to move. You must take responsibility for the lives of the common people. When the thousandth year of the holy calendar arrives, there will definitely be evil beings surfacing in the mortal realm, ah——, I’m afraid I won’t able to persist till that day. All of you must lend your support to the Holy Church and rid the world of evil, understand?”

“Yes, we will comply by Master’s orders.”

“En, Xi Wen, you must quickly find the whereabouts of that child. The incidents regarding old nine are what I regret most in this life. I was really too selfish, I really hope that I can accomplish this wish of mine before I die.”

……

After around two hours of hurried journeying, Ah Dai who had never ridden a horse before felt as though his whole body was about to split apart; Especially his waist and hip: they were so sore that he could no longer feel them.

Yan Shi lightly pulled the reins and slowed down their speed. Looking at Ah Dai beside him, he asked, “Brother, how was the feeling of riding a horse?”

Ah Dai smiled bitterly, “Big brother Yan Shi, my bones feel like they’re going to shatter. Have we arrived yet?”

Yan Shi let out a hearty laugh, “It’s always like this the first time you ride a horse. After going through this forest, we will arrive soon. Endure for a while more.”

Stretching his limbs, Ah Dai asked, “Big brother Yan Shi, the environment in your Puyan Tribe is so good. There are so many forests; is there no cities?

Yan Shi nodded “The nature has provided so much for our Puyan tribesmen, so how can we destroy it. Cities? What are the uses of cities? Isn’t it still built on the land from cleared forests. The nature has its own rules. If we treat it badly, one day it will return the favor Although humans have power, it is impossible to compete against nature!”

Ah Dai scratched his head and said, “Big brother Yan Shi, although I don’t really understand your words, I think what you said is correct., Compared to the city, I prefer to be within the forest where there’s much cleaner air.” Once he mentioned the forest, he naturally recalled the illusionary forest as well as the alchemist Gliss who he had not seen in 5 years. Uncontrollably, he revealed a faint expression of sorrow.

“My clan is just right ahead, it is my own: our Puyan Tribe is split into tens of clans and my father is the leader of the largest clan, thus he became the leader of the whole Puyan Tribe. Our Puyan tribesmen are very united, unlike other places, where people always try to scheme against others.”

After finally passing through the forest, the sight before him caused Ah Dai to gasp in shock. It was just like a giant village, there were countless houses built from stones everywhere. It seemed to house almost thousands of families. The center of the village was bustling with life and smoke was rising. it seemed that many families were currently preparing lunch.

[TN: I just used village for the place where they lived in, since clan is used to describe a group of people, but not where they live. In Chinese, the same word 部落 is used for both.]

Holding the reins, Yan Shi jumped off from his horse, and looked at Ah Dai, while beaming with pride, “How’s this, our clan is pretty good right? At here, apart from not having city walls, we are pretty much like a city, and we have everything here. Have a good rest here today, it’s not too late to continue your journey tomorrow morning.”

Ah Dai also got off his horse. Once his feet landed on the ground, he felt much more comfortable, with only a little weak in his knees. He adjusted his breathing and quickly stretched his sore limbs. At this moment, Yue Hen and the others had also got off the horse carriage,and Xuan Yue quickly ran over to Ah Dai’s side. Looking at the village before them, she let out a cry of astonishment, “Woah, such a big village!”

Yue Hen coughed two times, “This is not a village, this should be the Puyan Tribe’s clan, kind of similar to a normal city, I’ve seen even bigger clans than this.”

[TN: So this part is confusing, since I have no idea what type of houses clans lived in, but in Chinese, it didn’t matter (as mentioned

earlier), so bear with this confusing part & this amateur translator T~T]

Xuan Yue gave him a glare, “I’d like to call it a village, so what?” As she spoke, she tugged on Ah Dai’s clothes, and furrowed her brows, “Look, your clothes have gotten so messy, let me help you tidy them a little.” As Ah Dai was riding a horse, his clothes were long full of wrinkles. Looking down, he saw that Xuan Yue was tugging at his magician robes, continuously dusting it off. A strange shock-like feeling instantly spread through Ah Dai’s body, and he stood there dumbly staring, speechless.

Yan Shi let out a laugh, “Brother, I thought you said she isn’t your girlfriend, look at how much she cares about you!”

Xuan Yue’s blue braids swayed as her face became red, and she muttered, “What nonsense are you saying, who is his girlfriend! It’s just that we came together. If his clothes are so messy, I’ll be embarrassed too!”

Yan Shi gave Ah Dai a weird look, before continuing, “Let’s go into our village first, you’ve journeyed for a whole afternoon and must be tired now. Go eat some food and rest.”

Together with Yan Shi’s group of warriors, all of them entered the village. Puyan tribesmen were mostly yellow-skinned, their skin was just a little darker than Ah Dai’s and their trademark was brown hair. When the people saw Yan Shi, they all had looks of respect on their faces.

“Uncle Yan Shi, you’ve come back. Did you bring any yummy food for Dong Dong?” A 4 or 5 year old boy ran over to Yan Shi, while curiously gazing at Ah Dai’s group.

Yan Shi laughed, while carrying the little boy in his arms, “Dong Dong, this time uncle was too rushed and didn’t have time to bring some food for you. Uncle promises you that I’ll bring some back next time.”

“Uncle, you must keep your word!” Dong Dong pouted.

Yan Shi tenderly patted his head, “Since when has Uncle not kept his word, where’s your mother?”

A woman with delicate features ran over and greeted Yan Shi, “Young leader, you’ve returned. This Dong Dong, once he saw you, he immediately ran out. Dong Dong, quickly come down.” Dong Dong looked at his mother, but continued to hug Yan Shi’s neck, refusing to move.

The woman walked over to Yan Shi’s side and sighed, “Young leader, Dong Dong has always treated you like a father figure. His father has passed early, I hope you can teach him some stuff if there’s a chance next time.”

Dong Dong raised his head and looked at Yan Shi, “Yeah Uncle Yan Shi, I want to become a brave warrior like you!”

There was a sorrowful look in Yan Shi’s eyes as he gently caressed Dong Dong’s hair. “Dolma, I will. Dong Dong, be obedient and get down first. Uncle has guests today, so I can’t accompany you. After a

few days, Uncle will teach you martial arts, okay?" Under Yan Shi's coaxing, Dong Dong finally returned to his mother. The woman took a glance at Ah Dai's group, before turning and leaving.

Looking at their silhouettes, Yan Shi revealed a trace of loneliness in his eyes. Curious, Xuan Yue asked, "Your relationship seems to be very complicated! Big guy, who are they to you?"

Yan Shi shook his head, and brought the people towards the center of the village while explaining, "Dolma is the wife of a good brother of mine. When Dong Dong was 2 years old, his father was killed on duty, speaking of this, it's already been 3 years since then. I really pity them, a widow and a fatherless child, when I'm free, I will try take care of them. In our clan, there are many cases like Dolma, it's all because… …" He abruptly stopped, and did not continue anymore after giving a wary look at Xuan Yue.

Yue Hen and Yue Ji looked at each other, while Xuan Yue seemed to be deep in her thoughts. Turning to Yan Shi, Ah Dai tried to console "Big brother Yan Shi, don't be upset, things have already happened. Although their circumstances are very miserable, at least Dong Dong still has a mother. Compared to me, it's still much better." Recalling his childhood of 'catching fish' back in Ninuo City, Ah Dai felt a little sentimental.

Xuan Yue had never heard Ah Dai talk about his personal life, so she curiously asked, "Ah Dai, I've never asked you before, what do your parents do? And where is your home?"

Ah Dai glanced at her and flatly replied, "I've no parents. And no home." Thinking of Owen, there was pain in his heart. He was filled

with emotions and longing for Owen and Gliss.

Yan Shi patted Ah Dai's shoulder "Brother, so you are an orphan too! It's okay, come to my house. Let's go in and let your aunt cook up some good food, you must know that her cooking is really good!" This is already the second time that Yan Shi had boasted to Ah Dai about his wife. From his face of happiness and pride, it was obvious that he had deep feelings for his wife.

Hearing Yan Shi's words, only now did Ah Dai realize that they had arrived before a huge stone house. The stone house was at the center of the whole village, and occupied at least a few hundred square meters. The surrounding was a ring of empty land and the warriors that had followed Yan Shi were already gone, perhaps they had returned home. The ones left were only Ah Dai, Xuan Yue and the other four.

Yan Shi was full of excitement as he shouted loudly towards the closed door "Little Yun, Little Yun, we have guests, quickly open the door. Open the door!"

The door seemed to be locked from inside. After Yan Shi shouted for a long while, there was still no reaction. He seemed to be in a daze as he muttered "What is Little Yun doing? She usually never locks the door!" He grabbed hold of a villager who passed by and asked "Uncle Kru, have you seen Little Yun today? why is my door locked, did she go out?"

The old man who was stopped by Yan Shi shook his head and replied, "After you left in the morning, I've never seen Little Yun. She should still be at home. Yeah! Why is your door locked today,

Little Yun rarely leaves the house. Try knocking some more, perhaps she is sleeping?"

Yan Shi shook his head, "No, I've told her that I'll return for lunch, Little Yun will surely wait for me." There was an anxious expression on his face as he walked over to the door. Hesitating for a moment, he stretched out his large hands and pressed against the door. A yellow glow emanated from his body and with a 'crack' sound, the latch on the door broke apart.

Yan Shi pushed open the door and stepped into the room, with Ah Dai beside him. Once they entered, they could smell a strong tangy smell of blood. Yan Shi's expression changed drastically as he quickly ran towards one of the rooms.

"NO——" Yan Shi's mournful howl came from within the room and the whole stone house was sent trembling. Ah Dai got a fright and immediately rushed in together with Yue Hen, but what laid before them caused both of them to be stunned. There was a large bed in the bedroom, and on the bed, lay a naked woman. Her brown colored long hair was in tangles and her original beautiful face was full of hatred and resentment. her large gray, lifeless eyes were still open, staring at the ceiling. Her hands were tightly clenched into fists and her blood had stained the white sheets red, there was still some blood out from her private parts. She was clearly raped then killed. Her fair skin was slowly turning green, seeming that she had died for quite some time.

Yan Shi hugged the girl within his embrace and he had become lifeless. Tears continuously flowed from the eyes of this strong warrior, and his facial muscles constantly spasmed.

Xuan Yue and Yue Ji had followed as well, and looking at the sight before them, they could not help but let out screams. Xuan Yue jumped into Ah Dai's arms and her voice trembled as she spoke, "This, this… What has happened, it's so frightening!"

Yan Shi did not reply. He carried the naked corpse of the girl and stood up, ripping off his own cloak to wrap her up and slowly stepped outside the door. Everyone automatically cleared the path for him, and looked as he walked outside.

As he finally stepped out the door, he suddenly roared towards the sky, "AHH——" The voice rapidly became louder, piercing straight through the clouds. Along with his thunderous cries, Yan Shi's body gradually started changing. His original muscled body became even bulkier, splitting his clothes apart, and his brown colored eye became blood red, as a dangerous aura burst out from him.

Yue Hen cried out, "Ah! He… he has turned berserk! He's actually a berserker!"

Yan Shi's howls had shook the entire village and the nearby villagers immediately ran over. In just a short while, Yan Shi's house was fully surrounded.

"Young leader, what's wrong? What happened?"

"Ah! What happened to sister Yun' Er? Why is there blood, this,… what happened?"

"Young leader, you… …"

A dark and cold voice came out from Yan Shi's mouth, deeply intimidating the people's hearts, "Tell me, who, who killed my Yun' Er. Who was it, tell me, WHO——?"

All of the Puyan tribesmen were dumbfounded, Yan Shi's wife was famous for being a kind-hearted beauty in the clan and now that she had died so suddenly. Even they were unable to accept such a fact. Yan Shi constantly let out howls of agony, but he just simply could not express the pain he felt inside.

A middle-aged man, whose body was no less fit than Yan Shi's ran over, and upon seeing the corpse in Yan Shi's hands, he was shocked. "Brother Yan Shi, how did sister-in-law become like this?"

The dangerous aura from Yan Shi continued to increase and he was still repeating that phrase, "Who, who killed my Yun' Er!"

Ah Dai walked to Yan Shi's side, trying to persuade him, "Big brother Yan Shi, please calm down, let's try to get to the bottom of this matter."

Yan Shi swung his arm, and a huge force immediately pushed Ah Dai a few metres away, his eyes seemed to almost be spitting fire as he raged "Calm down, how can I calm down, my beloved has died, how can I calm down!"

Ah Dai circulated his boundless true qi, and only after completing a few cycles, was he able to dissipate the dou qi that Yan Shi had released. Yan Shi's martial skills were already higher than him, and after entering a berserk mode, his strength had surged, almost

doubling his original power. Such an enormous power was simply not what Ah Dai could handle.

More and more people gathered, thoroughly surrounding Yan Shi's house. A group of young men dressed as warriors squeezed all the way to Yan Shi's side, and upon seeing the sight, were all dumbfounded.

Yan Shi suddenly let out an angry howl. With one hand tightly holding his wife's body, he was glaring at one of the warriors before him and shouting in a crazed manner, "It's you, it was you right, it was you who killed my Little Yun!" Without notice, his other free hand shot out, with a dense layer of yellow colored dou qi surrounding it, and hit against that warrior's chest.

Shocked from the sudden danger, the warrior was barely able to bring his hands forward to his chest to block. Ah Dai got a fright and quickly shouted, "NO!" while sending out a punch to try repel Yan Shi's dou qi covered fist.

Amidst the loud bangs, two streaks of silhouettes were sent flying. The force contained within Yan Shi's fist was indeed too powerful. Even with Ah Dai using all of his power, he was still sent flying from the impact. Under Ah Dai's interference, Yan Shi's fist had still landed against that warrior's hands. The sounds of his bones fracturing rang out clearly, and his body was sent flying as well, spitting out a mouthful of blood in mid-air. If not for Ah Dai intervening in time, he probably would've died under Yan Shi's berserk fist, but even so, he had still sustained heavy injuries.

Xuan Yue cried out, "Ah! Has he gone mad?"

The muscular middle-aged man who had rushed over previously, immediately shouted, “Quick, everyone first help to restrain the young leader, he has gone berserk and does not recognize anyone.” As he spoke, he ran up first.

The man seemed to have some authority within the Puyan Tribe, as some of the surrounding young warriors instantly rushed up as well, leaping towards Yan Shi. While Yan Shi was howling crazily with rage, he was also continuously swinging his arms. The yellow colored dou qi surged out, and there seemed to be no one who could step within 3 meters of him. Many silhouettes were sent flying, and in just a short while, over ten Puyan tribesmen were heavily injured.

Wan Li helped Ah Dai up from the ground. even though he was sent flying from the impact, Ah Dai had met Yan Shi’s fist from the side, so he was not really injured. Looking at the berserk Yan Shi, Ah Dai furrowed his brows, and ran over to Xuan Yue, “Miss, big brother Yan Shi has suddenly become like this, do you have any solutions to save him?”

Xuan Yue seemed to have not gotten over her initial shock from seeing Yan Shi’s wife’s body and after hearing Ah Dai’s question, she shook her head “I, I’ve no solutions either!”

“Berserkers are very powerful, they are able to instantly raise their own power by 200% while in the berserk state and his body’s defense is multiplied as well. With Yan Shi in this state, I’m afraid no one will be able to restrain him. Our strength is not enough!” Yue Hen interjected.

Ah Dai clenched his teeth, “I’ll go up and try. Why did big brother

Yan Shi suddenly become like this, did he really go mad?"

Yue Hen grabbed hold of Ah Dai, explaining, "Brother, there's no use even if you go, he is unable to recognize anyone in his berserk state. The blow that he had received was too much and he has lost sense of himself. Although I've seen berserkers before, they only entered 50% of their berserk states and they will regain their senses after their potential is depleted. But looking at Yan Shi's state, I'm afraid it will be extremely difficult for him to recover. Let him calm down first, only then is there a chance of him recovering. Miss Xuan Yue, do you have any magic to let someone calm down?"

Xuan Yue thought for a while, before nodding, "Yes, however, my magic standard is not enough, I'm not sure if I am able to execute this sort of high level Calming Mantra."

Yue Hen glanced at Yan Shi who was still in his berserk state, and anxiously muttered "Just give it a try, after he has entered the complete berserk state, he will first exhaust his strength and energy, and after that he will start depleting his life force and potential. If this continues, he will probably die of exhaustion."

Worried, Ah Dai voiced out as well, "Yeah! Please Yue Yue, just try and save big brother Yan Shi, take it that I'm begging you."

Surprised, Xuan Yue shot a glance at Ah Dai, but she nodded, "Okay then, Ah Dai, you have to help me."

Ah Dai was stunned, "How do I help?"

Related



Author: Samskor

Just a little editor doing his part in the TL community. View all posts by Samskor

Chapter 024: Calming Light

Translated By: Kuroneko

Edited by: Darklord5555

Special thanks To J.H. for helping out in the editing

Chapter 24: Calming Light

Xuan Yue instructed “Stand beside me, hold my hand, and think of moving your magic force. Transmit it to me and then i will cast the spell, perhaps this might work. The Calming Mantra is a Level 6 magic spell, I can only try and hope that it will be successful with the boost of my magic wand.” On this continent, magic spells were ranked according to their strength and there were a total of 9 levels. Level 1 and 2 magic spells were considered as elementary level magic spell, and those who were able to cast level 1 and 2 spells were at the level of a junior magician. For example, Ah Dai’s fireball and flame spell were level 1 magic spells, but the power of the two spells were able to vary according to the amount of magic force that one had. The fire meteor spell is one of the higher ranked level 2 magic spell, while the deep blue fire meteors that Ah Dai had casted had already reached the power of a level 3 magic spell. That’s why Giger determined him as an intermediate magician. Level 3, 4 and 5 magic spells were intermediate level magic spells and those who were able to cast level 4 magic spells were advanced magicians, while grand magicians had to be able to cast at least two level 5

magic spells or a level 6 magic spell. Level 6, 7 and 8 magic spells contained the true meaning of advanced level magic spells: most of the advanced magic spells were all large-scaled attack magic and they definitely possessed heaven and earth shaking power. As for the alchemist Gliss, his magic had only reached the level of a Grand magician and could only cast a couple of level 5 magic spells. However, his magic spells were a combination of his fire and darkness attribute, thus his strongest magical attacks would rival the power of level 7 magic. Gliss could barely be considered a mage since one had to be able to cast two level 7 magic spells to be considered a mage. The highest titles of Magister were only given to those who were proficient in level 8 magic. Until now, excluding the Holy Church, there were only 3 magicians on the continent who had reached the Magister level and all of them possessed the power to cause immense devastation. Level 9 magic spells were restricted incantations, and normally required a few magicians at the level of Magister to cast. Currently, most of the level 9 magic spells were lost.

“Okay,” Ah Dai responded, and quickly went over to Xuan Yue’s side and held on to her tender small hand, closing his eyes. Just as he was about to transmit his magic force to her, Xuan Yue suddenly whispered “If I manage to save that foolish big brother that you just met, you must not get angry with me next time and you must call me Yue Yue, okay?”

Ah Dai opened his eyes to glance at Xuan Yue, only to see her reveal a faint smile, then sticking out her tongue at him. It was an unbearably cute sight. Ah Dai nodded in agreement.

Keeping her smile, Xuan Yue turned to the crowd around Yan Shi and said solemnly, “Let us begin.”

Ah Dai closed his eyes once more, and concentrated on transmitting his magic force towards Xuan Yue, it was a difficult and painful process. As his magic force left the orifice between his brows, he suddenly felt his mind blank out. As though everything was sucked out, he could not help but wobble. Clenching his teeth, Ah Dai tried his best to bear the pain and continued to manipulate that ball of energy towards his right palm through his arm. Finally, under Ah Dai’s incessant efforts, the magic force finally flowed into his palm; causing Xuan Yue’s small hand to slightly tremble. Suddenly, he felt as though his body seemed to have become one entity with Xuan Yue’s body and he could clearly sense the flow of energy within Xuan Yue’s body.

Ah Dai discovered that Xuan Yue’s body seemed to be filled with a golden glow and there was an abnormal holy aura all around. Once the magic force entered Xuan Yue’s body, it immediately flowed into her body and followed a fixed trajectory. Xuan Yue’s original magic force did not seem as strong as his own, but her magic force felt vastly different from his, it was an indescribable feeling.

While Ah Dai was transferring his magic force to Xuan Yue, he was also continuously circulating his boundless true qi in order to support the strain on his mental energy and prevent him from fainting.

Xuan Yue felt a stream of pure and dense magic force from Ah Dai’s hand, and even though it was not comparable to her father’s vast amount of powerful magic force, Ah Dai’s magic force was

exceedingly pure and did not seem to contain any impurities. She carefully controlled the foreign magic force into her body and took a deep breath. Looking at Yan Shi who had gone berserk, she hesitantly chanted the unfamiliar incantation, “O the great heavenly god! This devoted believer humbly requests of you, to let the holy rays from the infinite ocean of light descend onto the worldly realm, flood into me, and save the people!” Following her chant, her body suddenly started glowing, although her bell-like voice was not very loud, it rang clearly in the ears of the people. A peaceful and calming atmosphere started spreading outwards from Xuan Yue. Amidst the glow, Xuan Yue looked extremely enchanting and captivating, just like a holy maiden. Beside her, Ah Dai suddenly felt that his mental energy was rapidly being depleted and he could not help but shiver. The surrounding voices became softer and he could hardly hear anything. He had to rely only on his will in order to remain standing.

The golden glow emanating from Xuan Yue became brighter and the top-grade magic crystal in her magic wand suddenly started glowing. Xuan Yue raised her wand high above her head, and the two angelic wings on her wand started releasing a faint white light, contrasting with the golden glow from the crystal. The magic force in her body continuously flowed towards her wand, and she even swayed a little from the overexertion of her mental energy. However, she had to endure, the incantation was not yet finished. The magic elements rapidly moved, causing fluctuations in the air, and forming a golden barrier around Xuan Yue and Ah Dai. Yue Hen and the others were instantly pushed back a few metres. After seeing such a mystical light, all of the Puyan clansmen quietened down, apart from the warriors who were still surrounding Yan Shi.

Ah Dai's consciousness was already blurred and all of his magic force was transferred to Xuan Yue. The two of them were like a single entity, and he was just standing there subconsciously, unaware of the things happening. Everything was under Xuan Yue's control.

After bracing herself, Xuan Yue barely managed to control the powerful energy that had gathered on her wand, and continued her chant, "O the infinite Holy Light! You are the purest power in this worldly realm, please use your righteous and peaceful energy, to eliminate all the chaos, and let the heart regain calmness. Let the mind regain clarity, and let the body regain life, go forth with the blessing of God, Calming Light!" This Calming Light, also known as the Calming Mantra, was a large-scaled support magic. It was able to eliminate chaos, confusion, poison and other abnormal conditions, allowing the user to regain calmness, and it contained some healing power as well. Amongst the light attribute magic spells, there were actually very few people who would use this spell because the support potential of this spell, when used in battle, was not even comparable to the level 4 magic spell Blessing of Light. However, its speciality was to remove chaos and poison statuses, thus it was extremely suitable to use it on Yan Shi who was in his berserk state.

Under the effects of the incantation, the vast holy energy surrounding Xuan Yue gradually started to coalesce within the magic crystal. If not for this magic wand, which was almost a godly weapon, Xuan Yue's would have found it difficult to even use level 3 light attribute magic with her current power. Xuan Yue's eyes were open wide, as she pointed her magic wand towards Yan Shi, and the light suddenly burst out from the top-grade magic crystal. Golden

colored light clouds floated out, enveloping Yan Shi, as well as the others near him, within. Xuan Yue's original power was too weak, and the Calming Light that she casted was only able to display about a third of its usual might, thus enveloping only such a small area. However, in this case, it was already enough. Yan Shi's body, that was covered in the golden light, suddenly became stiff, and he stood there motionless, while carrying his dead wife in his hands and panting heavily. His red eyes gradually turned back to brown and two streams of blood red tears flowed out. His actions became sluggish, while the warriors near him, regained their energy under the help of Calming Light, and instantly rushed over to Yan Shi, successfully constraining him.

The light scattered, and Ah Dai could not endure any longer. With a thump, he collapsed onto the ground. Xuan Yue's mind was blank as she wobbled, and fell toward the group. Unable to endure any longer, she fainted onto Ah Dai's body. However, their hands remained clasped together, without separating. The two of them seemed to have lost consciousness at the same time.

After god knows how long, Ah Dai gradually woke up, his mind still felt groggy, a clear sign that his mental energy had not yet recovered. The sounds of the carriage wheels rang out, and after a long time, he was finally fully awake. Opening his eyes, he saw Xuan Yue leaning against him, still deep in her sleep. His hands were still holding Xuan Yue's, and that soft and smooth feeling caused Ah Dai's face to heat up. Xuan Yue's small hands were also tightly clutching his, and his palm was already soaked with sweat. Ah Dai though to

himself, *Since she's still sleeping, I'll just continue holding then.* He looked around, and realised that they were back in the carriage. Yue Hen and Yue Ji were sitting opposite him, with their eyes closed, while Miao Fei was leaning against the side, faintly snoring.

"Yue Hen, big brother Yue Hen," Ah Dai called out softly.

Yue Hen opened his eyes, and seeing that Ah Dai had woken up, he revealed a hint of delight. "Brother Ah Dai, how are you feeling, does your body still feel uncomfortable?"

Ah Dai shook his head, "I'm fine, just that I feel a little weak. Have we set off again? How's big brother Yan Shi? Are we just going to leave like this? It's still unknown how his wife died, big brother Yan Shi is really pitiful."

Yue Hen let out a bitter smile, "We have set off, but we are on our way to the Puyan Tribe leader's clan. Both you and Miss Xuan Yue have fainted for a whole day. Yesterday afternoon, your combined efforts in casting the Calming Mantra was effective, just before Yan Shi was about to deplete his life force, it managed to remove his berserk state. However, his wife's death still remains a mystery. All of his clansmen decided to send both Yan Shi and his wife to the tribe leader. They were scared that Yan Shi might go berserk again, so they knocked him out, and he is currently on the horse carriage behind ours, along with his wife's coffin. The clansmen were all very grateful to both of you, if not for your help, Yan Shi might not be alive right now. However, they said that we were outsiders, and there are still some suspicions. Therefore, we were not allowed to leave,

and we have to pay a visit to the tribe leader and let him determine our fate . Outside, there are currently over 500 elite Puyan warriors to escort us along. It looks like, our journey to the Death Mountains will be a tough one. I really can't believe that we would face such an incident."

Ah Dai sighed, "Big brother Yan Shi is really too pitiful, he must have loved his wife dearly, hais——. Let's just follow along, I want to know the truth behind this matter as well, who exactly was so ruthless to kill brother Yan Shi's wife."

Hearing Ah Dai's words, Yue Ji suddenly opened her eyes and exclaimed, "Aren't you afraid of them making us the scapegoats? Looking at how the Puyan Tribe is averse to outsiders, I'm afraid that even if we complied and went along, there will be trouble in store for us! If not for the fact that they outnumber us, and that both of you had fainted, we would have long tried to think of ideas and escape. We really have miscalculated in the beginning, we should have just took the roundabout route, although it's further, at least we would not be stuck in this compromising situation!"

Ah Dai was stunned, "Why will they make us to be the scapegoats? We haven't done anything!"

Yue Ji pursed her lips, "You, you really are too naive. Won't the real culprit who is still in hiding try to frame us? Although we were together with Yan Shi when we arrived, don't forget, the Puyan tribesmen are all very united. It's impossible for them to suspect their own tribesmen, but as for outsiders like us, we happen to just

be the right targets for suspicion."

Yue Hen let out a sigh, "What my sister said makes sense, if we go and see the Puyan tribe leader, our fates are uncertain!"

The death of Yan Shi's wife caused Ah Dai to feel stifled, although he had not spent much time with Yan Shi, he had took a liking to Yan Shi's unrestrained and frank personality.

"En." Xuan Yue's body moved a little, and she raised her head that was laying against Ah Dai's shoulders. Looking at Ah Dai with her misty eyes, she remarked, "Where is this place? It feels so uncomfortable, my whole body feels weak."

Seeming to have recalled the sight of Xuan Yue casting the calming light, there was a look of respect on Yue Hen's face as he said, "Miss Xuan Yue, your magic is really powerful! To have reached such a level at your age, you must have trained hard for a long time."

Xuan Yue turned to look at Yue Hen, then straightened her body, blushing slightly. Back in the Holy Church, she was known for being mischievous, and even her father was unable to control her actions. There was no need to mention cultivation at all, she had hardly spent any efforts in her cultivations, and if not for the Supreme Pontiff and the crimson-robed priests doting on her, and using their holy powers to cleanse her body, perhaps she might not even have been able to reach the standards of a junior magician.

"Big brother Yue Hen, should we set off now? Isn't that Yan Shi or something okay already, it was so scary just now, the way his wife

died was too horrifying."

Yue Hen let out a bitter laugh, and repeated what Ah Dai had said earlier.

Listening to Yue Hen's words, Xuan Yue fumed, "They are so unreasonable, we've helped them out of goodwill! Eh, Ah Dai, why are you holding my hand?"

Ah Dai blushed, "No, it wasn't me who grabbed your hand, it's you who didn't let go of my hand!"

Xuan Yue quickly released her grip, and retorted, "You're spouting nonsense, who said I didn't let go of your hand, stinky Ah Dai, are you trying to take advantage of me when I wasn't noticing?"

Yue Ji flipped her fiery red hair to her back, and her expression was cold as she said with disdain, "It's so dangerous now, yet you still have the mood to joke around, what taking advantage and stuff. Ever since you cast that magic yesterday, both of you have been holding hands, and won't let go no matter how we tried. Just take it as both of you took advantage of each other."

Xuan Yue stuck out her tongue towards Yue Ji, and shot a glance at Ah Dai, saying, "It must be because you transferred your magic force to me, resulting in this. I'm sorry Ah Dai."

Stretching his right hand that was a little numb, Ah Dai replied, "I, I don't know, maybe so. Miss, back at the Magicians' Guild, you father gave me a magic scroll, he told me to use the scroll to contact him if we are in danger. Should we use the scroll now? Big brother Yue Hen said that it is likely that the Puyan Tribe will think that we

are the culprits!”

Xuan Yue widened her eyes and exclaimed, “You dare! I’ve finally got my father off my back, and if you call him over now, I’ll be taken back again. You mustn’t use it, okay? Even if there’s danger, I’m not afraid. Eh! What did you call me just now? Before I used the Calming Mantra, what did you promise me?”

Only then did Ah Dai realise that he had promised to call her Yue Yue, as he stammered, “O-Okay, Yue, Yue Yue.”

Yue Ji let out a peal of laughter, and mocked, “So affectionate, calling her Yue Yue, doesn’t that make you Dai Dai then.”

Xuan Yue gave Yue Ji a glare, but then said in satisfaction,” This is much better. Ah Dai, how do you think Yan Shi’s wife died! He’s really pitiful, he seemed to love his wife so deeply, if not he wouldn’t be so devastated that he fully entered the berserk state. I wonder who was so ruthless to kill his wife.”

“Furthermore, she was raped then killed, that person must be a perverted monster. If I find out who it was, I’ll surely take a sword and chop off that part,” Yue Ji added on.

Xuan Yue asked with curiosity, “Chop off what part?”

Hearing Xuan Yue’s innocent question, Yue Ji’s face started to turn red, and she said abruptly, “Go and ask Ah Dai, I won’t tell you.”

Yue Hen furrowed his brows, “Little sister, you’re getting out of hand, is that what a girl like you should say? Miss Xuan Yue, don’t

listen to her nonsense."

Xuan Yue stared curiously at Yue Ji who was blushing a bright red, and muttered, "What part exactly?"

Yue Hen glanced at Ah Dai in embarrassment, and changed the topic. "I heard from the Puyan tribesmen that it takes two days to travel from Yan Shi's clan to his father's clan. We've already traveled for a day or so, I estimate that we will reach before today night. The incident this time is too great, the Puyan Tribe is afterall a great tribe, and now that the wife of the leader's son has been raped and murdered so suddenly, there will be a large commotion. I wonder how their tribe leader is going to handle this, according to the clansmen who were nearby at the time, they did not see any suspicious activity and the neighbors did not hear anything unusual from Yan Shi's house. The culprit seemed to be a sadistic murderer, Yan Shi's wife's legs and arms were completely broken, she must have suffered immensely, and after the murderer raped her, he thrust a sharp object below, causing her to die. The method of killing is way too brutal, he must be a ruthless killer."

At this time, Miao Fei was also woken up by their chattering, and he chimed in as well, "Boss Yue, do you think it was someone from the Assassins' Guild? Only they are able to sneak into Yan Shi's house without anyone noticing."

Once he heard the words 'Assassins' Guild', Ah Dai jolted, he recalled those killers who caused Owen's death, and uncontrollably, he started clenching his fists.

Yue Hen shook his head, “It doesn’t seem like it, it shouldn’t be the work of the Assassins’ Guild. Although their methods are very ruthless and they kill without questioning, they do not have the tendency to rape before murdering someone. Normally they would quickly finish off their target, then leave. The culprit should probably be someone familiar to Yan Shi, and in my opinion, I guess it’s someone from their clan. Perhaps someone who has deep enmity with Yan Shi.”

Ah Dai gradually calmed down as he listened to Yue Hen’s words. “But, big brother Yan Shi has said before, his Puyan tribesmen are all very good-natured!”

Yue Ji let out a hmpf, “People are unpredictable, even in a pot of sweet porridge, there may be sand mixed in. Who knows? Don’t forget, Yan Shi’s house is in the middle of the village. In the day, there’s people all around, for outsiders, even if they were to fly, they would be easily found out by the clansmen. Therefore, only his own clansmen will be able to sneak into his house without raising alarm.“

Miao Fei lowered his head and mumbled, “I hope that the Puyan Tribe leader will be wise and find the real culprit, and not treat us as scapegoats. Boss Yue, I’ll go take over Wan Li, and let him get some rest.”

Yue Hen nodded, and Miao Fei jumped out agilely. The horse carriage stopped for a moment, then continued on after Wan Li got into the carriage.

Once Wan Li got on, he immediately spoke, “I heard one of the Puyan tribesman say that Yan Shi seems to have woken up. However,

he did not cry or shout, and just kept quiet, as though he has lost his mind."

Yue Hen sighed, "Being depressed is better than shutting off his emotions permanently, the death of his wife was really too great of a shock to him."

Ah Dai turned to Yue Hen, "I want to go see big brother Yan Shi, and see if I can console him and make him come to his senses."

Stunned, Yue Hen replied, "There's no use even if you go, it's better that you stay here, in case you arouse other people's suspicions."

"No, I want to go and see him. I know the pain of watching someone you love dearly die, it's really too unbearable." As Ah Dai finished speaking, he ignored Yue Hen's objection, and jumped off the carriage. Unexpectedly, Xuan Yue, who always liked to order Ah Dai around, seemed to not take any action, as she closed her eyes and started meditating.

Ah Dai jumped off the carriage, and discovered that there were Puyan warriors with large sabres all around. They were all wearing light armor, and surrounded the horse carriage. Behind the carriage, there was another horse carriage that was even more spacious. There was about a dozen elite Puyan warriors surrounding it, and even under the bright sunlight, there was a hint of gloom on their faces. *Yan Shi is most likely to be in that carriage.*

The horse carriage was now close to Ah Dai, and he quickly turned

to speak to the warrior at the front, “Greetings brother, I’ve heard that big brother Yan Shi has awoken, and I wish to see him, is that okay?”

The warrior furrowed his brows and replied, “Brother Yan Shi had only just woken up, it’s better to not disturb him. Mister magician, you should go back to your carriage, when we arrive, the tribe leader will naturally determine right and wrong.”

Before Ah Dai could respond, a horse suddenly came galloping forward, and seated on top of the horse, was that brawny middle-aged man who was in front of Yan Shi’s house. He had changed into a set of black colored armor, and was carrying a sabre. He turned to the warrior in front of the carriage and asked, “What’s wrong?”

The warrior bowed respectfully and answered, “Big brother Yan Ju, this magician says that he wanted to see brother Yan Shi.”

[TN: Yan Shi & Yan Ju share the same Yan, 岩巨 literal translation is Giant巨 rock岩]

Yan Ju glanced at Ah Dai, and smiled, “I must really thank you and that miss magician, it’s due to your magic that Yan Shi was able to live. Hais——, the blow that Yan Shi faced this time is really too severe, I want to help him as well, but his condition now is… … Never mind, since you want to see him, go then, but don’t speak too long, he needs to rest.”

Ah Dai was delighted, “Thank you, brother Yan Ju.” As he finished speaking, he rushed off towards the carriage and hopped on.

Looking at Ah Dai getting on the carriage, there was a hint of an

abnormal expression in Yan Ju's eyes as he turned his horse around and went back to his position in the squad.

When Ah Dai entered the horse carriage, he only saw Yan Shi lying near the side of the carriage, with his body binded to a sturdy wooden plank. He was staring dumbly at the black colored coffin beside him, and there was no emotions in his eyes. His face was pale, seeming that he had yet to recover from the backlash of his berserk state.

Ah Dai spoke in a soft voice, "Big brother Yan Shi, are you feeling better?"

Yan Shi did not reply, and continued staring dumbly at the coffin beside him, as though he had not heard Ah Dai's words.

Ah Dai sat next to Yan Shi, and spoke in a low voice, "Big brother Yan Shi, I know that you're very upset over sister's death, but, you must come to your senses! The culprit has not been caught, if you continue to remain like this, sister will not be able to rest in peace." Looking at the state Yan Shi was in, Ah Dai felt immense worry and sadness.

Yan Shi did not respond, and remained in his earlier posture.

Holding Yan Shi's icy large hands, Ah Dai spoke up again, "Big brother Yan Shi, I'm bad with words, but I know sister's death must have been a great shock for you. Not too long ago, my uncle who took great care of me died, and I was distraught and depressed, just like you, my uncle was murdered by people. However, right now I am

too weak, I am unable to avenge him. I was all alone since young, and it was Teacher who took me in, he taught me magic and alchemy. But not too long after, I met uncle, he was inflicted with a deadly poison, and he forced me to leave Teacher, and we arrived at the Commonwealth. He started teaching me martial arts, and initially, I missed Teacher dearly, viewing uncle with hostility. However, after a long period of living with him, I came to realise that uncle has always treated me well, and I knew that, he was a good person. But just as I have come to form a deep relationship with uncle, his enemies discovered him. Because of them, uncle overused his dou qi, causing the deadly poison to flare up and result in his death. I really, really miss uncle, if only he was still alive!" As he spoke, images of Owen flashed across Ah Dai's mind, and he could not help but tear up. A tear landed on Yan Shi's large hands, and Yan Shi seemed to move a little.

After a long while, Ah Dai's emotions finally calmed down a little, and he continued, "Big brother Yan Shi, please come to your senses. You still need to avenge sister's death! If you continue to be like this, the killer will only take delight in your actions. Just now I heard brother Yue Hen's analysis, he said that the most likely culprit, should be someone from your clan!"

Hearing Ah Dai's words, a light flashed across Yan Shi's eyes. He shook his head non-stop while muttering, "No, no, it's impossible. Our clansmen are all so kind-hearted, how can they kill Yun' Er?"

Ah Dai repeated Yue Ji's words, "Even in a pot of sweet porridge, there may be sand mixed in, it's very difficult to say for sure! In

broad daylight, only your clansmen are able to enter your house. Big brother Yan Shi, think carefully, do you have enemies in your clan?"

Yan Shi shook his head, "My relationships with my tribesmen have always been good, how can there be any enemies? Yun' Er, Yun' Er, why did you just go like this, leaving me behind, how am I going to continue living? Brother, do you know how important Yun' Er is to me? We grew up together since young, and she was two years younger than me. Yun' Er was not of any prominent background, and her parents had died when she was young, it was my father who took her in out of kindness. She used to be my maidservant and when I was a teenager, she had started taking care of me daily. She was so kind, so beautiful, and she showed meticulous care and concern for me. When I was angry, she would comfort me; when I was suffering, she would accompany me; when I was sick, she would take care of me; when I was feeling down, she would be concerned about me. She, she will forever remain my angel. In my heart, even the position of the tribe leader was not as important as her. When I was 18, we fell in love. At first, she was unwilling to accept me. I knew that she loved me, after all of the time we spent together, I knew that she clearly had feelings for me. The reason why she was unwilling to accept, was because she felt that, with her status, she was unworthy of me. However, what has status got to do with love? The only one I love, is her, her kind-hearted nature! Under my constant pleading, she finally accepted me. Brother, I don't mind you laughing at me, but in order to obtain her love, I once even kneeled before her and pleaded! Perhaps my persistence moved her, and she finally opened her heart to me, and we were finally together."

Related

Chapter 025: Enmity within Puyan

Ok this is embarrassing but i forgot to hit publish on the second chapter -.-

Translated by Kuroneko

Edited by darklord5555

Chapter 25: Enmity within Puyan

Pausing for a while, Yan Shi seemed totally immersed in his memories, and there was a trace of gentleness within his eyes. After some time, he finally continued, “This incident will be quickly known by father. I’m his only son and the successor of the Puyan Tribe leader. Father originally wanted me to marry the daughter of a large clan leader, and when he knew that I was in love with Yun’ Er, he was strongly against it initially. However, how could I be so easily discouraged? When father made me choose between the position of the tribe leader and Yun’ Er, I picked Yun’ Er without hesitation. At last, my father had no choice but to agree to our marriage. The struggles and obstacles in those few years, I can still remember them clearly. We’ve only been married for two years, but these two years, I lived as though I was in a dream, I was so happy, really so blessed. Every time I left the house, I will always think of the gentle Yun’ Er, who was waiting for me at home, with my favorite dishes prepared. Once I think of her, I will be filled with love and yearning.

Yesterday, when your cleave was about to land on me, there was only one thought in my mind, and that was, I won't be able to see my beloved Yun' Er again. And afterwards, when you got injured in order to not harm me, I was immensely grateful towards you, because, as long as I was alive, I would be able to return home to Yun' Er. However, however, she… she just departed in such a way, the light in my life, just suddenly disappeared… Brother, how, how am I supposed to accept this fact!" As he spoke, Yan Shi suddenly burst into tears, the tears streamed down, staining his clothes.

Hearing the story of Yan Shi and Yun' Er, Ah Dai was greatly moved. Yan Shi's unwavering love for Yun' Er had tugged at his heartstrings.

After a long while, Yan Shi finally calmed down a little as he choked out, "My Yun' Er was so kind, she had never offended anyone, and she would definitely not have any enemies. She treated everyone kindly, and she would even nurse injured stray animals. But, but, just like that, she's gone now, with such unwillingness and suffering. Who was it, who was it that was so ruthless! To not even spare such a kind and caring maiden like Yun' Er! I'm really regretful, if only I had not gone out to patrol today, but stayed by her side instead, perhaps she wouldn't have died…"

Ah Dai patted Yan Shi's shoulder, and asked, "Big brother Yan Shi, have any strangers came to your clan recently?"

Yan Shi shook his head and replied with certainty, "No, definitely not, our Puyan Tribe rarely interacts with outsiders, and it's even

rarer for us to bring outsiders to our own clans. If not for you sparing my life yesterday, and your relationship with the TianGang Sword School, I would definitely not have brought you back to the clan. Brother, I really don't want to live anymore, I want to die, to die and find Yun' Er, perhaps, I might be able to reunite with her there. The only thing that's holding me back now is that I need to avenge Yun' Er. I must shred that heartless fiend into pieces!" A frosty killing aura emanated from Yan Shi as he finished his last sentence, causing Ah Dai to feel shivers run down his back.

Yan Shi's gaze gradually hardened as he said in a low voice, "Brother Ah Dai, thank you for bringing me back to my senses. I must avenge Yun' Er's death, and you're right, that fiend might be someone from my tribe, and even more likely, someone from our troops. Yun' Er has been with me for so long and she knows some martial arts. To kill her without even allowing her to make some noise, that fiend must possess decent skills. I believe, he must have some motives for killing Yun' Er, and he might appear again. After you get off the carriage, don't reveal to anyone that I've regained my senses. When I arrive at my father's place, I must find out the culprit! The people guarding the carriage right now are all my most trusted brothers, they will definitely not reveal our conversation."

A little confused, Ah Dai simply nodded and consoled, "Big brother Yan Shi, don't be too depressed, the culprit will surely get his just deserts."

Yan Shi closed his eyes, letting his last two tears fall, and replied in a cold voice "From now onwards, I will not longer be sad, there shall only be hatred within my heart. Brother Ah Dai, you can go now,

wipe your tears away and don't let anyone find out."

"Take care, brother Yan Shi." Wiping away his tears, Ah Dai was just about to get off the carriage.

"Wait a minute."

Confused, Ah Dai turned around and asked, "Big brother Yan Shi, what's wrong?"

Yan Shi glanced at Ah Dai for a while, "Brother, you are really kind, thank you very much. From today onwards, you are one of my best brothers."

Ah Dai grabbed Yan Shi's hand, "Big brother, I was an orphan and don't have any siblings, I am really lucky to have a big brother like you!"

Returning to the carriage, Ah Dai sat beside Xuan Yue once more.

"How's Yan Shi?" Yue Hen asked.

Ah Dai shook his head, "His condition isn't very good, he had become unresponsive after his wife's death. He did not speak any words and only stared at his wife's coffin." Ah Dai thought to himself, *This is my first time lying, big brother Yan Shi, I really hope that you'll be able to find the culprit soon.*

Yue Ji sighed, "He is indeed pitiful, losing his wife at such a young age."

Xuan Yue suddenly opened her eyes and glanced at Ah Dai, but remained silent.

After a day of travelling, with almost 500 Puyan warriors escorting them, they arrived at the largest clan in the southwest of the Puyan Tribe's territory —— the Yan Clan. Most of the people here have Yan as their surnames. Yan Shi's father was the leader of this clan, as well as the leader of the Puyan Tribe.

The 500 Puyan warriors stopped at a small hill in front of the Yan Clan. Perhaps they had already received news beforehand, but when Ah Dai got off the horse carriage, there was almost thousands of Puyan warriors who rushed forward. They were all part of the light cavalry, and they wore leather armors, and wielded spears. Their spearheads were pointed to the ground and they glinted when the rays of sunlight reflected off of them. There was a chill in the air as they emitted hostile auras. The Yan Clan was much larger than the clan Yan Shi lived in. From afar, it looked as large as a big city, with all sorts of different sized and shaped stone houses scattered around. In the middle of the clan, there were also some tall imposing stone buildings, and the whole territory was so vast that even when standing on the small hill. It was difficult to see the its whole entirety.

The thousands of warriors formed a line and stood in the path before Ah Dai's group. Yan Ju ordered all of his warriors to stop, then jumping off of his own horse, shouting loudly, "I am Yan Ju, whose troops are these?"

"Oh it's brother Yan Shi! I heard something happened? The tribe

leader ordered me to await your arrival.” Accompanying the deep voice, a horse galloped out of the troops. He was very skilled at riding, and his tall black-colored fine steed was like a flash of black lightning, dashing straight towards them. Yan Ju was not startled by his speed and simply revealed a small grin.

The rider of the black horse seemed to have become one with the horse, as his body was leaning forward, swaying slightly with his galloping horse. In just a short instant, they had already arrived before Yan Ju and just as the black horse was about 5 metres away from Yan Ju, its rider suddenly let out a huge shout and forcefully jerked the reins. The black horse let out a long whinny, stopping to the side, under the control of its rider.

Yan Ju let out a laugh, “Brother Yan Li, your riding skills have gotten even better!”

[TN: Same Yan (岩) as Yan Ju and Yan Shi, a pretty common surname of their tribe, but doesn’t mean they’re related, “brother” is used with the meaning of “bro” as mentioned earlier.]

The warrior, named Yan Li, was not very tall but he was extremely built, with veiny, muscled arms, and an intense look to him, seeming to be around 20 years old. One glance at him and one could tell that he was a warrior that specialised in strength. The black horse that he was riding was even more handsome with his sleek dark hairs glistening under the sunlight. After the sprint and the sudden stop just now, it was now panting slightly, but other than that, it seemed fine. “Big brother Yan Ju, what has happened? Where’s big brother Yan Shi? I heard from the messengers that you sent, that big sister Yun’ Er… …”

Yan Ju replied, with a solemn voice “Little Yun was really too pitiful, let’s not talk about it now, Yan Shi and Little Yun’s corpse are on the carriage behind. Let’s enter the clan first, everything will have to be decided by the tribe leader.”

Anger surged forth within Yan Li, as he let out a loud grunt “I wonder which bastard did this, if I ever find out, I’ll surely rip him apart! Let’s go, big brother Yan Ju, quickly bring me to see Yan Shi. He had such deep feelings for sister Yun’ Er, he must be suffering now.”

Yan Ju sighed, “Yan Shi had suffered quite a huge shock, he seemed to have lost his will after Little Yun died. Throughout the whole journey, he hasn’t spoken a single word and refused to eat. He seems so much thinner, and seems to be in a daze. Come, I’ll show you.” As he spoke, he turned around, and let Yan Li to the horse carriage. Yan Shi’s carriage was all the way at the back, and Yan Ju and Yan Li had to pass by Ah Dai’s group. As Yan Li saw them, he could not help but to furrow his brows and asked, “Big brother Yan Ju, who are they? Why are they amongst your troops?”

“They are the outsiders that Yan Shi brought back on the day the incident happened, they seem to be his guests. Just as they arrived at the clan, Little Yun had died. I was afraid that they may be possible suspects, so I brought them along, for the tribe leader to judge.”

The cold glint within his eyes intensified as he jumped off from the horse and took big strides towards Ah Dai’s group. When he got closer, Ah Dai was able to see the pair of battle axes on his back, the

handle was very short, only around a foot long, but the blade areas were very large. The pair of battle axes seemed to have almost spanned the whole of Yan Li's broad shoulders.

[TN: omg, imagine olaf from league of legends xD]

Yan Li barked at them roughly, "Who are you people? Did y'all harm sister Yun' Er?"

Yue Hen furrowed his brows, the scenario that he was worrying about still happened, the Puyan Tribe's hostility towards outsiders caused misunderstandings to arise! He quickly explained, "We are mercenaries, planning to accomplish a mission near the Heaven's Origin Tribe. When we passed by your esteemed territory, we met brother Yan Shi and even sparred with him. Later on, we became friends and brother Yan Shi invited us to his clan, but who knew that something like this would have happened. We definitely do not have any enmity towards your tribe, furthermore, we were always together with Yan Shi, how could we have killed his wife?"

At this moment, Yan Ju got off his horse as well. "Don't make it seem as though you're totally innocent, when y'all arrived, Little Yun was already dead for a few hours, and as for whether y'all are really the culprits, it is up to the tribe leader to judge. Although I believe you, as the vice-leader of Yan Shi's clan, I mustn't let off any suspects. I am really sorry to have made y'all come here and feel wronged, but I believe the truth will come to light, and the tribe leader will definitely get to the bottom of this."

Cold light flashed in Yan Li's eyes, as his pair of battle axes

suddenly appeared in his hands. With a loud howl, he hacked towards Yue Hen, two flashes of black light instantly appearing near him. This sudden change caused Yue Hen to be in shock and he had no time to draw his sword, only relying on his nimble body techniques to retreat to the side. Yan Li paid to heed to rationality, and let out another howl of rage, hacking at Yue Hen with his battle axes in a flurry. Those heavy battle axes seemed almost weightless in Yan Li's hands, and the flashes of black increased in its momentum.

"Clang——" A loud clash sounded, resonating deeply within the people's ears. Ah Dai, who was wielding his TianGang Sword, had to take 3 steps back before he was able to steady himself. Yan Li's strength was shocking, seeming to be even greater than Yan Shi's. It turned out that Ah Dai saw that Yue Hen was in danger and immediately sent out a strike to resolve the danger.

After the strike from Ah Dai, Yan Li's battle axes were sent into the air from the rebound and his body shook, taking a step back as well.

Ah Dai took a deep breath, trying to suppress his boiling fury as he raged, "Why are you so unreasonable! Attacking brother Yue Hen the moment you saw him, we didn't do any wrongs against you!"

Yan Li roared back, "Bullshit, it must be outsiders like you who harmed sister Yun' Er! Apart from you, who else will do this sort of stuff. Let me kill y'all today, to avenge sister Yun' Er!" As he spoke, he swung his battle axes, preparing to rush up again.

Yan Ju quickly grabbed Yan Li from behind and shouted angrily, " Yan Li, what are you doing! Before we get to the bottom of this

matter, you are not to touch them!”

Yan Li struggled with all his might and Yan Ju was almost unable to contain him. “Big brother Yan Ju, let go of me! Apart from them, who else would be so heartless to kill sister Yun’ Er, she was so kind-hearted. You bunch of bastards, why did you kill her! I will kill you to avenge her!” Yan Li’s words caused the other Puyan warriors to glare at Ah Dai’s group as well, seemingly to have thought the same. The warriors jumped down from their horses and drew out their sabres, clustering up together. From the immense killing intents in their eyes, they seemed as though they wanted to tear at their throats. Wan Li, Miao Fei, and Yue Ji could not help but to draw their weapons as well.

Xuan Yue went over to Ah Dai’s side, while giving Yan Li a cold glare and said, “Are all your Puyan tribesmen such a bunch of simple-minded fools? Does killing us really help you to avenge her? What proof do you have to claim that we are the culprits, are all of you really so dumb?” As she spoke, a dense white glow surrounded her, and a holy aura enveloped the six of them.

The holy aura from Xuan Yue gave off a calming feeling and the sense of panic instantly lessened.

Yan Li was stunned, and no longer seemed to have the violent rage from earlier. He furrowed his brows as he stated, “So there’s a magician as well.”

Ah Dai was scared that Yan Li would attack once more and he quickly stepped beside Xuan Yue, with his eyes fixated on Yan Li, preparing to strike out at once if necessary. Under the constant

circulation of his boundless true qi, a faint dou qi glow shone from the blade of his TianGang Sword.

Xuan Yue lightly waved the magic wand in her hand, as she glared at Yan Li. Waves of white light constantly spread out from her magic wand as she was prepared to make her move any moment. Her other hand was placed on the Phoenix's Blood near her chest, and she made up her mind to use her strongest attack if she had to. As she was pampered from young, she naturally flew into a rage when facing this sort of situation.

Yue Hen had already recovered from his earlier fright but he did not draw the longsword behind his back, only telling Yan Li, "Brother Yan Shi's wife had just perished, aren't you going to see him? We are unable to run, and if you really find out that we are the real culprits, you can easily kill us any moment. The strongest of your troops are all gathered here, are you still afraid of us running? If you kill us without any proof or reason, we will definitely not stand here and remain passive."

Yan Ju grabbed hold of Yan Li's muscular arm, and raged, "Yan Li, are you not listening to your elder brother's words? Come, let's go and take a look at brother Yan Shi, then return back to the tribe and wait for the leader's decision."

Yan Li let out an angry hmpf as he raised his left arm and pointed the axe threateningly at Yue Hen, "Just you wait, if it was really you who killed sister Yun' Er, I'll use this axe of mine to kill all of you!" As he finished speaking, he turned and walked towards the horse

carriage at the back. Without their leader in charge, the other Puyan warriors also retreated after Yan Ju's scolding.

Yan Ju sighed and shook his head. "All of you, please don't take this to heart. This brother of mine, Yan Li, always had a fiery temper since young, I'll apologize to you on his behalf."

"What's the use of apologizing, it's better if you quickly investigate the truth and let us go. We have important stuff to do, and no time to waste with you here," Miao Fei grunted.

Yan Ju nodded his head slightly and did not speak anymore, chasing after Yan Li.

When Yan Li got off the carriage that Yan Shi was in, his face was livid and a strong killing aura emanated from him. Glaring at Ah Dai's group, he mounted his black horse and ordered the 500 people who came from Yan Shi's clan to proceed to the Yan Clan. Yan Ju was fearful that Yan Li would cause trouble again and he stuck by Yue Hen for the whole journey, with a solemn expression on his face.

After entering the clan, Yan Ju send Ah Dai's group into a small stone house and locked the door from outside. He ordered some warriors to stand guard, while he and Yan Li rushed off to see the tribe leader.

Miao Fei sat on a chair and expressed his frustrations, "What is this! Why are we so unlucky, to actually chance upon such a situation!

Big brother Yue Hen, what if they insist that we killed Yan Shi's wife, does that mean that we're surely going to die?"

Yue Hen gave him a glare and chided, "Miao Fei, calm down, now that things have progressed to this extent, we can only wait. This is the largest clan of the Puyan Tribe and there are at least ten thousands of people, are you going to kill them all? We are all within their territory and we have no way to resist at all. Furthermore, we haven't done anything wrong, what's there to be afraid of? Let's just wait, I don't believe that Yan Shi's father, as the Puyan Tribe leader, would be so blind and not see the truth."

Yue Ji retorted, "So what if he can see the truth? The killer was so crafty, not leaving behind any trace of evidence, how are they going to investigate? Don't tell me that we will be stuck here forever if they are unable to find the culprit? The killer must have schemed for a long time, and it would be difficult to find him! That short man, called Yan Li or something, was so evil, attacking big brother without any warning, I really want to shoot an arrow through his head."

"He's just a boorish fellow, why argue with him?" Yue Hen sighed.

Xuan Yue sat on the bed, while twirling her magic wand, "Anyway I have the time, it's not like we're lacking food or accommodation here, let's just wait." As she finished speaking, she darted a glance at Ah Dai, "Come over, and sit by my side."

Ever since Xuan Yue used her Calming Light to save Yan Shi, even with the danger of exhausting all her magic force, Ah Dai's opinion

of her had become much better. Listening to her call, he sat over and whispered, “Yue Yue, are you really not afraid at all? If things really go wrong, let’s just use the scroll to call your father over, perhaps he will be able to save us?”

Xuan Yue shook her head as she leaned over and said softly, “If my father comes, how will I be able to play? Oh right, what did Yan Shi say to you today?”

Ah Dai replied honestly, “Big brother Yan Shi said… Ah, he’s still in a daze, he didn’t say anything at all!” As the stone bed was at the other side of the room, and the two of them were speaking in hushed tones, Yue Hen and the rest of them did not hear anything, and were still discussing methods to get out of their current predicament.

Xuan Yue pouted, “Are you still trying to lie to me? If he had not said anything, why are your sleeves wet, I think it’s because you cried, right?”

Ah Dai had not expected that Xuan Yue would be so observant, thus he revealed a look of embarrassment as he whispered into Xuan Yue’s ears, “Big brother Yan Shi had come to his senses, but because he said that he wanted to find the culprit, he did not let me tell anyone that he had awoken. You mustn’t reveal this!”

Xuan Yue felt Ah Dai’s warm breath on her ears, and could not help shrink away, while giggling, “Why are you so close to me!”

Yue Ji looked towards the duo, and scoffed, “Look at the situation that we’re in now, and you still have to mood to fool around? I say, Miss Xuan Yue, aren’t you an advanced magician, can’t you cast some teleportation magic and bring us out of here?” Her words

instantly caused Wan Li's and Miao Fei's eyes to brighten up. To them, it was simply too dangerous here, and their lives might be in danger any moment.

With her back facing Ah Dai, Xuan Yue hmpf-ed and leaned against his shoulders. "Don't spout nonsense without knowing anything, do you think teleportation magic is so easy to use? That is the speciality of a spatial attribute magician and it's very difficult to execute, even for spatial attribute magicians. Without the level of a grand magician, it is extremely difficult to teleport people. What I learned is light attribute magic. Furthermore, if we left, doesn't that just prove that we are guilty and we would become scapegoats for the real culprit. Do you really wish to be hunted down by the Puyan Tribe on the continent? If you want to run, you can do it, I won't leave without getting to the bottom of this."

Yue Hen coughed "What Miss Xuan Yue said was right, we mustn't leave now. I estimate that their tribe leader will see us soon. Let's meet him first before deciding anything. Now that things have come to this, we can only wait."

Just at this moment, the door of the stone house opened, and Yan Ju and Yan Li walked in. Yan Ju was expressionless, while Yan Li had a face full of fury as he ordered loudly, "Come, follow me to see the tribe leader."

"3-inched nail, can't you be more polite, we aren't your prisoners!" Yue Ji mocked.

[TN: 三寸钉儿 literal translation is 3-inched nail? Which is a jab

towards his short height, but please feel free to suggest any better translations :D]

Yan Li instantly raged, “Who are you calling!” A black light flashed, and the pair of battle axes were back in his hands. Yan Ju immediately grabbed hold of him, and said to Yue Ji, “I’m sorry fellows, this brother of mine has a bad temper. The tribe leader wishes to meet the six of you and ask you about yesterday’s incident.”

Yue Hen nodded, shooting a glance towards Ah Dai and Xuan Yue. “Okay, let’s go then.” As he spoke, he stood up and was about to step out.

Yan Ju suddenly extended his arm and stopped him, “Please leave behind your weapons in this room before you go.”

Miao Fei was furious, “What? You still want us to leave our weapons behind? No way! What if you come to blows with us?”

Yan Li let out a cold laugh, “Just the few of you? If we really fight, you will surely lose, even with your weapons!”

Miao Fei really hated people who looked down on him and he could not contain his rage. “What are you saying? Do you think you’re that strong? Why not let us have a look?” He specialised in using skills and techniques and did not place any regard of Yan Li, who was just all brawn in his eyes.

Yue Hen held back Miao Fei, glancing at Yan Li for a short while before finally placing his longsword aside. “Everyone, just leave behind your weapons.”

Yue Ji and Wan Li didn't say anything, complying with Yue Hen's words and placed their weapons on the table. Under Yue Hen's stare, Miao Fei also put down his soft sword with immense reluctance.

Suddenly, a flash of red light appeared in the room and everyone looked in the direction of the light, only to see Xuan Yue extending her arms and exclaiming, "I've no weapons on me." It turned out that, when Yue Hen had put down his weapon, she made use of the Phoenix's Blood, to store both her magic wand and Ah Dai's TianGang Sword. But what she did not know was that, there was still another weapon near Ah Dai's chest, the extremely evil Hell's Sword.

Yan Li let out a hmpf, "Whether you have weapons or not, you are most aware of that yourselves. When we reach the tribe leader's place, as long as you have weapons on you, you will definitely be unable to enter. Don't blame us if you're seeking death." As he finished speaking, he turned and walked out.

The six of them followed Yan Ju and Yan Li, along with a group of Puyan warriors surrounding them and walked to the centre of the Yan Clan. It took a full half an hour before Yan Ju finally led them to a towering stone structure. This structure was at the very centre of the clan and was made of rocks stacked atop one another. It appeared to be triangular shaped and was around 30 metres tall, spanning almost an area of a few thousand square metres, it can be said to be the largest building within the whole clan. The 3 metre-tall door was guarded by over twenty warriors who seemed different from the light cavalry earlier. They were wearing heavy black armor, which encased them totally and they were even wearing helmets that covered their

whole face, causing one to be unable to see their faces. Every one of the heavily armored warriors were wielding an enormous battle axe in their hands, standing guard majestically. Just one look at them and one could tell that they possessed immense power. If not for the gaps between the armor revealing some skin-colored parts, one might even think that those unmoving warriors were like statues.

Yan Ju and Yan Shi stopped before the twenty heavily armored warriors, and the arrogant and irritable Yan Li actually stopped to bow respectfully towards the warriors. He pointed towards Ah Dai's group behind him and said, "Greetings, Holy Tilu Warriors, the tribe leader has ordered me to bring this group of outsiders to see him, please let them pass."

The twenty warriors moved to the side at the same time, forming a pathway. Throughout this, none of them spoke, and from their orderly actions, it could be seen that they had gone through intense training.

Yan Ju walked over to Yan Li's side, and also bowed respectfully towards the twenty warriors. After that, he turned and nodded towards Ah Dai's group, while instructing, "This is our Puyan Tribe's most sacred Tilu Temple. Only when something major happens, will we come here to make decisions. When you step inside, you mustn't speak inappropriately, and follow behind me and Yan Shi carefully."

Yan Ju's kindness towards the group had won over their respect, and Yue Hen immediately nodded, "Yes, we will."

Yan Ju glanced solemnly towards Ah Dai and Xuan Yue, giving a last warning, “If you have any weapons on you, it’s better to take them out now. If not, once you’re found out by the device before the temple, the Tilu warriors will immediately attack. At that time, no one will be able to save you.”

Xuan Yue did not believe that anything was able to detect the items within her Phoenix’s Blood, and merely waved her hand. “I have nothing on me, why are you looking at me.”

Ah Dai’s heart was beating rapidly, the Hell’s Sword near his chest could not be taken out any at cost. However, looking at Yan Ju’s seriousness, it seemed that the Tilu warriors were extremely powerful. Hesitating for a moment, Ah Dai still decided to keep mum. He did not want to harm the people here with the evil energy from the Hell’s Sword.

Yan Ju let out a sigh, “If it’s like this, then let’s go.” As he finished speaking, he brought them into the temple.

Before passing through the door of the temple, Yan Li threw the two battle axes behind his back aside, then stepping into the temple. Yan Ju followed after, then Yue Hen, Miao Fei, Wan Li, Yue Ji and Xuan Yue. True to Xuan Yue’s expectations, under the power of godly artifact, the Phoenix Blood, the weapons were not discovered at all.

Related

Chapter 026: Tilu Temple

Hi darklord here,

I have tried out a new spacing system for TKDG and I would appreciate some feedback on it (Before it looked like walls and walls of text)

Translated by: Kuroneko

Edited by: darklord5555, Stbunbun

Chapter 26: Tilu Temple

It was at last Ah Dai's turn, and he walked up uneasily. Suddenly, an abnormally strong pressure was exerted on him, as if wanting to crush him, and he had difficulty breathing. The 12 Tilu warriors nearby moved a little. Just as Ah Dai thought that the Hell's Sword was discovered, it suddenly emitted a surge of energy fluctuations, a gust of extremely cold energy instantly covered his whole body, causing the pressure on him to disappear. A rock at the top of the temple door suddenly gave off a puff of green smoke, and let out a small 'bang'. Ah Dai got a huge fright, thinking that the temple had discovered the weapon on his body, and quickly touched his chest. Although he had only practised the Hell's Sword Technique – Hell's Flash once, he believed that he had the ability to execute it.

The surrounding Tilu warriors did not move anymore, and they stood in their original positions, with both hands wielding their battle axes. Ah Dai quickly walked into the temple, while letting out a sigh of relief. His clothes were damp from his cold sweat, and he

shuddered while thinking back, *Why did I want to use the Hell's Sword just now?* If the Hell's Sword was to be unsheathed, and if the evil qi was released, the twelve Tilu warriors nearby would surely perish. Perhaps, it was the suffocating pressure that caused that thought to cross his mind. Relaxing his hand, Ah Dai inhaled a deep breath and calmed his emotions, then chasing after Xuan Yue.

A long narrow passageway greeted them as they stepped into the temple. On the sides of the passageway, there would be a torch every ten metres or so, the light from the torch was not very bright, and the passageway was still quite dim. Everyone was on their guards, as they glanced around while they walked. They felt as though someone was observing their actions, and the temple seemed to contain some sort of special energy.

Xuan Yue glanced back at Ah Dai who had just caught up, and quietly asked, "Why are you so slow?"

Ah Dai shook his head and muttered, "It's nothing, let's go. Yue Yue, this place is so mysterious!"

While touching the Phoenix's Blood that felt a little warm, Xuan Yue nodded and replied in a low voice, "There seems to be some sort of powerful special energy within this temple."

Yan Li seemed to have overheard Ah Dai and Xuan Yue's chatter, and turned around to glare at them. Ah Dai quickly shut up and stopped talking.

Yan Ju and Yan Li brought them through some twists and turns, and the path gradually became wider and brighter. After walking forward ten more metres, their surroundings suddenly changed, it was a

spacious area, and there were no torches around. Yan Ju and Yan Li stopped in their tracks. Yan Li said respectfully, “Tribe leader, we have brought them.”

Suddenly, there was a ‘whoosh!’ and the area lit up, over a dozen large torches had ignited simultaneously. It turned out that, they were in a large hall that was at least a hundred square metres. At the two sides of the hall, there were more than a hundred Tilu warriors, just like the ones outside, and they were all holding enormous battle axes. At the front of the hall, there was a platform that was about 40 metres tall. There were two people standing on the platform, the first was a tall Puyan tribesman, who seemed to be around 60 years old. He wore a grey colored long robe that seemed to conceal his tall figure, and his long brown hair was loose behind his back, his piercing gaze caused Ah Dai to feel very uncomfortable. Beside him, there was a guy who was fully covered under a black cloak, and his facial features were unable to be seen. He seemed like a magician and he gave off a strange feeling.

The grey-robed old man waved his hand, and immediately, Yan Ju and Yan Li retreated to the side, with their heads bowed in respect.

“Greetings, outsiders. I welcome you to our Puyan Tribe’s Tilu Temple. I am the tribe leader, Yan Fei, and this is our tribe’s prophet, Pu Lin. What happened to my son, Yan Shi, is not something that anyone wished to happen, and he is still currently in shock. I apologize for Yan Li’s earlier actions, he was too rash and almost harmed you. Now, can you please tell me your account of what happened after meeting my son, do not leave out any details.” Yan Fei had a solemn expression on his face.

Hearing Yan Fei's polite tone, Yue Hen let out a sigh of relief, and walked forward, "We pay our respects to the esteemed tribe leader. The six of us are mercenaries, and we were on our way to the Heaven's Origin Tribe to complete a mercenary mission, passing by your esteemed tribe, ……" Yue Hen was very good at expressing himself, and gave a thorough description of everything that happened.

After listening to Yue Hen's account, Yan Fei started to ponder. After a long while, he finally turned to the black-robed man beside him, "Prophet Pu Lin, what do you think of this matter?"

A deep and hoarse voice echoed throughout the hall, "Tribe leader, even though I am clairvoyant, I do not know everything. However, I've already inspected Yan Shi and Yun Er's corpse, what I am sure of, is that these outsiders were not the culprits. Do you still remember what I said last time when Yan Shi was still young? A calamity would befall him when he was 26 years old, this calamity would affect him greatly. Although it would have a great impact on him, it will not be life-threatening. And when that calamity happens, it would also be the start of his new life, and he would meet a fated person in his life. This person, is someone who can bring weapons into this sacred temple. As long as this person is there, Yan Shi will be able to avert the great danger. However, if the culprits of this incident were able to kill Yan Shi before he regains his consciousness, Yan Shi would forever be confined to the depths of hell, unable to gain eternal life."

Yan Fei was stunned, "Prophet Pu Lin, who is this fated person you are speaking of?"

Prophet Pu Lin lifted the black hood off his head, revealing a head of white hair, and a face full of wrinkles. However, he had a pair of penetrating eyes, as though he was able to see everything in the world. Even the defiant Xuan Yue could not help but lower her head at his gaze. In the great hall, only Ah Dai was able to meet his gaze without being affected. Prophet Pu Lin's gaze swept across the group of people, and said, "This person has appeared, and he is within the group of outsiders. However, Heaven's secrets cannot be so easily disclosed, I can only request that tribe leader treat this group of outsiders kindly. From tomorrow onwards, let them stay with Yan Shi, and he will be able to break free from his sorrow. However, before that, you must make sure that Yan Shi is well-protected."

There was a hint of delight in Yan Fei's eyes as he exclaimed, "Thank you Prophet Pu Lin. Yan Ju, Yan Li, both of you shall command some warriors to protect Yan Shi tonight."

Yan Li was a little puzzled as he asked, "Esteemed Prophet Pu Lin, since big brother Yan Shi's fated person is within this group of people, why not let them meet with big brother right now? Wouldn't that help brother Yan Shi recover faster?"

Prophet Pu Lin let out a benevolent smile as he replied, "Yan Li, you are still too rash. This is all Heaven's plans, I cannot reveal too much, just follow the tribe leader's orders."

"We will follow tribe leader's orders," Yan Ju bowed respectfully, then pulling Yan Li away.

Yan Fei seemed to be in his thoughts as he glanced at Prophet Pu Lin, then turning to Ah Dai's group and saying, "Okay then, Yan Li,

bring our honored guests somewhere to rest first. Tomorrow morning, follow Prophet Pu Lin's plans and let our guests reside with Yan Shi."

Yan Li agreed, and his gaze towards Ah Dai's group seemed to have softened when he spoke to them, "Please, follow me."

"Wait a minute." Just as they were about to follow Yan Li and Yan Ju, Prophet Pu Lin suddenly spoke out.

The group of people abruptly stopped in their tracks and turned to look at Pu Lin. "This young lad, and this young maiden, please stay for a while, I have something to say to both of you," Pu Lin spoke.

Even without Pu Lin having to point out, Ah Dai and Xuan Yue both knew that Pu Lin was referring to them. Xuan Yue asked, "May I know what stuff do you have to talk about, that can't be spoken now?" In Xuan Yue's eyes, apart from the crimson-robed priests and the Supreme Pontiff in the Holy Church, this old Prophet was the only other person who was able to cause her to feel nervous. Thus, her tone had become considerably more polite as well.
Prophet Pu Lin let out a smile as he said, "There are some things that I must talk with both of you in private. Are you unwilling to listen to the ramblings of this old Prophet?"

Pu Lin's kind smile had deeply affected Ah Dai, and the sense of familiarity surged forth within his heart. Although it was just his first time meeting Pu Lin, it felt as though he had known him for a very long time.

Yue Hen shot Ah Dai and Xuan Yue a look, then saying, "Since the Prophet has some words to speak to you, we shall get going first."

Yan Fei coughed, “Yan Ju, Yan Li, quickly bring our honored guests somewhere to rest. Yan Shi’s safety tonight shall depend on the both of you, nothing must go wrong.”

Yan Ju and Yan Li looked at each other, then bowing respectfully, “Yes.” As they finished speaking, they brought Yue Hen and the others through the same path, walking out of the Tilu Temple. Only Ah Dai and Xuan Yue remained.

Prophet Pu Lin closed his eyes and muttered, “It’s already evening now, time for dinner. Tribe leader, you still have matters to deal with, remember what I’ve said.”

Although Yan Fei was the tribe leader of the Puyan Tribe, he was still very respectful towards this old prophet. He nodded his head slightly, “Then I shall take my leave first, prophet Pu Lin.” Soon, there was only Xuan Yue, Ah Dai and the mysterious prophet Pu Lin left in the great hall, apart from those unmoving Tilu warriors.

Prophet Pu Lin walked down the stairs of the platform, wobbling slightly as he used the wooden stick in his hand to support himself, seeming extremely frail.

Looking at his halting steps, Ah Dai could not bear it any longer, and quickly rushed forward to support him. When his hands came into contact with prophet Pu Lin, there was a flash of light in Pu Lin’s eyes, and a shiver ran down Ah Dai’s back, he felt as though he was totally seen through.

Prophet Pu Lin sighed, “Old, I’ve really grown old, my body can’t take it anymore. Come, children, I’ll bring you somewhere.”

As he finished speaking, he faced the platform that he just descended from, and beckoned Xuan Yue to go over. In comparison, Xuan Yue was much more wary than Ah Dai. From the way prophet Pu Lin made them stay and the way he spoke to Yan Fei, she could tell that this old man with white hair had an insurmountable status within the tribe, but why would he ask her and Ah Dai, 2 outsiders, to stay behind? Didn't the Puyan Tribe hate outsiders? Despite these thoughts, Xuan Yue still walked over. She did not know why she did so, but she understood that the prophet Pu Lin did not have any ill intentions towards Ah Dai and herself.

Prophet Pu Lin looked at Xuan Yue who had just walked over, and said, "Little miss, do you have any uneasiness towards this old man? To tell you the truth, the Tilu Temple is the most sacred and holy place in our Puyan Tribe. All crimes are forbidden here, if not, the person will surely face the wrath of the Heavens. Hais——, children, I have been waiting for you for a very long time." As he spoke, there was a sudden great suction force coming from his body, causing Ah Dai and Xuan Yue to be pulled closely beside him. He raised the wooden stick in his hand, and quietly muttered some incantations. With a flash of light, Xuan Yue and Ah Dai both felt that they had entered a foreign world. They seemed to no longer be in control of their own bodies, and there were all sorts of colors swirling around them, with colorful spots of light constantly passing by their bodies. A dizzy feeling arose in their minds, they wanted to scream, but were unable to let out any sound; they wanted to struggle, but were unable to control their bodies. The Prophet Pu Lin who was by their sides, closed his eyes, and continued to chant some incantations.

Suddenly, everything faded to black, and all of the colored light disappeared. Just as Xuan Yue and Ah Dai were completely perplexed, everything suddenly lit up once more and feelings slowly returned to their bodies, and the strong suction force from Prophet Pu Lin's body vanished as well. Ah Dai and Xuan Yue realised that they had appeared in a corridor, and below them, was a huge golden magic hexagram. There were many complicated symbols on the hexagram, and not even Xuan Yue, who was from the Holy Church, was able to decipher the symbols. Along the walls of the corridor, there were many small fire-red gems embedded within, they were around the size of a fist and constantly emitted faint light. With Ah Dai and Xuan Yue's eyesight, they were only able to see around ten metres in front of them. Xuan Yue knew that the red gem was called Fire Cloud Stone, although it was not very precious, having such a large amount of Fire Cloud Stones was still very shocking. Furthermore, in order for the Fire Cloud Stone to emit light, it must have a supply of magic force. It seems that, the Tilu Temple was indeed mysterious.

Prophet Pu Lin remained standing there, not making any noise, as though nothing had happened. Xuan Yue was worried, and cast a common low level light magic spell, Illumination Spell. However, to her surprise, the surrounding air seemed to not contain any magic elements at all, no matter how much she chanted, there were no ripples of magic elements.

"Child, don't try anymore. In this place, no one else is able to use magic, apart from myself. This place can be said to be my domain." As he finished speaking, he waved the wooden stick in his hand

once more, causing a gust of wind elemental energy to suddenly appear in the original empty corridor, lightly lifting the three of them and gradually sending them through the corridor. Every hundred metres or so, a red Fire Cloud Stone would appear on the walls of the corridors, providing a faint light. Xuan Yue knew, that Prophet Pu Lin's magic had already reached a very high level, the magic that he used earlier, was a legendary magic teleportation spell, a magic spell that even her father did not know! And now, even though the wind attribute magic spell that he had used was not very advanced, he was still able to use this sort of magic in a place without any magic elements, and he did not seem to be tired at all! This caused her to be very surprised. As for Ah Dai, even though he had been astonished by everything that happened, he did not speak out any of his questions, he had a strong baffling sense of trust towards Pu Lin, causing him to not be afraid at all.

After quite some time, the wind elements disappeared, and the three of them landed on the ground. In front of them, were two large stone doors, and on the sides of the two doors, there was a Tilu warrior standing guard. The two Tilu warriors, seemed to be different from the ones outside. Not only were they taller and more muscular, the armor that they were wearing also gave off a faint golden shimmer. When the three of them landed, the Tilu warriors crossed their long battle axes, blocking their path. A strong and fearsome aura emanated from their bodies, instantly enveloping the three of them within. The immense pressure caused Ah Dai and Xuan Yue to gasp for breath and they did not have any ideas of resisting, because the two Tilu warriors were simply too strong. That immense pressure caused Xuan Yue and Ah Dai to be unable to move at all.

Prophet Pu Lin seemed as though he was unaware of Ah Dai and Xuan Yue's predicament, as he simply stood there, unmoving. The Tilu warriors' pressure also seemed to have no effect on him.

Ah Dai and Xuan Yue's bodies were gradually unable to withstand the pressure, and looking at Xuan Yue's expression of pain, Ah Dai could not bear it anymore. With a low growl, he circulated his boundless true qi to the maximum, and a faint layer of white light instantly spread out from his body, blocking before him and Xuan Yue.

Xuan Yue relaxed, and she could finally move her body. Turning her head to look at Ah Dai, she saw that he was already half kneeling on the floor, and large droplets of sweat continuously flowed down his forehead. The white light before them constantly trembled, and she realised that Ah Dai had transferred all of the pressure to himself. Xuan Yue was instantly moved, she clearly understood that, this was all for her sake! With immense gratitude and emotions surging in her heart, she unhesitatingly took out the Phoenix's Blood.

Seeming to have sensed danger, the Phoenix's Blood immediately released a strange red glow, which merged with Ah Dai's white colored dou qi, and blocked the immense pressure.

Ah Dai was almost at his limits, and a drop of blood had trickled down his mouth, but the Phoenix's Blood had helped him withstand the pressure just in time, and Ah Dai instantly felt much better. When facing the danger, Ah Dai had subconsciously reached out for the Hell's Sword near his chest, causing the chilly evil energy to spread out. When the faint grey light appeared from Ah Dai's chest, the red glow of the Phoenix's Blood dimmed a little, and under the

combined efforts of the white, grey and red light, the pressure on Ah Dai and Xuan Yue was fully blocked, retreating to almost 3 feet away.

The two Tilu warriors seemed to have noticed the change on their bodies, as they raised the long battle axes in their hands, as though they were preparing to strike out.

Xuan Yue and Ah Dai got a huge fright, they had just barely managed to block against the immense pressure. If the two incomparably strong Tilu warriors were to unleash their attack, they would surely be in dire situation. Xuan Yue opened her mouth slightly, ready to chant the strongest incantation of the Phoenix's Blood, while Ah Dai was also prepared to use the Hell's Sword. Ah Dai was able to sense that, although the evil energy of the Hell's Sword was powerful, just by itself, it would not be able to harm Xuan Yue, who had the protection of the Phoenix's Blood. And as for the mysterious Prophet Pu Lin, he did not have to worry at all; what he wanted to deal with, was the two abnormally strong Tilu warriors before him.

Just as both sides were about to unleash their attacks, Prophet Pu Lin finally opened his eyes, and calmly said, "Okay, you can stop now." Two rays of blue light shot out from his body, passing through Xuan Yue and Ah Dai's defenses, directly entering the centre of the two Tilu warriors' eyebrows. The Tilu warriors immediately retracted their battle axes, and stood back in their original positions, as though nothing had happened. The immense pressure had instantly disappeared as well.

Ah Dai and Xuan Yue both felt extremely weak. Ah Dai had endured

most of the pressure and he could not help but spit out a mouthful of blood, his whole body was weakly kneeling on the ground, as he panted loudly. Xuan Yue was not much better off, her face was pale and her temples were soaked with sweat. She clenched the Phoenix's Blood tightly in her right hand as she glared angrily towards Prophet Pu Lin.

Two balls of gentle white light appeared in Prophet Pu Lin's hands, and shot towards Xuan Yue and Ah Dai. Under the effects of the light, both of them felt warmth surging forth in their bodies, and it was extremely comfortable. The previous fatigue and wounds seemed to disappear almost instantly. Ah Dai stood up and glanced at Xuan Yue, who was a little dumbfounded, then asking Pu Lin, "Prophet, what is going on?"

Prophet Pu Lin revealed a gentle smile, sighing, "There's no mistake, the melding of Kindness and Evil, the fusing of Light and Dark, with Phoenix's Blood as guide, passing through all obstacles. We have finally met, both of you, I've been waiting for both of you for 30 years!"

Ah Dai was confused, even the clever and quick-witted Xuan Yue was stunned. She slowly muttered, "Prophet Pu Lin, shouldn't you explain what is this all about?"

Prophet Pu Lin glanced at Xuan Yue, and replied, "Behind these two stone doors, is a secret that our Puyan Tribe has been guarding for a thousand years. You coming here, is all because of Heaven's guidance. Children, when you step past these doors with me, your fates will be changed, and everything will go according to Heaven's plans. Come, let's go, I will tell you everything that you wish to

know after we enter. It's been 30 years! You've finally come." As he finished speaking, he waved the wooden stick in his hand, and the two large stone doors slowly opened, with creaking sounds. It was darkness beyond the stone doors, and Prophet Pu Lin stopped for a moment, "Follow me." Then, he walked in, seeming to be preoccupied with his thoughts.

Xuan Yue walked over to Ah Dai's side, asking in concern, "How are you feeling? Are you alright now?"

Ah Dai gazed at the two Tilu warriors, with a hint of fear in his eyes, and shook his head, "I'm fine, let's go."

Xuan Yue nodded. Since they had already come this far, there was no way to return and they could only walk forward. Step by step, they followed behind Prophet Pu Lin, and walked towards the darkness behind the doors. Just as they stepped past the stone doors, the doors behind them suddenly slammed shut. The loud 'bang' continuously echoed throughout the darkness.

Xuan Yue trembled as she grabbed hold of Ah Dai's large and warm hand, her voice quavering as she spoke, "Ah Dai, you, you must protect me!" In this mysterious and strange Tilu Temple, even the daring Xuan Yue seemed to be frightened.

It was Ah Dai's first time seeing that Xuan Yue so helpless and weak, and a desire to protect her surged forth within his chest. Tightly holding Xuan Yue's small hand, he circulated his boundless true qi and a faint white radiance spread out from him, enveloping them. Xuan Yue felt much more comfortable, and she leaned against Ah Dai, feeling as though he was able to protect her from everything.

It was a confined space without any light, but surprisingly, it did not feel stuffy at all.

“In my name, by thy power, go forth, power of God.” Prophet Pu Lin’s hoarse voice rang out, and their surroundings suddenly lit up. Xuan Yue and Ah Dai discovered that they were in a pretty small grotto, and the light was given off by the gems on the walls. Faint yellow light lit up the grotto, and Prophet Pu Lin stood in the center, staring at the stone wall before him. The surrounding walls, including the top of the grotto, were all covered with murals. Those large and life-like murals appeared exceedingly mysterious, under the light from the gems.

Prophet Pu Lin slowly walked over to Ah Dai and Xuan Yue, sighing, “Children, this, is the place where our Puyan Tribe’s ten thousand years of history is stored.”

Xuan Yue wrinkled her brows, “What has your Puyan Tribe’s ten thousand years of history got to do with us? Why must you bring us here?”

Pu Lin did not answer Xuan Yue’s question directly, but merely smiled and asked, “Little miss, how old do you think I am this year?”

Xuan Yue was stunned, and looked puzzledly at the wrinkles on his face, answering, “You seem to be at least 80 or 90 years old?”

There was a trace of sadness in Pu Lin’s eyes as he shook his head, “Tribe leader Yan Fei and I were playmates, he is 62 this year, and I, am younger than him by 1 year.”

Xuan Yue and Ah Dai were both shocked, as they looked at Pu Lin. Pu Lin let out a self-deprecating laugh as he continued, “Do you know why I look so old even though I’m only 61 years old?”

Ah Dai shook his head in confusion, while Xuan Yue pondered for a while and asked, “Is it because of your title as the Prophet?”

Pu Lin nodded, “You’re right, Prophets like me, are quite similar to the priests of your Holy Church, we are the most devout followers of the Gods. In terms of power, I am much weaker than the priests of the Holy Church, however, I have an ability that they do not.” As Pu Lin spoke about this, there was a glint in his eyes as he continued, “This ability of mine, is the ability to foresee the future. Children, the Prophets in our Puyan Tribe, have absolute authority within the tribe, and even the tribe leader has to follow the Prophet’s orders. There are a total of over 30 clans in Puyan Tribe, and this is the largest clan. As for the Tilu Temple, this is where the Prophets worship the Gods, and foresee the future. There can only be one Prophet in the Puyan Tribe and they are all selected by the previous Prophet before them. I can be said to be the Prophet with the highest talent so far. As for the advent of the blood sun that occurred a few years ago, little miss of the Holy Church, you should know about it, right?”

Xuan Yue was shocked as she cried out, “Are you talking about the Thousand Year Great Tribulation? You, how did you know that I’m from the Holy Church?”

Pu Lin smiled, “Anyone with enough experience would be able to tell, the holy aura from your body, is not something that ordinary light attribute magicians will have. If I’m not wrong, your parents,

should be a crimson-robe priest of the Holy Church right? Furthermore, you possess the godly artefact of the Holy Church, the Phoenix's Blood, that means you must have some special relationship with the Supreme Pontiff. Am I right?"

Xuan Yue nodded her head blankly, "Then you calling us here, is it related to the Thousand Year Great Tribulation?"

Ah Dai looked at Xuan Yue and Pu Lin in surprise, "Thousand Year Great Tribulation? Is it related to the blood rain 5 years ago?"

Xuan Yue let out a hmpf as she recited, "Blood sun high in the heavens, Evil will be born, Blood rains across the world, Calamity shall come, Thousand Year Great Tribulation shall befall the continent. Have you never heard of this legend?"

"I don't know, what does the Thousand Year Great Tribulation got to do with us?"

Pu Lin sighed, "If it's not related to you, I wouldn't have called you here. It was the Heavens that directed you, our great saviors, to me"

Ah Dai had not even reacted, and Xuan Yue was already trembling due to shock. "What, what did you say? You say that we are the saviors of the Thousand Year Great Tribulation?" She knew about the matter of the savior, 5 years ago during the advent of the blood son, the Supreme Pontiff had sent out orders to ask all the clergymen to find the whereabouts of the savior. And the Supreme Pontiff had only spoken one sentence as guidance, that was, "Kindness, Evil, Dragon, Phoenix, Love." These 5 words were the clues to finding the savior, and all of the clergymen racked their brains, but they were unable to find any traces, even after 5 years. The Supreme Pontiff

also once said, if the savior was unable to be found, great calamity would befall, and the whole continent would be shrouded in blood.

Prophet Pu Lin turned around, with his back facing Xuan Yue and Ah Dai, as he spoke, “Although the Supreme Pontiff is all-knowing, he was still born as a priest. The reason why I know you are the saviors of the world, is not only due to my status as a prophet, but more importantly, because of what happened 30 years ago. Before the blood sun had even appeared, I had used 30 years of my life as sacrifice, obtaining more guidance from the Gods when I was praying for our Puyan Tribe’s fate, and the guidance was related to the identities of the saviors. Therefore, this is why I seem so old now, I am 61 this year, and adding on 30 years of longevity, my appearance became 91 years old. Child, tell me what you know of the prophecy.”

Xuan Yue was completely shocked, and as for Ah Dai, he still had no idea what Pu Lin and Xuan Yue were talking about.

Xuan Yue replied, “Back when the Supreme Pontiff was resisting the blood sun, he obtained some information regarding the savior, there were only some vague words, ‘Kindness, Evil, Dragon, Phoenix, Love.’” Although this was the secret of the Holy Church, Xuan Yue still decided to say it. She felt a sense of reverence towards the old prophet before her.

Related

Chapter 027: Puyan's History

Hi! Sorry for not translating in the past 2 weeks or so, I was busy with my first mid-terms in school. But it's over now, so I'm back! XD
(ILK will probably take a little longer, as it still needs to edited)

Translated by: KuroNeko

Edited by: Stbunbun

Chapter 27: Puyan's History

There was great delight in Pu Lin's eyes as he exclaimed, "That's right, the power of the esteemed Supreme Pontiff is indeed profound! Even when resisting against the blood sun, he was still able to obtain God's guidance. If not for the Supreme Pontiff and the various priests of the Holy Church, the great tribulation might have already happened five years ago. However, we do not have much time left. At the thousandth year of the Holy Calendar, it would be impossible to prevent the great tribulation. After sacrificing 30 years of my longevity, the full verse of guidance that I obtained was, "The melding of Kindness and Evil, the fusing of Light and Dark. With Phoenix's Blood as guide, passing through all obstacles. With Dragon's Blood as bond, love through all eternity." Most of the Supreme Pontiff's words are inside, so this must be it. You, the both of you, are the saviors as decreed by God!"

Ah Dai discovered, Xuan Yue's small hands were damp with cold

sweat. Savior? This word was too foreign to him, and he could not help but ask, “What is a savior?”

Prophet Pu Lin forcefully suppressed the excitement in his heart, and explained,” Savior, a savior is someone who receives His guidance, in order to save the people during the tribulations. The advent of the blood sun, was just a forewarning of the incoming great tribulation. The Supreme Pontiff and the priests have used their pure holy powers of god just to postpone the great tribulation, and it is impossible to avoid it. However, God has not abandoned us, He still cares for us. And under His guidance, the two of you have appeared. God will guide you to become the saviors, who can turn the tide of the great tribulation.”

Xuan Yue wrinkled her brows, “Prophet Pu Lin, what proof do you have that we are the saviors?”

Pu Lin smiled, “Of course, I have sufficient proof, I will explain it to you later. First tell me, what are your names?”

Xuan Yue replied, “He’s called Ah Dai, and I’m Xuan Yue. Prophet Pu Lin, please quickly explain it to us.”

Nodding his head, Pu Lin continued, “The melding of Kindness and Evil is talking about Ah Dai. Ah Dai is a kind-hearted child, but on his body, there is an extremely evil energy.”

Xuan Yue got a shock, and looked at Ah Dai. Subconsciously, Ah Dai felt for the Hell’s Sword near his chest, while shaking his head repeatedly. “No, no, I’ve never done any evil deeds!”

Pu Lin let out a smile, “Don’t be so agitated, the evil energy that I’m talking about is from an evil object, and as for kindness, it is your original temperament. Do you know why I am so sure that you are the melding of kindness and evil? It was not simply because of your actions just now to save Xuan Yue. Take a look.” Suddenly, a crystal ball appeared out of nowhere. Pu Lin quietly muttered some incantations, and the crystal ball started emitting faint light. There were some blurry images in the crystal ball that gradually became clearer. It was showing the scene where Ah Dai was preparing to step into the Tilu Temple. Nothing special happened when the first few people passed through the door, but just as Xuan Yue stepped past, her image started glowing a faint red, and a faint phoenix silhouette appeared, enveloping her within. And when Ah Dai stepped into the temple, his body started emanating faint gray light. The crystal ball darkened, and the images instantly disappeared. As he kept the crystal ball, Pu Lin explained, “This is the projection of you stepping into the Tilu Temple, and the defensive magic formation that I set up for inspection was actually shattered by Ah Dai. Normally, even if it were someone many times much more powerful than you, he would not have been able to break my magic formation. However, that extremely evil object on you, would be able to, do you understand it now?

Furthermore, the way you acted after you entered the temple proved to me that you were extremely kind-hearted. Therefore, I was even more sure that you are the true savior. That sentence describing kindness and evil must have been referring to you. As for light and

darkness, it was precisely describing the contrast between you and Xuan Yue. The extreme evil object brings about the power of darkness, while Xuan Yue, who was born in the Holy Church, is the embodiment of light. Initially, I'd never have thought that there would be two saviors. But, after seeing the Phoenix's Blood from the Holy Church on Xuan Yue's body, I was able to confirm this thought of mine. As for the Phoenix's Blood as guide, wasn't it just describing Xuan Yue? And as for the Dragon's Blood, I will tell you later. I'm not too sure about the last part regarding love for all eternity, so you will have to find that out for yourselves."

Ah Dai and Xuan Yue looked at each other, neither of them would have imagined such a thing. Xuan Yue asked, "Prophet Pu Lin, did you call us here, just to confirm that we are the saviors? I don't want to become some savior of the world, if it is something that people like you, who have such profound powers, can't accomplish, how are we supposed to do it? There's something I don't understand, why would you sacrifice 30 years of your longevity just for this prediction of the saviors? Shouldn't the Holy Church be responsible for the safety of the continent? Even if the great tribulation were to befall, it should not have much to do with your Puyan Tribe!"

Pu Lin let out a bitter smile, "Indeed, I do not have such noble intentions. The only thing I'm concerned about, is the preservation of our Puyan Tribe. Initially, I wanted to foretell the future of the Puyan Tribe, but all sorts of omens made it clear that if our Puyan Tribe wanted to continue developing and make a place for ourselves in this continent, we must successfully make it past this Thousand-

Year Great Tribulation. The savior is not just the savior of the entire continent, but shall also be the savior of our Puyan Tribe. The reason why I brought you two here, is to reveal the secret throughout our long history, and helping you to become true saviors. Hopefully, the great tribulation will come to pass, our Puyan Tribe has been suffering long enough, I can't bear to watch it go towards ruin!"

"Prophet Pu Lin, I'm still not very sure of the meaning of your words. Are you hoping for us to help your Puyan Tribe do something?" Ah Dai spoke up.

"I guess you can put it that way, but of course, I wouldn't simply request for your help without any payment. First, listen to the whole story that I'm going to recount, then I'll tell you what kind of help our Puyan Tribe needs. Be it in the United Regions Commonwealth, or in the entire continent, our Puyan Tribe is one of the tribes with the longest histories. We are the earliest human beings that appeared on the continent, and the history of our Puyan Tribe can be traced back to over ten thousand years ago. While the current three main empires and the commonwealth, were only formed after the first generation Supreme Pontiff sealed the demon god." Pu Lin walked over to one of the walls in the stone grotto, and pointed to the mural on the wall. "Look."

Ah Dai and Xuan Yue glanced towards the place that he was pointing to. Under the faint light from the glowing jewels, they saw that the colors on the mural was mostly faded, but they could tell that there were many people in the mural. The people were wearing clothes made of wild beast's' fur, and they were wielding primitive weapons in their hands, as they seemed to be dashing wildly towards

somewhere. There was a tall and burly man among those people, with his long brown hair scattered behind his back, as he revealed a face full of excitement, with his spear raised up high, he seemed to be shouting something. Pu Lin explained, “This is the most complete ancient mural that the Puyan Tribe has preserved till now. The group of primitive people in the mural, are the ancestors of our Puyan Tribe, and as for that burly man, he is the first tribe leader. I, myself, am not too clear as to exactly how old this mural is, but I feel it should be at least ten thousand years old. Our ancestors were still living primitive lives back then, and since then, our Puyan Tribe is the tribe that cares for nature greatly.”

Taking a few steps forward, Pu Lin continued to point towards a second large mural and said, “This should have been painted a thousand years after the first mural.”

The second mural was of a large valley, and along the cliffs of the mountains, there were numerous caves. The Puyan tribesmen were wearing cloth as they traveled in and out along the cliffs. Pu Lin explained, “After a thousand years of progress, our Puyan Tribe had slowly begun to have its own civilization. Although they were still living in caves, the Puyan tribesmen had already started farming at that time.” He did not elaborate further, and walked forwards again, pointing towards the third mural. There were tens of thousands of Puyan tribesmen, wearing neat leather armor and wielding long battle axes, lined up in orderly contingents, with murderous looks on their faces. “This is around 5000 years ago. At that time, our Puyan Tribe was looking to advance towards a greater goal. Look at these warriors, do they seem familiar to you? Indeed, they are the original

forms of the Tilu warriors. Look at the fourth mural."

There was only a single person depicted in the fourth mural, a brawny man, with bulging muscles. He was only wearing a pair of ordinary long pants, leaving his upper body exposed. His hands were raised as he held a pair of long battle axes, seeming to be yelling something in rage, and a layer of dazzling yellow light emanated from his body. Pu Lin's eyes revealed a look of reverence as he sighed, "This man on the mural, is the greatest hero of our Puyan Tribe, the Tilu battle god. He led the Tilu battle warriors, and brought our Puyan Tribe to glory. This very Tilu temple was built in honor of him. Under the leadership of the Tilu battle god, our Puyan Tribe's territory increased immensely, and in just 30 years, three quarters of the continent was occupied by our tribe. The continent at that time, was basically the Puyan Empire instead. Our tribesmen who were scattered all over, married into some of the other smaller clans, resulting in the humans with different colored skin now. Apart from the Southern Silk people, who share the same length of history as us, our Puyan Tribe can be said to be the ancestors of the humans on the continent today. Oh, perhaps you don't know yet, the current Prosperous Empire, is the descendants of the Southern Silk people. They were not as ambitious as our Puyan Tribe to expand their territory, since they were a peace-loving race. Although they only occupied a small area on the continent, they have obtained the respect of our tribesmen, and we were able to get along with them peacefully. I guess, that the Southern Silk people were cleverer than us, since, they are still able to occupy nearly a quarter of the

continent even now."

As Pu Lin was talking about how the Puyan Tribe was able to dominate over three quarters of the continent, there was immense pride and excitement in his eyes, as though he had been part of those glorious times. Especially his gaze when he looked towards the Tilu battle god, it was a look filled with reverence and admiration. Ah Dai and Xuan Yue had also been deeply affected by his story, the two of them listened intently to Pu Lin's recount, totally immersed in the story that happened thousands of years ago.

Pu Lin walked over to the fifth mural, it was the largest mural in the stone grotto, and it seemed to almost encompass a fifth of the stone wall in the grotto. The mural displayed an image that seemed very much like the current Puyan Tribe, there were stone houses everywhere, and there were expressions of happiness and contentment on the face of the Puyan tribesmen, as they hurried around, doing their own business. Pu Lin let out a sigh, "The full glory of our Puyan Tribe lasted for 3000 years, and during those 3000 years, we had dominance over the continent. This was how it looked like, every single corner of the continent seemed to be filled with the same stone houses, forming smaller clans."

As he spoke, Pu Lin continued walking forwards, to the sixth mural. On the sixth mural, a large city was depicted. Although the city wall was short, and there were not that many buildings, it was still a city. Sighing, Pu Lin continued once more, "The continent is indeed too broad, although we had occupied a large portion of land in the continent, the distance between the regions were too vast, and there

were still many things that we fell behind in. Our tribesmen gradually separated into different sections, now known as the white colored people, black colored people, and even including the red haired people of the Red Hurricane Tribe. Under the influence of the natives then, they gradually broke free of our Puyan Tribe's rule, and formed their own empires. They even abandoned the basic values of caring for nature. They started to destroy forests, in order to establish their own cities. At that time, our tribe leader did not blame them too much, after all, they were still the descendants of the Puyan Tribe, and the Puyan Tribe still occupied more than half of the continent."

Pu Lin revealed a look of sorrow as he walked over to the seventh mural. The mural was filled with smoke, seeming to show the battles among a few different tribes. "Although we did not try to conquest those tribes who have separated from us, their progress is really too fast, and they had even surpassed us in various aspects. At last, they could not control their ambitions, and joined hands to attack our Puyan Tribe. In that battle, both sides suffered many casualties. However, our Puyan Tribe was at an advantage in terms of sheer numbers, and we finally won the battle. That happened around 1200 years ago. After that great battle, the predecessors of the Heaven's Gold Empire and the Sunset Empire first started appearing. Tribes like the Yalian Tribe, also started to grow and develop after that great battle. Even though the territory of our Puyan Tribe did not decrease, we were no longer able to control our whole territory, as we had simply lost too many tribesmen in the battle. Due to the

massive casualties in the battle, all of the tribes entered a recuperating period, and it was from then on, that our Puyan Tribe started to go into decline." Two rows of tears flowed down from Pu Lin's eyes, and he trembled a little, then walked towards the eighth mural, letting out another sigh.

On the mural, there was a group of humans, no, they cannot really be considered as humans. They had green colored skin, and there were sharp claws on their hands. Even with their human-like appearances, it was impossible to conceal the evil aura emanating from them, and their blood-red eyes also contained many devious colors. At the very middle of the group, there was a giant whose height was about three times that of a normal green colored person. He had a pair of wings on his back, and his green wings were surrounded by sharp spikes. There was also a single horn protruding from his forehead, and the claws on his hands were glinting with a piercing, chilly aura. His fearsome appearance caused chills upon anyone who looked at him. Xuan Yue involuntarily cried out, "That, isn't that the ancient devil?"

Pu Lin nodded, "Indeed, he was the ancient devil, also, he was the demon god that the dark demon race worshiped. At that time, after the great battle, the peace barely lasted for a hundred years, before these green-colored people appeared in the continent. They were savage and ruthless, born with destructive powers. They still exist today, the dark demon race has yet to be exterminated, even though their numbers are extremely little right now. This ancient devil was the god of the dark demon race. His strength was terrifying, and it is

far from what you could ever imagine. The dark demon race multiplied rapidly, and no one knew how they appeared on the continent, not even our Puyan Tribe and the Southern Silk people of the Prosperous Empire. Their appearance soon became the nightmares of the human race, the Supreme Pontiff should know, that the great tribulation a thousand years ago, was actually caused by this dark demon race. Initially, their numbers were not very many, but they had powerful bodies. Just based on their powers that far exceeded those of a normal person, they were able to quickly take over a small area of land in the continent. Anyone who opposed them were fully exterminated. 50 years later, just a mere 50 years of development, the numbers of the dark demon race had already exceeded ten million. That was all a mistake on our part! If only we weren't recuperating from our casualties, and killed them off just after they appeared, perhaps there would not have been such devastating consequences. The dark demon race launched attacks on all of the different races and tribes, and tens of millions of their warriors flooded into the continent. In just 5 years' time, they had managed to occupy over half of the continent. And at that time, out Puyan Tribe was the first to be targeted. Although our forces were strong, we were not fully prepared, and adding on the extreme power of the dark demon race, we were simply unable to stop their progress. 5 years, it was just 5 years! Our Puyan tribesmen had decreased to only a fifth of what we once had." At this point, Pu Lin could not help but start crying, he mourned deeply over the fates of his tribesmen.

After quite some time, Pu Lin finally managed to steady his emotions, and walk forward again, to the ninth mural. That was a tall and muscular youth, wielding a magic staff in his hand. A faint white light was spreading out from his body, and behind him, there were countless soldiers from various races. What was most astonishing to Ah Dai and Xuan Yue was that, there were actually over ten colorful dragons circling over his head. Those were the dragons from legends! And before him, was precisely the dark demon race that the demon god commanded. Pu Lin sighed, "Just before our Puyan Tribe was about to be wiped out, the savior appeared. Under his lead, all of the various races and tribes on the continent were united, and with the help of the ancient dragons, they entered the final battle against the dark demon tribe. When the battle ended, under the wise leadership of the savior, we managed to wipe out most of the dark demon race, but the total number of humans had also fallen to only one fifth of the original population, and our Puyan Tribe was left with only 5% of our original numbers. The savior activated a heaven-shaking curse, and although he did not manage to eliminate all of the dark demon race, he had successfully restricted their reproductive prowess. Until now, the dark demon race is still a mortal enemy of the empires, just that, after that battle, they gradually moved below the ground, and it has been very hard to find traces of them. I guess that their numbers are few."

Hearing this, Ah Dai suddenly recalled the incident of the pirates when he was on the ship with Gliss. At that time, Gliss had told him that the green skinned people were of the dark demon race.

With a solemn expression on his face, Pu Lin finally walked over to the last mural. It depicted a group of people in magician robes, surrounding the dark demon god. The leader of the group of people, was the savior mentioned by Pu Lin. Green colored blood was flowing out from the dark demon god's body, a huge magic hexagram appeared on the ground. "At last, after the humans eliminated most of the dark demon race, they trapped the dark demon god on a mountain under the leadership of the savior. All of the advanced magicians and the strongest warriors of the human race were gathered, and with the help of the savior, they successfully killed the dark demon god, sealing his body and soul in the mountain range. And that place, was the Death Mountains."

Xuan Yue and Ah Dai gasped in shock. How could they ever have guessed, that the place that they were planning to go, was actually where the ancient Devil was sealed.

Pu Lin seemed to be extremely frail, as he relied on his wooden staff to support his body, saying with a grievous voice, "During that great tribulation, our Puyan Tribe suffered the greatest loss. However, as the continent gradually regained peace and calm, we were forgotten by everyone. They did not return us our rightful land, claiming that we were unable to rule over such a large territory with our numbers. Under the instructions of the savior, the continent was divided into 5 areas, the Heaven's Gold Empire, Sunset Empire, Prosperous Empire, the United Regions Commonwealth, and the Holy Church of today. As there were not many Puyan tribesmen left, we could only become one of the numerous tribes in the Commonwealth. After a few thousand years of glory, the Puyan Tribe finally fell into

decline. At that time, if not for our Puyan tribesmen sacrificing their lives to delay the advancement of the dark demon race, the savior might not have been able to unite everyone and achieve victory! However, our Puyan Tribe did not get any of the respect that we deserved…"

Xuan Yue furrowed her brows, "Prophet Pu Lin, this savior you're talking about, is he the first Supreme Pontiff of our Holy Church, His Majesty Shen Yu?"

[TN: Shen (神) means god, while Yu (羽) means feather, it sounds weird "english-ising" his name, so I left it in hanyu pinyin.]

Pu Lin nodded, "That's right, he is indeed the first Supreme Pontiff, His Majesty Shen Yu. Our Puyan Tribe has never bore a grudge against the Holy Church, because without His Majesty, there would not be a continent today. During that time, he was already very considerate towards us. However, what we are resentful about, are the other tribes. It was our Puyan Tribe that sacrificed the lives of our tribesmen in order to protect the others, but when His Majesty Shen Yu proposed to return the land to us, they actually voiced out their dissent! Because of that, His Majesty was disheartened, and decided to live a solitary life in the divine mountains of the Holy Church. However, what His Majesty had done, would never be forgotten, and the year that he went into recluse, was named as the first year of the Holy Calendar."

Listening to his words, Ah Dai could not help but comment, "The Puyan Tribe is so pitiful! 95% of the tribesmen had died, that is such

a huge number! Prophet Pu Lin, don't be sad."

Pu Lin shook his head dejectedly, "All of this happened a thousand years ago, what use is there even if I'm sad now? Just before His Majesty Shen Yu went into recluse, he warned that there would be another great tribulation a thousand years later. If we are unable to get through this tribulation, the continent will once more be in dire straits. The thousandth year is approaching, and the great tribulation is about to befall. The only one who can save us, are you two."

"But I still can't believe this, how can we be the saviors? With our powers, we can't even accomplish anything much in the continent, much less help you. I think that you should find the Supreme Pontiff and have a talk with him," Xuan Yue frowned as she spoke.

Pu Lin shook his head, "No, the only ones who can help our Puyan Tribe, are the both of you. Even the Supreme Pontiff is unable to go against God's decree. Of course your powers are still insufficient right now, but there will be a day that you will understand the reason behind what I'm doing this day. Actually, I don't really wish to ask anything much from you. I just hope that, when the great tribulation befalls, you can help protect the bloodline of our Puyan Tribe, and allow our tribesmen to continue living on the continent. Just this will suffice."

Without waiting for Xuan Yue to respond, the hot-blooded Ah Dai immediately replied, "Prophet Pu Lin, I promise you, if there is really some great tribulation, I will surely help your Puyan Tribe to get through it!" Xuan Yue had pinched Ah Dai's hand, but she was unable to stop him from saying the words in his heart.

Pu Lin revealed a smile of relief, and his voice was trembling as he spoke, “Child, thank you, thank you. The future of our Puyan Tribe, will depend on you. Xuan Yue, you are a member of the Holy Church, so I know that you are hesitating, but why would an old man like me, with only a few years left to live, lie to you? The only wish that I have, is for my tribesmen to continue living on. This is my only wish.”

Xuan Yue gave Ah Dai a glare as she replied, “Prophet Pu Lin, if everything is as you say, I promise you, I will do my best to protect your Puyan Tribe. Of course, I can only try my best with the power that I have. With our current powers, even protecting ourselves may be a problem, not to mention protecting your tribe.” As she finished speaking, there was a trace of craftiness in her eyes.

Pu Lin let out a gentle smile, “Little lass, although you’re still young, you are pretty clever. It is better for you to witness the truth in the future, but still, remember what I have told you. And remember the promise that you made today. Of course, I won’t just ask for your help without any repayment. Follow me.” As he slightly waved the wooden staff in his hand, the stone wall that the last mural was on, suddenly cracked open, revealing a narrow gap. Pu Lin took the lead and walked inside. Xuan Yue whispered to Ah Dai, “Why are you so dumb? We’ve just met him, how can you be so rash to promise him? Even if he is speaking the truth, we are in such a dangerous place within the Puyan Tribe, and you… … Nevermind, forget it, you wouldn’t understand anyway. Let’s quickly follow.” As she spoke, she pulled the muddled Ah Dai along, entering the gap

between the stone wall.

It was not exactly another grotto, as it was simply too small, only around ten square metres. It was more like a stone room. The surrounding stone walls were uneven, and in the middle of the room, there was a square-shaped platform that was around one metre tall and half a metre wide. Prophet Pu Lin was standing before the platform, as he saw Ah Dai and Xuan Yue enter. “This is our first meeting, yet I’ve already requested for you to help our Puyan Tribe. I apologize if I was too brazen, but to show my sincerity and to help you increase your powers, I will gift each of you something. Come over, Xuan Yue.”

Shooting a glance at Ah Dai, Xuan Yue loosened her hand that was holding Ah Dai’s, and walked over. Prophet Pu Lin let out a sigh as he said, “Child, Pu Lin is my real name, but in the continent, I am known my by alias. Back when I was wandering the continent, I have always been using that name, and that name was Yuan Mu.”

[TN: as usual, Yuan (圆) means round, Mu (木) means wood. So no english-ised name here.]

Although Pu Lin was very calm as he spoke, the words he said were like thunder throughout Xuan Yue’s ears. Her body wavered as she cried out, “What? You are Magister Yuan Mu?!” On the whole continent, apart from the Holy Church, there were only three people who have reached the level of a Magister. One of them was the current guild leader of the magicians’ guild in the Heaven’s Gold Empire, Magister Lardas, who specialised in fire attribute magic. The second, was the chief court magician of the Sunset Empire, Magister Biernlog, who specialised in wind attribute magic. And the

last one, also the most mysterious one, Magister Yuan Mu, who specialised in spatial magic. Among the 3 magisters, if they were to compare only attack power, it would surely be the fire attribute Magister Lardas who came out first. But, if they were to compare the combined power, it would be Magister Yuan Mu instead. His spatial magic shocked the whole continent, and even Xuan Yue's father, the youngest crimson-robed priest, Xuan Ye, had deep respect for him.

Pu Lin let out a smile, "What? Do I not look the part? But this is the truth. The reason why you are unable to use magic here, is because I used spatial magic to restrict the movement of magic elements here. Ever since the blood sun appeared, I disappeared from the continent, because I was waiting, waiting for both of you to appear. Do not be too surprised that I am Yuan Mu. And the gift that I'm going to give you, is my magic book. Although I don't dare to say that my spatial magic is comparable to the holy light magic of your Holy Church, it should still be of certain value, especially since it has undergone thorough studying and refining by the previous prophets of our Puyan Tribe. I know that you already have many treasures on you, so this book should be something useful to you. I can tell that you have great talents for magic, just that you have not practised hard enough. In fact, my spatial magic and the light magic that you've been cultivating are quite compatible and it can even help to supplement your magic. You have to work hard, if not, Ah Dai's accomplishments will greatly surpass yours." As Pu Lin spoke, he sliced open the space, forming a spatial tear. Reaching his hand in, he grabbed and retrieved a thick leather bound magic book before Xuan Yue.

Related